

THE MAGUS ERA

BOOK 14

Blood Red

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

The Magus Era

(巫神纪)

by

Blood Red

(血红)

Synopsis

Long ago, there were people who stood upon the earth with their heads held high. They never bowed to anyone because of their indomitable spirit. They were capable of controlling wind and lightning, and conquering dragons and serpents. They seemed strong enough to split the earth and shatter the stars with their fists. They traveled throughout the land and called themselves Magi. Eventually, one of them would become a Supreme Magus! These men are the ancestors of human beings. Their blood is what we all share today.

Qing Long is the former strongest man in the world. He traveled through space and time and was reborn as Ji Hao in the Fire Crow Clan of the Southern Wasteland. It's a complicated world. Forces from both inside and outside of the clan want this young and talented boy to die. Under great pressure, Ji Hao makes a deal with a mysterious man, who resides in his spiritual space, never showing his real face. He gains two drops of blood from a dragon and phoenix. Afterwards, Ji Hao becomes increasingly more powerful.

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Law @ Qidian International

Translation Edit by Hitesh_ @ Qidian International

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ Hasseno Blog

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 1301: Violent Blood

In large human families, sons of concubines did not have the right to inherit the power and wealth of the family. Similarly, a spirit creature with a low-grade bloodline couldn't possibly become a 'king' or a 'queen', who had his or her own territory, and hundreds of thousands of spirit creatures under his command. Even if spirit creatures like fishes, shrimps, toads, and water snakes managed to reach the level of 'king' on cultivation, and attained the strength to rival peak-level Divine Magi, those spirit creatures with 'noble' bloodlines, such as sharks, sea turtles, and poisonous serpents, still wouldn't recognize their status. Not to mention the even 'higher level' ones, such as dragon whales and enormous turtles, or the ones with dragon descent, or the descendants of Chaos monsters; these spirit creatures were so proud, how could they ever take a crayfish seriously?

'Summer', the old crayfish, showed his power outside the auction house, defeating the four men and letting over ten-thousand spirit creatures follow his lead, calling him 'king' willingly. If 'Summer' were a flood dragon instead of a crayfish, these 'king-level' spirit creatures would love to see him rise as a 'strong friend'. However, 'Summer' was a lowly crayfish who lived in the mud, searching for food in the mud. No matter how powerful 'Summer' was, those 'kings' didn't think that he had the qualification to gain an equal footing with themselves.

As this dragon whale said, 'Summer' didn't have the right to 'recruit followers', neither could he become a 'king'.

Spirit creatures powers condensed into different colored mountains and roared down towards Ji Hao. Because of the strong pressure, all Tushan guards and shrimp warriors, and those spirit creatures who willingly followed Ji Hao, tremblingly fell to the ground.

Hundreds of 'kings' released their powers together. Facing these

‘kings’, the souls of some relatively weaker spirit creatures were even shattering.

Ji Hao showed the whites of his eyes while laughing out loud with his hissing voice. He sounded cold and emotionless, like two frozen iron sticks rubbing against each other. That voice of his was indescribably unpleasant to hear. "Big ones...So, I guess you don’t like me, do you?" Ji Hao clicked his tongue and said, "So scary!"

A silver-blue, frosty stream of spirit creature power rose from Ji Hao’s head. The nearly one hundred meters thick power stream rolled up for hundreds of meters high, then became an iceberg with a radius of hundreds of meters, floating above Ji Hao’s head.

Those differently colored mountains condensed from the powers released by the hundreds of ‘kings’ bumped against the silver-blue, crystal iceberg, and generated a thunderous series of booms. Those mountains disintegrated one after another, and not a single one managed to cause any harm to Ji Hao’s iceberg.

"But, I, ‘Summer’, am a bad-tempered man! If you are nice to me, I will surely be nice to you. But if you push me with violence, I have no choice but to give you a stab."

While speaking, Ji Hao suddenly boosted up his power, releasing a suffocating, dominating power vibration. Thankfully, threatened by Great Freedom, Priest Hua gave Ji Hao his results of Dao. The great Dao of evolvement could generate all kind of transformations, including the series of magic that Priest Hua created back during the prehistorical era by observing countless Chaos monsters in the world.

Thinking about those powerful, ferocious, enormous Chaos monsters who lived in the prehistorical era, Ji Hao silently cast a secret magic. Slowly, the powers that belonged to those Chaos monsters emerged in Ji Hao’s body. The sense of power released from Ji Hao’s body gradually turned terrifying. The powers that belonged to tens of thousands of Chaos monsters merged into one

in his body, directly triggering a thorough transformation.

Violent, fierce, arrogant, blood-thirsting, brutal…The silver-blue spirit creature power stream rising from Ji Hao's head suddenly turned purely dark. Meanwhile, the iceberg that floated above his head expanded rapidly, turned tens of times larger, dark as ink. Countless water-tank-thick spirit creature power streams surged out of the iceberg, twisting in the air like countless tentacles of a giant octopus.

The hundreds of 'kings' had been releasing their strong powers, yet, their powers bumped against the dark iceberg and shattered. They fell like shooting stars and became drifting clouds, dissipating in the air. Ji Hao laughed loudly while his dreadful power swept across the entire area. The hundreds of 'kings' and a part of their followers, who were the strongest in the auction house managed to stand still, while the rest of the spirit creatures were pressed down to the ground by that overwhelming power released from Ji Hao, shaking in fear.

The power released from Ji Hao had changed; it was even reaching directly to the 'original great Dao' of spirit creatures.

The Dao of spirit creature existed in Pan Gu world, which was the reason why spirit creatures existed in Pan Gu world. While thinking about tens of thousands of Chaos monsters, Ji Hao combined their powers into one. Unconsciously, his own spirit creature power was purified largely, almost reaching the level of 'Dao'.

To the other spirit creatures, the power they sensed from Ji Hao at this very moment, was the source of all spirit creatures in the world, and Ji Hao had already become a 'spirit creature ancestor'. A true 'spirit creature ancestor' had never existed in Pan Gu world. For this exact reason, the power released from Ji Hao's body was so irresistible, so strong.

Laughing again with the hissing voice, Ji Hao looked at the

hundreds of ‘kings’, who had been trying hard to remain standing. Even he was surprised by himself. He didn’t spend too much effort on this. Instead, with the ‘spirit creature turn’ secret magic, he thought about those Chaos monsters, and simply gathered their powers. But, how did he suppress hundreds of ‘kings’ and countless spirit creatures so suddenly and easily?

There must be something important that Ji Hao had yet to find out. But now, he shouldn’t spend time on this; even if he did dig deep and found out the truth, that wouldn’t mean too much to Ji Hao. Ji Hao never thought about being a true spirit creature, did he?

Laughing out loud, Ji Hao pointed his finger at the dragon whale who yelled at him just now. Nine blood-red blade light beams darted out. The nine blood-red light beams that were hundreds of meters long sliced across the dragon whale’s body, along with shrill screams that sounded like the cries of ghosts in hell. One one-inch-deep slash were easily left on the dragon whale’s thick skin.

The strong power released from Ji Hao was restrained by himself, as Ji Hao took back the nine blood flying knives.

Standing still silently, Ji Hao crossed his arms over his chest, narrowed his eyes and looked at those ‘kings’ who were shocked and confused. These ‘kings’ glanced at each other, then looked at the nine shadow slashes on the dragon whale’s body, which looked like nothing in comparison with his nearly thirty-meters-tall body.

Abruptly, ten ‘most honest’ or ‘silliest’ ‘kings’ laughed aloud.

"Hahaha, Summer, old crayfish, you’re quite smart!"

"Indeed, your bloodline is lowly, which means you have no chance to become a ‘king’. But follow me, and I can make you a commander!"

"Wrong, wrong, follow me! Make as much contribution as

possible in Kui Water, then I can gift you a girl from my family. Thus, your bloodline will be improved through generations, right? Eventually, your offsprings will have their chance to become ‘kings’."

The group of muddleheaded ‘kings’ yelled at Ji Hao, intending to recruit him.

All of a sudden, the dragon whale’s body twitched. Puff! His giant body fell heavily from the top of a stone pillar, with streams of dark blood spurting out of his body. When the dragon whale’s sturdy, gigantic body fell on the ground, even his bones had melted into the dark blood.

The bloody soul of the dragon whale struggled up from the puddle of blood, but once it reached about three meter high, it let out a despairing howl. Followed by that, it suddenly became a faint blood-red strand of mist, silently dissipating in the air.

Chapter 1302: Warm-up for the Auction

In large human families, sons of concubines did not have the right to inherit the power and wealth of the family. Nevertheless, if a son of a concubine was cruel and fierce enough to kill his brothers and father, awe all family elders, and earn the support of all family warriors, even as a son of a concubine, he could take over the entire family for sure.

This rule was also applicable to the spirit creature society, but in a much crueler, bloodier, and more direct way.

Once the dragon whale was killed by Ji Hao with the nine blood flying knives, all spirit creatures on the scene felt that they were soaking in an ice-cold water. Both their bodies and souls were frozen. None of them could say a word; none of them dared to say a word either.

That dragon whale was from the North Sea, a peak-level one. In its original shape, it was eight-thousand-miles long, and it had lived for millions of years. Not to mention his other abilities, merely with physical strength, he could easily crush peak-level Divine Magi. He was a greatly powerful ‘spirit creature king’, but because of nine one-inch-deep wounds, he was turned into a puddle of blood within a few seconds.

If Ji Hao only killed his physical body, he would still have a chance to live. As a powerful spirit creature, as long as his soul survived, he could always forcibly occupy the body of a strong descendant of his. With the new body, he would be able to recover in merely hundreds of years.

However, the nine blood flying knives didn’t even spare his soul.

When his body was destroyed, his soul was eroded by the blood power too. Witnessed by countless spirit creatures, his soul disappeared.

Around the dead dragon whale, over ten dragon whales stared at Ji Hao, stunned. Abruptly, tens of ordinary whales attacked together from the crowd behind these dragon whales following a shrill howl. They pulled out their weapons fiercely and hacked on the bodies of seven to eight dragon whales in the front. These whales showed no mercy when they attacked, and gave those dragon whales no chance to dodge.

The few dragon whales didn’t see this coming. Firstly, they never thought that their trusted warriors would try to kill them; secondly, they were frightened by the power Ji Hao released. Because of that, their reaction speed was slowed down by a hundred percent.

As tens of heavy blades and axes hacked down crazily, the seven to eight strong dragon whales were injured severely within a blink of an eye.

Dragon whales had incredibly strong bodies, with an extremely thriving life-force. A flew dragon whales even had their necks chopped off halfway, and got tens of giant wounds on their chests and stomachs. Some of their internal organs were even squeezed out of their bodies. But still, they roared in rage and attempted to struggle up and fight back.

"Dear leaders, why don’t we just yield to the ‘king’? What are you waiting for?" The tens of dragons growled out loud and attacked even more brutally.

The other few dragon whales, who were standing aside and were completely stunned, finally realized what had truly been happening. They glanced at each other. As a fierce, bland blood-red light shone in their eyes, a deep blue power burst from their bodies. Next, they pulled out their weapons and pounced on the seven to eight dragon whales too.

Heavy weapons landed on their bodies like raindrops. The seven to eight dragon whales screamed in pain. Some of them had been

asking the other powerful spirit creatures, who were present on top of the surrounding stone pillars, for help, but no one responded.

Silently, all spirit creatures on the scene watched this internal fight of the whale dragon gang. They watched the few direct descendants of the dead dragon whale be chopped into meat paste. Following shrill, heartbreaking screams, the souls of these few dragon whales were torn apart and swallowed by the others.

What happened next was a muffled series of thudding noise. Along with the thudding noise, large groups of dragon whales, whales, sharks and the other spirit creatures leaped down from stone pillar tops, then kneeled under Ji Hao’s feet and kowtowed to him.

"King!" Reverently, these spirit creatures kneeled and put their foreheads on the ground. No one dared to make any other move.

"Did all descendants of that one die?" Ji Hao raised his eyebrows. These whales and dragon whales seemed to be quite smart. In order to earn Ji Hao’s trust, they neatly chopped the dead dragon whale’s die-hard followers.

"A few were left in our camp. If..." A dragon whale politely kowtowed to Ji Hao, then responded with a muffled voice.

"Alright, let them be. Hehe, a few little things, there’s nothing they can do." Ji Hao proudly looked at these spirit creatures and said, "So, are you planning to follow me from now on? Which means, I’m your ‘king’ now, right?"

The group of dragon whales and whales hurriedly kowtowed to Ji Hao, and swore that they would pledge their loyalties and even risk their lives for him.

Ji Hao showed the whites of his eyes. Even among human beings, there were many that he couldn’t trust, so how would he ever trust these spirit creatures? But, he wasn’t worried about that. When

the auction was over, there would be plenty of methods for Ji Hao to turn these spirit creatures into his true loyal warriors.

Snorting slightly, he turned around and smiled to Netherworld Hierarch, then said, "Elder, please, forgive all this."

Netherworld Hierarch glanced at those dead dragon whales, who were already minced, as if he couldn't bear to watch such a waste. Then, he shook his head and said, "It's alright. These spirit creatures...I'm not surprised by what they did. I'm just hoping that we can have some good treasures in this auction.

Ji Hao laughed out loud. A watery cloud rose from under his feet, then carried him up to the thousands of meters tall stone pillar, which was occupied by those dragon whales. Waving his sleeve, he released a cold light that swept across the pillar top, cleaning all the blood and body parts on it. Afterward, Ji Hao sat straight on the giant rock that the first dead dragon whale was sitting on, then coldly glanced at those 'spirit creature kings' on top of surrounding stone pillars one by one. The facial expressions of those 'spirit creature kings' were all complicated.

The hundreds of 'kings' each squeezed a faint smile out of their faces while slightly nodding at him.

Ji Hao's power was admitted by these 'kings'. Even though 'Summer' was only a lowly crayfish, he was powerful enough to earn these kings' respect now. In the eyes of these 'kings', Ji Hao was now a truly powerful being, who was on an equal footing with themselves.

Ji Hao and Netherworld Hierarch sat side by side on the stone pillar, surrounded by a large group of strong dragon whales and whales. Down below, a great number of spirit creatures, who willingly chose to follow Ji Hao, surrounded the pillar.

Groups of spirit creatures and other beings walked into the auction house ceaselessly. Ji Hao saw the four men on a large rock. Some rocks were occupied by Yu Clan, Jia Clan, Xiu Clan people,

and some weird-looking creatures that Ji Hao couldn’t recognize.

After about a quarter of an hour, as a group of black water serpents walked in, an echoing bell ring could be heard in the auction house.

In the middle of the auction house, on a round-shaped stage that was kept empty on purpose, an especially handsome merman slowly walked to the middle. Water streams hovered around this merman, while tens of water-tank-sized blue pearls floated above his head, covering his body with a sparkling watery light.

"Ladies and gentlemen, welcome to the auction hosted by all chambers of commerce here in Kui Gate."

"I assume you are all here because of the few legendary treasures. But other than those, the chambers of commerce in Kui Gate have also provided quite a few rare pieces. Ladies and gentlemen, please, let’s take a look."

"Enough of the small talk. As the warm-up item of this auction, this first one is truly great."

"Tow-hundred and forty-thousand young human girls... Starting price, thirty-thousand top-grade magic crystals, or three-million high-grade crystal. Ladies and gentlemen, if you’re interested, please start bidding."

Chapter 1303: Stern Warning

A group of shrimp warriors walked onto the stage. Their armors were made from pearl fish skins, and their long spears were made from the bones of poison bonefishes. Walking up with big steps, these shrimp warriors seemed to be full of energy. Held in their hands were ropes woven from seagrasses. Each rope had tens of naked human girls tied on it.

All these girls were pretty, twelve to sixteen years old. They were probably at the best ages of their lives.

Back in human clans, the younger ones among these girls should still be living happily without any worry, under the protection of their parents. As for the older ones, they might have just married, expecting the great future ahead of them. But in here, they were stripped, with ropes tied around their necks like livestock. They were trembling as they were dragged into the auction house. The gazes of all those spirit creatures pierced onto their bodies, blandly, coldly, evilly, and eagerly, like countless daggers and countless greedy tentacles sweeping across their bodies.

"Two-hundred and forty-thousand young human girls, all carefully selected, just like these samples. They are all virgins, all healthy. No one has used up even a slight little bit of their life-force. Ladies and gentlemen, purchase them, and you can do whatever you want with them. They can serve you as slaves, and they can bring you pleasure. Even better, you can also drink their spirit blood to improve your powers!"

The merman smilingly raised his arms and said, "Thirty-thousand top-grade crystals, or three-million high-grade crystals, or other treasures with an equal value...Ladies and gentlemen, who are interested in these beautiful girls?"

Some spirit creatures began to stir, especially the cold-blooded ones, who liked to suck spirit blood.

Human beings were chosen by nature, generated by Saint Pan Gu's spirit blood. The spirit blood of male human beings naturally contained a slight amount of pre-world positive energy, while the spirit blood of female human beings contained a trace of pre-world, pure negative energy. The negative energy and the positive energy were also known as Yin and Yang. The negative energy and the positive energy contained in human spirit blood were extremely pure, and could be counted as top-grade treasures in the world. These energies were the original force for human bloodlines to develop and pass on. Once Yin and Yang were balanced, an inexhaustible life-force would erupt.

Unlike human beings, the emotional, spiritual, and physical energies of spirit creatures, including those enormous, powerful ones, were heterogeneous. All kinds of impurities existed in their bodies. Because of these impurities, based on the same power-level, spirit creatures were always far weaker than human Divine Magi, if not considering their physical strength.

No one knew when spirit creatures found out that absorbing these pure pre-world energies from human bloodline could actually purify their own powers and largely improve the qualities of their powers, especially to water-kind spirit creatures. Water-kind spirit creatures were born with negative energies, because of their nature of Yin. By drinking large amounts of spirit blood from female human beings, they could not only purify their powers, but also promote the evolution of their bloodlines to allow themselves to grow more abilities and stronger powers.

Two-hundred and forty-thousand carefully selected, healthy, young human girls... In the eyes of water-kind spirit creatures, these girls were two-hundred and forty-thousand magic pills that could bring tremendous help to their cultivations!

"So many spirited young human girls," said a spirit creature while clicking his tongue, "If I could gobble them all up in one gulp, how much would I improve? How much power would I

grow?"

"Hmm, you can not only eat them, you can also have a lot of fun with them. So many juicy soft human girls. I'll pick the most beautiful few to serve me, and use the others in my cultivation... Hmm, that's for the best."

"When did we ever have a chance to get so many human girls on normal days? Before the flood, we occasionally went to kidnap a few little girls from human clans. But with that, all human clans in a radius of thousands of miles would immediately join hands and chase after as. Hehe, that truly didn't feel good!"

"Tell me about it! Lord Gong Gong is such a great man. This time, he raised this massive flood and threw the humankind into disarray, breaking countless human villages and towns. Finally, we had a chance to harvest so many top-grade girls...I can even smell the aroma of their spirit blood."

In the surroundings, all spirit creatures voiced their thoughts loudly while eyeing those girls covetously.

As they said, before the flood, not a single 'spirit creature king's dared to recklessly kidnap human girls, because all human clans who knew about this would combine their strengths and hunt this spirit creature down, no matter how. Therefore, before the flood, it was extremely difficult for spirit creatures who had run into bottlenecks on their cultivations to get a few human beings to drink blood. But things were different now. Two-hundred and forty-thousand carefully selected, healthy, young human girls were enough to make these 'spirit creature kings' drool.

"Ladies and gentlemen, please, start bidding!" The mermen smilingly circled around on the stage, glanced at all spirit creatures on the scene, and continued, "The highest bidder can have them... It can't be any fairer than that. If you don't like using crystals, you can pay with all kinds of natural treasures. We have the best evaluators here to evaluate your treasures. So ladies and

gentlemen, you will never overpay."

Ji Hao crossed his legs, glanced at Tushan Inkstone, and asked, "You don't have anything to do with these girls, do you?"

Tushan Inkstone's face was as dark as ink. Gritting his teeth, he said with a deep voice, "No matter what happens, we Tushan Family people will never sell human beings to these animals. Later on, I will find out who exactly sent these girls to the auction."

"Hmm, let me know when you find out. I'll slaughter every last one of them." said Ji Hao blandly and coldly, "Regardless of the price, buy these girls out. Hmm, crystals are on me, and you will send them to Yao Mountain City."

Shaking his foot, Ji Hao narrowed his eyes, then grinned and continued, "Hmm, they're all pretty and healthy. We can introduce them to Yao Mountain warriors, and they can have kids. It will be perfect."

In the surroundings, some 'kings' already started bidding impatiently. Some bloodthirsty, rare types of water-kind spirit creatures even screamed hysterically, seeming ready to spend every penny they had to turn these girls into their dinner.

Tushan Inkstone silently crooked his finger. Following his move, an old turtle man, who had served the Tushan chamber of commerce through generations, swayed up his long neck, waved his hands, and growled out to bid against those 'kings', even having white foam spurting out of his mouth corners.

Hearing what Ji Hao said, this old turtle man never hesitated when bidding. Within a blink of an eye, the price was pushed to one-hundred and fifty-thousand top-grade crystals by the old turtle.

Those 'kings' paused briefly, then glanced at each other. One-hundred and fifty-thousand top-grade crystals, one had to empty quite a few large mines to get such a giant quantity of top-grade

crystals. Spirit creatures were never good at mining. Things like mining occasionally happened among these spirit creatures. Therefore, none of these ‘kings’ had a giant amount of crystals.

A distance away, from the top of a thousands of meters tall stone pillar, a bald, dark-skinned, muscular dark water serpent man stood up slowly. Walking to the edge of the pillar top, he pointed at Ji Hao and yelled, "Summer...Are you under Dark Water Ao Ao’s lead? Tell your man to shut up, because our commander wants these human girls! You bid again, and our commander will wipe out all crayfishes and shrimps in Kui Water!"

All surrounding spirit creatures glanced at each other. Their eyes sparkled with a fierce, excited light, which they could not hide.

Chapter 1304: Arrogant Crayfish

The Kui Gate was guarded by the Dark Water Serpent Family.

Dark Water Serpent was one of the eight senior ministers under Gong Gong's command. He was born when the world was created, one of the first generation of creatures in Pan Gu world. He had near-infinite strength, and his body was as strong as spirit treasures. His direct descendants and some mix-blooded descendants who inherited his powers, were all especially strong, much more powerful than ordinarily spirit creatures.

Kui Gate was ruled by the Dark Water Serpent Family. In this area, all spirit creatures, including those 'kings', dared not to disrespect the members of the Dark Water Serpent Family.

Before the auction started, the group of Dark Water Serpent Family member were the last to enter the auction house. They didn't know what happened before they came. No one reported to them about what Ji Hao did to that 'dragon whale king', neither would they ask about these small things, which weren't worth mentioning.

The bald, dark-skinned man held his head high, pointed at Ji Hao, and yelled out loud, seeming to treat Ji Hao as a slave of his. On the stone pillar, a large number of Dark Water Serpent Family members laughed out loud, especially the three strong dark water serpent men sitting on top of three giant rocks. Their power vibrations were much stronger than the others. They even slapped their laps when laughing wildly, as if something very amusing had just happened. In their eyes, with the power and influence of the Dark Water Serpent Family, forcing a small crayfish to stop bidding and surrendering the item, was not even a thing!

Surrounding spirit creatures were agitated. Spirit creatures were born brutal and fierce. Their blood boiled inside their bodies as they excitedly looked at Ji Hao, hoping for him to react in an

expected way.

Ji Hao kept his legs crossed and eyes narrowed. While sneering, he looked at that dark water serpent man, and responded slowly in a strong voice, "I can’t bid again? Alright, well, that guy..."

Ji Hao directly poked his fingers into the rock that he was sitting on, conveniently dug out a fist-sized piece of rock, then flicked his fingers and sent it away. Followed by a muffled ‘pop’, the rock swished across the air, causing an air blast as it flew towards the merman who was hosting the auction.

The merman’s look changed slightly. His eyes sparkled with a deep blue light. Above his head, the tens of enormous pearls released strong streams of water, merged into a glistening water shield, and defended the merman against the rock.

The moment the rock bumped heavily into the water shield, the shield froze into a thick ice shield, and the rock exploded, turning into fine powder, drifting down from the air. Countless different sized cracks were left on the ice shield.

Ji Hao stood up, also walked to the edge of the pillar top, then pointed his finger at that mermen from a distance away and yelled, "Oi, what kind of auction are you holding? Eh? Someone forbade me to bid, aren’t you going to do anything about it?"

His shrill voice echoed across the broad auction house. All the other spirit creatures, who had nothing to do with this, remained silent, looking at Ji Hao and those dark water serpents with evil smiles on their faces.

The merman frowned. Sighing slightly, he turned around and sighed again towards those dark water serpents on the extra tall stone pillar, then said, "Gentlemen from the Dark Water Serpent Family, I assume you all know that this auction is supported by many powerful beings together, such as..."

The three dark water serpent men sitting on the three giant rocks

were obviously the leaders of the group. One of them, who was about nine metes tall, had his upper body bared, with a dark flood dragon coiled around his waist. He stood up, crossed his arms over his chest, then sneered at the merman with his head held high.

"Of course, we will not offend those powerful beings. After all, some of them are our brothers."

Pointing heavily at Ji Hao, that dark water serpent man gave a large grin, then let out his foot-long fork tongue and quickly licked his nose tip as he continued, "But, we don't like this old crayfish. We think he doesn't deserve to bid in front of us...This doesn't count as hindering the auction on purpose, does it?"

The group of dark water serpents laughed out loud together. They puffed up their chests, their eyes shining fiercely as they glanced at surrounding spirit creatures. Some of them even aggressively released their dreadful powers.

The mermen had nothing to say in reply. He clearly understood that these dark water serpents were not going to follow any rules, because they wanted to buy out the first item with the smallest price, to own the two-hundred and forty-thousand girls. However, their excuse put the merman in a difficult position. As they said, they were not trying to hinder the auction on purpose. Instead, they just simply didn't like this old crayfish, and wanted this old crayfish to stop bidding. After all, Kui Water area was ruled by the Dark Water Serpent Family. This auction was indeed supported by a considerable number of strong forces, but the Dark Water Serpent Family was one of them!

Therefore, the merman could only helplessly spread his hands, turn around, and say to Ji Hao regrettably, "Sir, you..."

The merman didn't finish his speech, but his talking eyes explained everything. He was trying to tell Ji Hao, 'You can kill one 'king', but you can never defeat the entire Dark Water Serpent Family. Therefore, be smart, just take a dive and sit down.'

Ji Hao chuckled. If this first item was anything other than human girls, and if this item was useless to him, he could indeed give up for now for his plan. After all, he came to Kui Gate undercover with a purpose, which was definitely not a massacre. Nevertheless, the first item was two-hundred and forty-thousand living human girls! The worst things that could ever happen to them in human clans would be serving the others as maids, doing hard work all day and being betrothed to strange men to bear sons and daughters. But, if they fell into the hands of these spirit creatures, their end could be easily imagined. Even Ji Hao couldn't bear to imagine that miserable, hell-like scene.

Sighing slightly, Ji Hao narrowed his eyes. Sometimes, he didn't seek for troubles, but troubles sought him. In this case, he had no choice but to try his best!

Ji Hao straightened his stooped body. Strands of cold, silver-blue air spread from Ji Hao's body as he started growing taller and bigger, inch by inch. Soon, he reached the height of fifteen meters; he was even as large as the strongest dark water serpent man in the front.

Crossing his arms over his chest, Ji Hao looked at those dark water serpents. "Did you say that you will wipe out all crayfishes and shrimps in Kui Gate? You can try! Wanna bet? Would you like to make a bet with me about whether crayfishes and shrimps or dark water serpents will die out the first in Kui Gate?"

The entire action house was stirred. Countless spirit creatures roared out in excitement.

It happened! This arrogant old crayfish challenged those dark water serpents! He actually did it!

This was too exciting! Stimulating! Those shrimps, who survived on the bottom of the food chain, how dare they challenge the Dark Water Serpent Family?!

Spirit creatures roared in chorus, and shouted as loud as they

could insanely.

Those dark water serpent men were all stunned. They couldn't even say a word.

What did they hear?

This old crayfish, was he arrogant enough to...actually challenge the Dark Water Serpent Family?

Chapter 1305: The Treasure From the Dragon Palace

"Kill him!" All of a sudden, and old water willow man leaped up and pointed at Ji Hao while screaming.

"Kill him!" A billhead shark man jumped out of the crowd, excitedly wielding his oddly-shaped sword, gritting his teeth and yelling at Ji Hao. Behind him, a blood-red mist puffed out, within which, an enormous, strange-looking billhead shark was faintly visible, roaring madly.

"Kill him! Kill him! Kill him!!!" In the auction house, at least half of all ‘spirit creatures kings’ began shouting and yelling. Under their commands, countless spirit creatures raised their weapons, pointed at Ji Hao, and growled ‘kill him’ in chorus.

The vast space inside the auction house was based on a building carved out of an entire piece of rock, created by tens of thousands of deep sea pearls. By now, the entire space was quaking due to the thunderous roars of hundreds of thousands of spirit creatures. The merman slightly frowned. He took out a cyan-colored bead and quickly whispered a few words in it.

The faces of the group of dark water serpents were slightly blushed. Hearing so many spirit creatures shouting at them, these dark water serpents surely wouldn’t know that this was because of the strength that Ji Hao had shown earlier. Earlier, Ji Hao violently killed the ‘dragon whale king’, forcing his followers to renegade right in front of everyone else. Watching this, all the other ‘spirit creature kings’ were badly frightened. They dared not to even to talk anymore, which made them feel unprecedentedly humiliated.

At this moment, the group of dark water serpents took the lead to be against Ji Hao, and this ‘old crayfish with a lowly bloodline’ was actually stupid enough to challenge the Dark Water Serpent

Family. To those ‘kings’, this was the best chance to get Ji Hao killed.

Hearing the roars of all surrounding spirit creatures, the group of dark water serpents proudly smiled and held their heads high, looking at the ceiling. They were almost facing the ceiling with their nostrils. In their eyes, this was all because of the great fame and influence of the Dark Water Serpent Family. They believed that everyone against them would be universally condemned, while they would always be supported by the whole world!

The three leaders laughed out loud together. Their laughter sounded like rumbling thunders, which immediately silenced the roars of hundreds of thousands of spirit creatures. Sitting in the middle, the tallest one among the three said proudly, "You’re right. This guy challenged our Dark Water Serpent Family, so we should kill him!"

The other dark water serpents breathed deeply, then yelled, "Yeah! Kill him! Kill all crayfishes and shrimps in Kui Gate!"

On the stage right in the middle of the auction house, shrimp warriors who were responsible for escorting those human girls onto the stage as samples gripped their spears nervously. These shrimp warriors could be counted as elites among their kind. Therefore, they were much smarter than the ordinary ones, almost as smart as human adults.

They looked at Ji Hao in despair. They deeply understood that because of the arrogance of this old crayfish, all crayfishes and shrimps in Kui Gate would be destroyed.

How many water-kind spirit creatures were stationed at Kui Gate? No one had ever counted! But the number of shrimp warriors was always the largest among them all. The number of shrimp warrior in Kui Gate area was about ten times bigger than the number of registered spirit creature in this area. Millions and millions of shrimp warriors, they were all going to be chopped,

only because of Ji Hao's arrogance!

Following a series of metal clangs, shrimp warriors in the auction house quickly circled up into a defensive battle formation. They gritted their teeth and pointed their highly poisonous spear tips towards all spirit creatures in the surroundings.

These shrimp warriors were merely trying to protect themselves, but their behavior made countless spirit creatures in the surroundings laugh.

Tiny shrimp warriors, the strongest one among them was only at the level of Senior Magi. In the tremendous water-kind society, this shrimp warrior could be no more than a low-grade commander, who was slightly influential.

As for those dark water serpents who swore to kill all shrimp warriors, even the weakest one among them was as strong as a peak-level Magus King! A powerful spirit creature like this could easily slaughter countless shrimp warriors.

"They actually dared to fight back!" A dark water serpent pointed at Ji Hao and laughed, "Summer, right? Did you give them the courage? Eh? So unruly! You lowliest shrimp warriors, how dare you even fight back?"

Ji Hao coldly stared at those dark water serpents. Flood flying knives darted out of his body one after another. Nine three-foot-long blood-red light beams nimbly hovered around Ji Hao like butterflies. Gradually, the light beams turned thinner and thinner, eventually turning into hair-like, blood-red threads, which caused ear-piercing, shrill noises in the air.

"From now on, all shrimp warriors in Kui Gate, and the other scaled ones who are willing to follow me, are my boys. If anyone dares to touch even one scale of them, I will kill...And I will kill a lot!"

Ji Hao silently cast a sky devil magic. While he was talking, bone-

piercing cold streams of air swished into the souls of all spirit creatures on the scene. The shouts and yells suddenly paused, and no one could say another word. Even those confidently laughing dark water serpents suddenly shut the mouths. Ji Hao's words sealed their mouths like a heavy block of ice. They tried to move their lips, they tried very hard, but still failed to say even one word.

"Carry on, the auction continues!" Standing by the edge of the stone pillar, Ji Hao said coldly, "Or..."

Silently, a water ape, whose long fur was blood-red colored, showed up beside the merman. The merman threw a complicated glance at Ji Hao, then turned around and said to the few dark water serpents, "The few lords said, Kui Gate market is for us to make money. Whoever dares to break the rules...will have to die. Ancestor Dark Water Serpent sent me to tell you kids To stay out of trouble. If there's something you have to do, wait untill after the auction!"

The group of dark water serpents were dumbfounded. They blinked their eyes quickly, as they couldn't believe what they just heard.

What a joke?! Did their own great ancestor forbid them to do whatever they wanted in here? Why? What the hell?

The water ape glanced at Ji Hao coldly once again, then warned him as well, "Summer, right? No matter what you are, you are not allowed to cause troubles in Kui Gate. Otherwise, you will be destroyed."

Pausing briefly, the water ape announced with a harsh tone, "The batch of human girls belongs to Summer, settled! Nothing happened just now. And right now, we are going to introduce you the first treasure from the Dragon Palace in the East Sea — The milkyway soul-splitting hand fan'."

The water ape took a few steps backward, and allowed two slim

and beautiful clam girls to carry a long jade tray onto the stage quietly.

Placed on the stage was an eight-feet-long folding fan. On the halfway spread fan, starlights merged into a magnificent, sparkling river, surging across the fan. Colorful starlights spun quickly in the river. By glimpsing at the fan, one would have a frightening feeling, as if both the body and the soul were suddenly emptied.

Ji Hao raised his eyebrows, while Netherworld Hierarch gasped in shock.

This was a supreme spirit treasure that was generated when the world was created, and had absorbed the natural reward power for the creation of the world!

How could any ordinary spirit creature ever attain such a supreme treasure? This might truly be from the Dragon Palace!

Which black sheep among the dragon-kind dared to do such a thing?

Chapter 1306: Pan Jia Descended

The conflict between Ji Hao and the group of dark water serpent was eased at the moment. All spirit creatures on the scene understood, and that water ape had said pretty clearly... Whatever it was, it would be solved after the auction. Then, no one would stop the Dark Water Serpent Family. Even if they truly decided to kill all shrimp warriors in Kui Gate...the others would only watch it, just like watching a show.

At first, some ‘spirit creature kings’ looked at Ji Hao in a weird way, as if they were taking pleasure in his misfortune. They silently expected to see Ji Hao being hunted by dark water serpents. But once the merman started introducing the milkyway soul-splitting fan, no one remembered what happened earlier. Everyone’s attention was caught by this beautiful treasure, which was claimed to be from the secret treasury of the Dragon Palace.

Judging merely by the appearance, this milkyway soul-splitting fan was quite special. The flowing starlight river glistened on the fan, with countless, different sized starlight swirls spinning in the river like colorful black holes, that could empty one’s soul once one looked at them.

"Milkyway soul-splitting fan, a cherished treasure from the Dragon Palace, a true world-accompanying spirit treasure." The merman looked at all ‘spirit creature kings’ in the surroundings and stated all powers and functions of this treasure fan, which even made those ‘kings’ drool.

This fan was incredibly powerful. Once it was fanned, a torrent of starlight would be released. Wherever the starlight torrent swept across, all souls, primordial spirits, ghosts, and other forms of spirits, would be gone. More importantly, this fan was able to guide its owner to master the ‘void-disintegrating aurora’. The fan could serve as a media, and connect its owner and the starlights from all natural stars in the world, to help its owner to learn this

special magic. By mastering this magic, one would be able to transform his or her body into an inexhaustible aurora, shifting into any form or splitting into countless extremely thin beams of light, which could even shatter the sky and destroy the whole world.

This magic was also an advanced cultivation method. The power a cultivator could attain through it was thousands, even tens of thousands of times greater than the powers of these self-cultivated ‘spirit creatures kings’ on the scene.

To these ‘kings’, the most attractive thing about this fan was the fact that it could gather essence starlight from the whole world to slowly yet ceaselessly improve the bloodline of its owner. Holding the fan for the long term, the bloodline of its owner could even be improved to the level of the first generation of dragon. In other words, the owner of this fan had a chance to be as powerful as those legendary ancient creatures, like the eight senior ministers under Gong Gong’s command!

The merman gave all the information about the fan with a soft, gentle voice. All spirit creature in the auction house had fallen into a deathly silence. All of them were breathing deeply and heavily, their passionate eyes fixed on the fan.

This fan was not only a greatly powerful supreme treasure, it also provided an advanced method of cultivation, which could even upgrade bloodlines, promoting an ordinary spirit blood to the level of powerful ancient beings. Any of the three functions possessed by the fan was tremulously tempting to these spirit creatures.

The milkyway soul-splitting fan combined all three functions above, which gave it an unreasonable allure.

Suddenly, a dark water serpent man leaped up and growled hoarsely, "Which d*ckhead brought such a treasure to the auction? Idiots! How much is this treasure for? How many crystals? We will empty out pockets for it! The treasure is ours!"

All dark water serpent men on the scene started yelling and shouting, but this time, no ‘spirit creature kings’ chimed in with them.

This precious treasure was way too attractive. Who could bear to let anyone else have it? With this treasure, even the lowliest shrimp warrior could have a chance to become an enormous monster, as strong as Dark Water Serpent, the great ancestor of the Dark Water Serpent Family!

‘Spirit creature kings’ breathed deeply and heavily. Scorching hot airstreams puffed out of their nostrils. Like mad bulls, they widely opened their red eyes while staring at the others in the auction house.

They made a good decision to attend this auction. In fact, this was the best decision they had ever made. If they missed this treasure, they would regret for the rest of their lives!

It was genuinely a supreme treasure from the Dragon Palace. Such a precious treasure had actually appeared at the auction held in the Kui Gate area, and so soon at that. Which black sheep would bring such a treasure to an auction? And those powerful beings who controlled this auction behind the scenes, why would they put this treasure up for the auction?

"A true treasure. This milkyway soul-splitting fan is destructively harmful to all kinds of spirits and souls. By spending a small effort, I can nourish it for a while with the netherworld power, and it will be able to serve as a supreme netherworld treasure." Netherworld Hierarch chuckled and said, "Therefore, I am bidding for this treasure."

Ji Hao looked at Netherworld Hierarch. Seeing his brightly sparkling eyes, Ji Hao knew that Netherworld Hierarch truly had his eyes on this treasure.

Wasn’t that obvious? Netherworld Hierarch worked with souls and spirits all day, and this highly destructive fan especially aimed

at souls and spiritual beings. Even if this fan were useless to Netherworld Hierarch, he would never let anyone else have such a dangerous treasure.

Nodding smilingly, Ji Hao said to Netherworld Hierarch, "Elder, since you like it, I don’t think anyone in this room can win against you!"

On the stage, the merman excitedly gave the starting price of this fan — A hundred million top-grade crystals, or equally valuable natural treasures. But right after that, the merman gave an additional condition, which almost drove those ‘spirit creatures kings’ crazy.

Even if the successful bidder paid with enough crystals, without the permission of the original owner of the fan, the bidder would still not be able to collect the fan. However, if anyone offers a natural treasure that can arouse the feeling of the original owner, the deal could be made immediately, and no crystals would be needed.

‘Spirit creature kings’ yelled out in anger. What kind of deal was this?

This treasure was brought to the auction with the starting price of a hundred million top-grade crystals, but how could the owner give such an unacceptable additional condition, like pulling the whole deal back in the end?

The few dark water serpent men ferociously waved their arms and feet, shouted and cursed, requiring the treasure owner to show up and give an explanation. The strongest dark water serpent man yelled, "Are you fooling us? Eh? What kind of rule is this? If you can renegade at any time you want, what’s the meaning of this auction?"

A bone-piercing cold power stream was released from a stone pillar, which was located in a corner and wasn’t so eye-catching. On the stone pillar, a cloud of watery mist dissipated, exposing

tens of figures in different shapes and sizes.

A jade armchair was placed on top of the pillar. A translucent mermaid slantingly lied on the armchair, supporting her chin with her right hand, her deep blue eyes sparkling with a cold light. Blandly and frigidly, she swept across all spirit creatures on the scene with those eyes, and instantly started a long-lasting silence.

"I am Pan Jia. I brought the treasure to this auctions. It's my treasure, so how I sell it is my own business." Pan Jia smiled faintly. That breathtakingly smile softened the bodies of a large number of 'kings' in the auction house, making them thud on the ground.

"My friends, if the treasure you offered satisfies me, this milkyway soul-splitting fan will be yours. If you can't..." She chuckled and continued, "You can try to take it with violence too. After all, I'm a weak little girl. What can I do?"

Ji Hao stared at Pan Jia, frozen in shock.

The owner of Pan Jia world, the 'saint' who created Pan Jia world in the Chaos... She was a terrifying being, at the level of Pan Gu!

She, she, she had actually left Pan Jia world and sneaked into Pan Gu world!

Ao Li and Feng Qinxin, the dragon prince and the phoenix princess, that Ji Hao hadn't seen for a long time, were now obediently kneeling beside Pan Jia, serving her like slaves!

Chapter 1307: This Isn't Right

Ao Li and Feng Qinxin, this bad-tempered, greedy, and mean pair, even when the flood was destroying the world, they didn't return to Pan Gu world. Instead, they stayed in Pan Jia world with undivided attention, trying to gain as much as possible.

But now, they had come back to Pan Gu world, and they didn't tell Ji Hao about this.

Even weirder, at this very moment, they were humbly kneeling under Pan Jia's feet...Pan Jia, why was she in Pan Gu world? What was she doing? What did she want? She, what was she planning?

As far as Ji Hao knew about Pan Jia, she was the owner of Pan Jia world, who had her body destroyed and only the soul remaining. She was gentle and nice, never a troublemaker. No matter what happened, she shouldn't treat Ao Li and Feng Qinxin like this. But now, she let those two kneel under her feet, following her every word like slaves. Not to mention, with the fiery tempers of those two, how on earth could they ever possibly kneel on the ground so obediently?

Ji Hao then took a glance at the others around Pan Jia. Ancient dragons, powerful phenixes, all dropped their heads, timidly and overcautiously standing aside. None of them dared even to breathe loudly.

"Something is wrong!" Ji Hao took a few steps backward, narrowed his eyes, and sat on the rock, murmuring to himself.

"Very wrong!" Netherworld Hierarch looked at Pan Jia, seeming to be excited. From time to time, strands of dark mist rose from his eyes. If one looked closer, one would find that that dark mist was formed from billions and billions of tiny spell symbols, sparkling with a dim dark light. At the moment, Netherworld Hierarch looked like a tiger which had its eyes fixed on a prey, such that he could spring to his feet at any time.

"This girl...She's quite something. I sense the same power from her as what I sensed from Pan Xi." Netherworld Hierarch slightly quivered, and said with a low voice, "My eighteen hell clones are coming over. If anything happens...Young friend, please lend a hand."

Ji Hao raised his eyebrows, looked at Netherworld Hierarch in surprise, and asked, "Do you have Pan Xi?"

Netherworld Hierarch looked at Ji Hao and threw the question back, "Sure, where else could she be? Pan Xi's soul has fallen, and what remains is a physical body. I've made an agreement with Emperor Shun and the other kids, that I will study her body, and share any discovery with the Magi Palace."

Ji Hao speechlessly rolled up his eyeballs and looked at the ceiling.

At one time, the non-humankind started a life-and-death game against the humankind in Pan Xi world. During the game, Ji Hao and his friends attained the body of Pan Xi, the creator of Pan Xi world. That was a ridiculously strong body. Afterward, Pan Xi's body was taken away by the Magi Palace. Ji Hao thought that Si Wen Ming would let Magi Palace Magi study Pan Xi's body independently, and to try to reveal some secrets regarding the creation of worlds from it. But surprisingly, Si Wen Ming gave Pan Xi's body to Netherworld Hierarch.

But thinking about it, Ji Hao realized that it was the right thing to do. With the current abilities of the Magi Palace, not too much could be gained from Pan Xi's body. But, things would be different if the body were in Netherworld Preist's hands. After all, he was a master in this sphere!

"That was the physical body of Pan Xi...And this girl right here is the soul of Saint Pan Jia, the creator of Pan Jia world." Ji Hao breathed deeply and whispered to Netherworld Hierarch by using his spirit power, "I sneaked into Pan Jia world once and met Pan

Jia, attaining a lot from her. That sun in Pu Ban City, she gave it to me with her great power."

Netherworld Hierarch's face was instantly darkened, twitching in shock. "The creator of a world, how did she, how could she...? How dare she just break into another, completely strange world like this? In our world, her power is suppressed largely. Perhaps, she's not even as strong as a Senior Magus right now!" murmured him.

Pointing at Ao Li and Feng Qinxin, Ji Hao gave a hollow chuckle and said, "Ao Li, the ninth dragon prince, Feng Qinxin, the little phoenix princess...hehe!"

Netherworld Hierarch immediately threw a glance at Ji Hao, then turned to Ao Li and Feng Qin Xin, staring at them as if they were ghosts. Netherworld Hierarch saw ghosts every day, but judging by his facial expression, Ji Hao was sure that he had never seen ghosts as scary as these two.

A dragon prince and a phoenix princess, probably the proudest two living beings in the world, were actually kneeling on the ground, as obedient as slaves.

"They...Are they possessed?" A while later, Netherworld Hierarch mumbled a joke, which was not funny at all.

"I am young and weak, my cultivation is awfully low, and I've lost my body. This time, I just want to find something that can rebuild my body. Therefore, I brought this inherited treasure of mine to trade." Pan Jia sighed slightly, then softly stood up from her armchair, gently swaging her long and slim fish tail.

"My friends, if you have any treasure that can rebuild my body, I will trade directly with you...But of course, if anyone intends to bully the weak and rob my treasure...I can only beg you, my friends, to help me."

Pan Jia's voice was so soft and sweet. Her enchantment flushed

the hearts of all living beings on the scene like torrents.

Followed by a long series of metal clangs, the weapons held in those spirit creatures' hands dropped on the ground one after another. Some of them even sat straight on the ground with softened bodies, face blushed, and saliva flowing out of their mouth corners, motionlessly looking at Pan Jia.

Pan Jia's stone pillar was located in the furthest corner of the auction house, and was tens of miles away from the stage in the middle. Among all spirit treasures on the scene, some were considerably powerful. For sure, they were able to see Pan Jia's stunningly charming face from tens of miles away. But shockingly, even the weakest ones, who didn't have the ability to see things tens of miles away, still had Pan Jia's breathtaking beauty in their eyes and souls, imprinted in their hearts and minds, such that it could never be erased.

"Beautiful, she's so beautiful!" The few dark water serpents also softly sat on the ground, eyes fixed on Pan Jia.

"This woman is mine!" A dark water serpent man impatiently waved his fist and yelled, "Whoever dares to lay a finger on her, I'll kill you!"

"What a shame though, she has lost her body, and now she's only a soul...Eh, a soul. My brothers, are you preparing to have sex with a ghost" Abruptly, a muscular, hideous crocodile man roared out, "Who has treasures that can rebuild physical body? Hand out, now!"

All spirit creatures in the auction house were enlightened. Together, they yelled out loud.

"No crystals! No crystals! Hand out all treasures that can rebuild physical bodies!"

"Fix this beauty's body! Fix her body!"

"Now, now, haha, this beauty and the fan, I want them both!"

The auction house was instantly stirred up, as countless spirit creatures shouted and yelled, raising a hubbub.

Ji Hao and Netherworld Hierarch glanced at each other. This wasn’t right!

Chapter 1308: The Netherworld Blood Ganoderma

"Elder?" Ji Hao looked at Netherworld Hierarch, asked, "Do you have such a treasure?"

"I do!" Netherworld Hierarch looked at Ji Hao, responded, "Why? Do you want to do something to her?"

Ji Hao smiled, then glanced at Ao Li and Feng Qinxin and nodded slowly. Those two were bad-tempered and never adorable, but after all, Ji Hao sent them into Pan Jia world. Reasonably, he shouldn’t watch anything bad happen to them and do nothing.

Netherworld Hierarch understood. He too glanced at Ao Li and Feng Qinxin, and murmured, "Dragons and phoenixes are the proudest, also highly protective of their young generations. If they knew that their kids were being insulted by someone else like this... hehe."

Abruptly, Netherworld Hierarch’s ears flicked, and eighteen extremely thin strands of dark mist flashed across in a row. He smiled, then stood up, slowly walking to the edge of the stone pillar. H waved his left hand and released a strong, bone-piercingly cold dark gust of wind from the long, broad sleeve of his dark robe. That large sleeve was even hanging down to the ground.

The dark gust of wind spread out on the ground, and transformed into a series of foot-tall whirlwinds, swishing around and brushing against the feet of those spirit creatures like darting little ghosts, bringing everyone a sharp coldness.

Those spirit creatures sensed nothing else but a strong coldness drilling straight into their heads through the bottoms of their feet. They quivered intensely. Soon, their skins were covered in a thin, black layer of ice. They tremblingly looked at Netherworld Hierarch, but none of them managed to say a word.

Their tongues were frozen; even their souls were paralyzed by the extreme coldness, and their minds were slowed down by at least a thousand percent. Even if someone stabbed them with a dagger at this moment, they would have to spend a long while to make a sound.

Standing on the stage in the middle of the auction house, the water ape raised his head. His vividly red long fur stood straight up as he glared at Netherworld Hierarch and yelled harshly, "Old b*stard, what're you doing? Is this a place for you to mess around? This is..."

"Noisy!" Netherworld Hierarch glanced at the water ape.

Facing these spirit creatures, Netherworld Hierarch wasn't as polite as he was to Ji Hao. He sneered and pointed out his finger. All of a sudden, the water ape paused, and a dark mist puffed out from under his feet. Next, he was sealed solid in a giant piece of dark ice.

As Netherworld Hierarch turned around his palm, a crimson blood ganoderma mushroom with a thousand leaves appeared in his hand, releasing a warm aroma, coiled in thin strands of blood-red mist. Ji Hao couldn't tell for sure exactly how old this ganoderma was, because its two-foot-long stem had already grown into the shape of a human infant.

The infant-shaped stem was lifelike, with clear eyes, nose, and mouth, hiding under the thick leaves, with its chest heaving slowly and slightly, looking just like a real baby who was deep asleep. From time to time, streams of blood-red mist would flow out of the baby's mouth. The aroma in the air grew stronger and stronger. All living beings sensed the aroma suddenly felt a boost in their spirit blood.

Countless eyes were fixed on the blood ganoderma on Netherworld Hierarch's hand. Judging merely by the appearance of this blood ganoderma, one would know that this was definitely a

rare, precious natural treasure.

A faintly sensible spirit creature power emerged. In the air, hazy figures showed up one after another, each releasing a strong power vibration. Suddenly, an earth-shaking spirit creature power could be sensed, following which, a hundreds of miles long dark water serpent descended.

It was Dark Water Serpent, the great ancestor of the Dark Water Serpent Family. He greedily looked at the ganoderma and shouted, "My friend, if you give me this blood ganoderma, in the future, you will have a good position in the heaven."

Netherworld Hierarch smiled, shook his head, and said, "Dark Water Serpent, who do you think you are? Gong Gong? Piss off! If you dare to ruin my plan, I will take away your life!"

Dark Water Serpent was infuriated. He hissed out his tens of miles long fork tongue, piercing straight towards Netherworld Hierarch's head.

Netherworld Hierarch gave a resonant shout. Eighteen blood-red light beams darted up and merged into a blood-red blade, slicing towards the forked tongue. Dark Water Serpent hurriedly took back his tongue and cursed with a very dirty language. Then, he twisted his body, broke the space, and fled away, disappearing without a trace.

"Who else dares to try?" Netherworld Hierarch coldly glanced at the group of extra powerful spirit creatures, who showed up suddenly in midair.

Watching Dark Water Serpent be frightened away by one move of Netherworld Hierarch, these water-kind spirit creatures glanced at each other and shook their heads. As strong winds and dense clouds roared and rolled in the air, these powerful spirit creatures left one after another.

Seeing Dark Water Serpent be scared away by a single strike from

Netherworld Hierarch, none of the other spirit creatures on the scene dared to say a word. Especially those Dark Water Serpents who had grown a hatred against ‘Summer’ —Their great ancestor was frightened away by Netherworld Hierarch, while ‘Summer’ was sitting right next to Netherworld Hierarch. ‘Summer’ was an enemy, but how could they ever defeat an enemy like this?

"Girl!" Netherworld Hierarch gave Pan Jia a big grin, just like a wolf grinning towards a chicken, then said, "Let’s find a quiet place and complete the deal, shall we? I heard that this time, more than one treasure from the Dragon Palace will come up for the auction, right? I’d like to trade this blood ganoderma for all those!"

Pan Jia fixed her eyes on the blood ganoderma in Netherworld Hierarch’s hand without blinking.

She carefully sensed the aroma suffusing the air, then nodded. Indeed, a fairly pure and strong spirit blood energy, containing an incredible, unimaginable power of creation was exuding out of it. With this blood ganoderma, Pan Jia would definitely be able to build a perfect, strong physical body.

Smiling faintly in satisfaction, Pan Jia nodded slowly and responded, "You are right. We do need to find somewhere quiet to complete the deal. This time, I’ve come to the right place."

Pan Jia waved his right hand towards the air. From the tray carried by the two clam girls, the milkyway soul-splitting fan rose into the sky, transformed into a torrent of starlight, and merged into Pan Jia’s hand. Next, following a series of ear-piercing cracking noise from magic seals which were violently broken, seven colorful light streams flew out from a corner of the auction house, and flew into Pan Jia’s hands in a row.

Chasing after those colorful light streams, tens of human beings, water-kind spirit creatures and Xiu Clan masters flew out fretfully. Seeing the lights disappear in Pan Jia’s hand, White Feather, who rushed up the first, shouted in panic, "Lady, you...Why are you

taking these treasures back for no reason?"

Pan Jia smiled, then leered at White Feather and chuckled, "These are mine. I can sell them when I want to, and I can surely take them back when I feel like to...What does it have to do with you?"

White Feather and people behind him paused simultaneously. Pan Jia sounded very reasonable, but also so unreasonable.

How could she do this? Where was her respect to the behind-the-scene bosses of this auction? How could she just do whatever she liked? She hadn't been taking White Feather and the others seriously at all!

"Lady, I'm afraid you have to explain this to us...Eh? Netherworld blood ganoderma?"

While taking to Pan Jia, White Feather abruptly saw the thing held in Netherworld Hierarch's hand. Immediately, the five eyeballs of his nearly popped out from their sockets. Not only him, the other few Xiu Clan masters behind him also turned to look at Netherworld Hierarch passionately.

Chapter 1309: Impatient Pan Jia

"Sir, is this... Netherworld ganoderma?" White Feather turned away from Pan Jia and stopped paying any attention to the fact that Pan Jia suddenly wanted to take back the few treasures from the Dragon Place, which she had authorized for the auction. Instead, leading a few Xiu Clan masters and around ten Jia Clan guards, he flashed across the air and came straight to Netherworld Hierarch.

Staring passionately at the ganoderma for a short while, White Feather assuredly nodded and said, "It is a Netherworld blood ganoderma. According to our family records, an ancestor had seen this treasure, and recorded a trace of its power with a secret magic...But the one our ancestor saw was only a half of a leaf, while this..."

Netherworld Hierarch gently patted the infant-shaped stem and said slowly, "You ancestor had seen this treasure? So what? I took out this treasure to trade with that lady!"

White Feather pressed his hand on Netherworld Hierarch's wrist and said with a deep voice, "What do you want to trade for? Our Westin Family can fulfill all your requirements. But please, don't give this treasure to a stranger."

Netherworld Hierarch curved his lip corners downwards, while Ji Hao chuckled aside.

'Outsider'? This was such a smart choice of words. Was he a friend of Netherworld Hierarch? Why on earth did he call Pan Jia 'a stranger'?

A dreadful coldness could be sensed while Pan Jia and his tens of followers trod on a watery cloud and flew over in an aggressive way. Staring straight at the blood ganorderma, she chuckled, "Ahyaya, old man, aren't you ashamed to bully a little girl like me? You see, I have nothing but a soul. Without this treasure to

recreate my physical body, I might disappear!"

White Feather's eyes sparkled with a fierce light. He slowly turned around, looked at Pan Jia, then sneered and said, "Woman, does your life or death have anything to do with our Westin Family? Piss off, or,this place will be where you die!"

Rude, disrespectful.

White Feather was the manager of the shop opened by the Westin Family in the Kui Gate market, and a host of this auction. Speaking of nature, he should be a businessman. Businessmen were always nice and friendly, because harmony brought wealth. However, White Feather suddenly talked so meanly, even threatening Pan Jia's life, which had completely broken the bottom-line of a qualified businessman.

The Netherworld blood ganoderma was greatly useful to White Feather...No, to the Westin Family!

Countless thoughts flashed through Ji Hao's mind. The Westin Family knew about the power of the Netherworld blood ganoderma, and they were in dire need of it. The ganoderma definitely meant something extremely important to the Westin Family. Did an important member of the family also need the Netherworld blood ganoderma to recreate his or her physical body?

If this important family member succeeded, that would be a wonderful news to the Westin Family, and a great promotion to the entire non-humankind. But to the humankind, things would be different. Anything good to the non-humankind would be a disaster to the humankind.

This Netherworld blood ganoderma could never fall into White Feather's hands. Ji Hao laughed out loud and said, "Mr. White Feather, this is still an auction. Surely, the highest bidder can have the treasure. This lady's treasure is quite attractive to this elder here."

While coughing, Ji Hao held his hands behind his body and continued, "What treasure can you provide to trade for this Netherworld blood ganoderma? As long as your offer is sweet enough, anything can be negotiated."

Pan Jia facial expression turned extremely unfriendly. She maliciously glanced at Ji Hao, and this quick glance even numbed Ji Hao’s limbs, making him feel like being stared at by countless poisonous snakes.

Ji Hao swiftly glimpsed at Pan Jia. He deeply understood that something terrible must have happened to Pan Jia. The Pan Jia he knew would never have such a malicious, cruel look. The power Ji Hao sensed from Pan Jia now was different from before too. By now, it sensed like the fierce, brutal power of a female ghost, which had been imprisoned for thousands of centuries, and was just released.

"This place is crowded. Let’s find somewhere quiet to sit down, then talk about this." Ji Hao smilingly nodded to Pan Jia and said mildly, "Anyhow, we should try our best to satisfy everyone. Our friendship shouldn’t be harmed because of this."

White Feather gripped Netherworld Hierarch’s wrist with his five right fingers and said in a deep voice, "Good, let’s sit down and talk about this. But, I have to make it clear before we start, that this Netherworld blood ganoderma has to be ours, at all cost. Anyone else who dares to even think about it will be an enemy of the entire Yu Dynasty!"

Pan Jia snorted coldly, her eyes shining dimly.

A strong gust of wind blew over, bringing tens of dark water serpent men to the stone pillar, that Ji Hao was standing on. Glancing at Netherworld Hierarch in fear, one of these dark water serpent men stepped forward and began talking in a muffled voice. "Our great ancestor just gave his word. This treasure, our great ancestor wants it too...At any price, our Dark Water Serpent

Family will get it."

Slapping his own chest heavily, this dark water serpent man continued in that deep voice of his, "I am authorized to act on behalf of our great ancestor. Old man, whatever you want, you can talk to me. We will get this, this, Netherworld blood ganoderma, even if we need to give away everything we have."

White Feather was familiar with this area. Soon, everything was well arranged. Ji Hao and the others were guided to an exquisite building, which was far away from the auction house. They sat down in the reception room that had countless defensive formations. White Feather activated those formations, and instantly, countless thin layers of light enveloped the entire building, disabling everyone outside from eavesdropping.

Other than Ji Hao and Netherworld Hierarch, Pan Jia, White Feather, and those dark water serpents, around ten water apes on behalf of Wuzhi Qi, a few Kun peng birds, a few descendants of Xiang Liu, and a few representatives of the other few strong spirit creatures under Gong Gong's command, all gathered in the room.

This area was ruled by water-kind spirit creatures after all. The Netherworld blood ganoderma appeared suddenly, and the news spread fast. Wuzhi Qi, Kun Peng, Xiang Liu and another few extra powerful spirit creatures all sent out their people for the ganoderma.

Once everyone sat down, Pan Jia waved her hand and released a few streams of light from her sleeve. A few oddly shaped treasures quietly floated in front of her, releasing suffocatingly strong power vibrations.

"These few pieces are all precious, cherished supreme treasures from the Dragon Palace. I shall explain no more about this milkyway soul-splitting fan. Each of the other few pieces has its magical functions. For example, these one hundred and twenty-eight raging wave beads, they can form a pre-world raging wave

formation, to trap and kill your enemy with an inexhaustible water power. These beads are also world-accompanying spirit treasures."

"And this pair of dragon horn sword is made from the horns of the first dragon in Pan Gu world. These swords had been serving as a sacred treasure in the ancestral temple of the dragon kind, for all dragons to worship their ancestor. As a sacred treasure, these swords are as sharp and lethal as any top-grade supreme treasure, and are highly destructive to physical bodies."

Pan Jia quickly told the stories of the other few treasures she had from the Dragon Palace, then smiled to Netherworld Hierarch and said, "My friend here, earlier, you offered this Netherworld blood ganoderma for the milkyway soul-splitting fan. I assume, if I offer you all these treasures here...I should be able to have this Netherworld blood ganoderma, right?"

Netherworld Hierarch and Ji Hao remained silent.

Both of them stared at the pair of swords, stunned.

The sacred treasure for dragons to worship their ancestor, made from the horns of the first dragon in the world... This pair of sword was as important as the grave monument of the dragon ancestor. But which crazy dragon dared to steal treasures like this?

Chapter 1310: Start Fighting

The pair of swords made from the horns of the dragon ancestor used to be kept in the ancestral temple, worshipped as an incarnation of the dragon ancestor. Before, this pair of sword would only be taken out from the ancestral temple for important ceremonies. But now, it was right here, in front of Ji Hao.

Ji Hao grinned in speechlessness, looked at Netherworld Hierarch, and asked, "Elder, do you dare to take this pair of swords?"

Netherworld Hierarch's facial expressions were very interesting to watch at this moment, as he looked at Pan Jia in a very complicated way. A long, long while later, he slowly responded, "So, this is the pair of swords made from dragon ancestor's horns, I've truly never seen it before...I don't want to be hunted by a group of crazy dragons, so..."

Pan Jia's eyes shone sharply. Pointing at the pair of swords, she smiled and said, "My friend here, if you like these swords, just take them. As for the so-called dragon-kind, once I recreate my physical body, I will surely solve all leftover problems for you."

Ji Hao bared his teeth, while Netherworld Hierarch's face twitched.

They glanced at each other, then turned to White Feather simultaneously. Laughing hollowly, Ji Hao said, "Mr. White Feather, we're friends now. Before you demonstrate your sincerity on behalf of the Westin Family, please do me a favor."

Glancing at the group of dark water serpent men, who sat aside with long faces, Ji Hao continued with a deep voice, "Those girls I purchased earlier, Mr. White Feather, please send them to Tushan Inkstone, and ask him to send those girls to a safe place for me."

Before White Feather said a word, Ji Hao carried on with a

relaxed tone, "About a hundred thousand top-grade crystals, presumably, this tiny amount of crystal means nothing to the Westin Family. Therefore, the payment of those girls will be covered by the Netherworld blood ganoderma. Is everyone okay with it?"

Pan Jia rolled up her eyeballs and shouted aggressively, "Old crayfish, what do you mean?"

White Feather and the other representatives hurriedly grinned and responded, "We understand, we understand. No matter who gets the ganodorma at last, you don’t need to pay for those girls. Take those girls as a gift from your new friends, Mr. Summer."

Ji Hao smilingly nodded and then glanced at Tushan Inkstone.

Who knew what would happen later? Pan Jia even offered a sacred treasure that belonged to the dragon-kind. Judging by her behavior, one could easily tell how crazily she craved a treasure that could rebuild her physical body.

Ji Hao decided to prepare for the worst, letting Tushan Inkstone send the two-hundred and forty-thousand girls to a safe place, so that Ji Hao could play the game with all these strong creatures without worrying. Ji Hao was curious. What did the Westin Family need the netherworld blood ganoderma for? And what did the others need it for?

He was more curious about why Pan Jia come to Pan Gu world, and why did Ao Li and Feng Qinxin act so weirdly.

White Feather called a couple of guards and whispered a few words to them. Soon, Tushan Inkstone walked out with these few guards. Smiling to Ji Hao, White Feather said, "Those human girls are kept right in Kui Gate. Before long, Mr. Tushan will bring them to wherever you want them to be."

Ji Hao nodded, smilingly pointed at those treasures from the Dragon Palace, which floated in front of Pan Jia, and said with a

deep voice, "So, my friends, let’s see what you can offer. This lady’s offer was very, very astonishing. Apart from this pair of dragon horn swords, the other few treasures she offered are all truly precious. If you really want the Netherworld blood ganoderma, you have to prove it!"

Netherworld Hierarch grinningly held the ganoderma. The Netherworld blood ganoderma was held in his hand anyway, so no one could take it away easily.

No matter what those people offered, the final decision would be made by him. He was curious too. Pan Jia, and all these representatives, what did they want the Netherworld blood ganoderma for?

They were so eager for this Netherworld blood ganoderma... Netherworld Hierarch smiled more proudly. No one knew what did that smile of his mean. Was there a way to make all these people suffer a loss, but without being able to complain? To the others, the Netherworld blood ganoderma was indeed an extremely rare treasure, extremely difficult to find. But to him, who controlled the blood pool in hell, it was not exactly like that. One could not find a large quantity of Netherworld blood ganoderma in the blood pool, but in the vast blood pool, this kind of treasure was not so rare.

Should he give each of these people a Netherworld blood ganoderma that was specially processed by him?

Thinking about this, Netherworld Hierarch gave an even larger grin, that was even harder to understand. He sat still without hurry and haste, letting Ji Hao say whatever he wanted.

White Feather took a deep breath, then calmed himself down and said in a deep voice, "Sir, you didn’t offer this Netherworld blood ganoderma for the lady’s treasures because those treasures are from the Dragon Palace, did you? What attracted you were the powers and magical functions of those treasures, right?"

Netherworld Hierarch curved his lip corners down. He did want those treasures from the Dragon Palace, but he wanted Pan Jia more. Of course, he would never tell anybody about his real target. Therefore, he nodded and responded, "You're right. Can you offer anything as good as those treasures from the Dragon Palace?"

White Feather nodded, quickly took out a series of exquisitely crafted pieces, and began working. A few breaths later, he built a three-feet-wide teleportation formation, then instantly filled it with a large amount of crystals. All crystals disintegrated the moment they touched the formation, transformed into energy streams, and were absorbed by the formation.

After swallowing a hundred thousand top-grade crystals, the core of this tiny teleporting formation was lighted up.

Flicking his finger, White Feather cast a spell. A straight beam of light was released from the formation core, and from the light, a dark-purple light sphere flew out. Within the human-head sized, purple light sphere, countless faintly visible stars were sparkling.

"Back then, when my-kind invaded Pan Gu world, my ancestors fought against the ancient heaven. They killed a divine god from the heaven, and this treasure flew out from his head." White Feather smiled faintly and continued, "Later on, my ancestors searched for information about that divine god, and found that he was known as the most powerful magic formation artist in the world. This treasure... is the core of all magic formations he created."

"This is 'star-controlling ring', a pre-world divine treasure. It can activate the powers of all stars in the world, and build a tremendous magic formation with natural stars. It can deliver all kinds of possibilities, and is unimaginably powerful."

Hearing this, even Netherworld Hierarch popped out his eyes in surprise. "This treasure...This treasure...The heaven and earth great formation was created for defending the heaven, and the

fundamental great formation used by the ancient heaven for attacking, was generated from this treasure."

Looking at the ‘star-controlling ring’, Netherworld Hierarch whispered to Ji Hao using his spirit power, "Ji Hao, even my friend Yu Yu wanted to seize this treasure back then, but he was too ashamed to do it. Yu Yu started his cultivation from the arts of sword and magic formation, and most of your brothers and sisters are good at the arts of sword and magic formation as well. With this ‘star-controlling ring’, your achievement on the art of magic formation will soar."

Ji Hao narrowed his eyes. He glanced at White Feather, then took a glimpse at Pan Jia. Before he said anything, White Feather continued talking, "Including this one, our Westin Family owns twelve supreme divine treasures from the ancient heaven like this!"

White Feather looked at Netherworld Hierarch and said with a big grin on his face, "We are willing to trade all twelve supreme divine treasures for this Netherworld blood ganoderma!"

Ji Hao slowly stood up. As he prepared to say something, Pan Jia suddenly burst into a shrill scream from aside, and pulled out the pair of dragon horn swords with both hands. One sword pierced straight to White Feather’s heart, while the other sword hacked down towards Netherworld Hierarch’s wrist.

Chapter 1311: Great Liberty

Pan Jia moved so fast, that Ji Hao managed to make no other reaction except grabbing White Feather's collar and throwing him away.

White Feather screamed. All of sudden, tens of layers of protective magic screen glowed around his body and wrapped him firmly up. The nearly two-meters-long, wide and heavy dragon horn sword held in Pan Jia's left hand swished shrilly in the air, slantingly brushing across White Feather's body. The tens of magic screens were crushed immediately, just like soap bubbles.

Flicking her wrist, Pan Jia turned the sword around and pierced again towards White Feather's heart.

"You bloody woman!" Small drops of cold sweat oozed out of White Feather's forehead. He widely opened his five eyes while pushing his palms forward. A fist-sized, ruby-like transparent eye statue flew out from a palm of his.

The erect eye slightly opened, then closed. It released a three-feet-thick, enormous light shield, along with a buzzing noise, which shielded White Feather against the sword.

"Die!" Pan Jia screamed ear-piercingly. A bright stream of light flashed across the sword while the enormous light shield created by that ruby eye was punctured like a shadow, and the ruby eye was easily split into two.

The sword continued going towards White Feather's heart, as he popped out his eyes. Tied around his wrist, a tiny jade talisman abruptly shattered. His body suddenly turned hazy and misty, and right in the next moment, he had already switched positions with a Jia Clan guard.

The Jia Clan guard gave a thunderous roar, raised a heavy axe with both hands, and hacked down fiercely towards Pan Jia.

Pan Jia disappointedly glanced at White Feather, who ran away with the help of a secret magic, then conveniently launched a hack too.

As easily as cutting tofu with a sharp knife, not even the slightest sound was caused when the Jia Clan guard's axe, which was glowing brightly with countless spell symbols sparkling on it, was cut into two. The sword silently and swiftly sliced across his chest. This Jia Clan guard paused, lowered his head, and looked at his own chest. He couldn't believe his eyes.

A thin slash was left on his half a foot thick armor, with blood spurting out in big streams, becoming a thin blood mist that sprayed all over the room. The Jia Clan guard suddenly fell to the ground. He body was cut into two, as his internal organs fell out, all over the ground.

While launching three strikes towards White Feather and the guard in a row, the sword held in Pan Jia's other hand had already landed on Netherworld Hierarch's wrist.

Netherworld Hierarch raised his eyebrows and smirked, then his hand, which was holding the Netherworld blood ganoderma, became a faint blood-red mist and dissipated in the air. That Netherworld blood ganoderma disappeared in the blood-red mist as well. The dragon horn sword swept across the blood-red mist, but failed to touch anything. The sword edge hacked heavily on the ground and broke thousands of layers of protective magic screens, which quaked the entire room.

Layers of protective magic screens sparkled dazzlingly on the wall. Following muffled cracking noise, these magic screens broke layer by layer. This strike of Pan Jia almost destroyed all the defenses of the entire reception room.

"I will keep the star-controlling ring for now!" Ji Hao finally managed to react. He seized the ring with his left hand and then flicked his five fingers. A basic connection was built between the

ring and himself, after which, the ring transformed into a beautiful stream of starlight and merged into his forehead.

"Girl, stop! Do you want to be an enemy of all people present here?" Looking at Pan Jia, Ji Hao growled harshly, "Don’t think you can do anything you want only because you have a few treasures from the Dragon Palace!"

"I am doing whatever I want, so what?" Pan Jia chuckled, easily wielding the pair of dragon horn swords with both hands, causing muffled swishing noises. "In the treasury of the Dragon Palace, all treasures that can rebuild physical bodies were taken away by those old ones for an unknown purpose. I spent quite some efforts to bring out these few."

Pan Jia stared at Ji Hao in an indescribably evil way, then laughed coldly through her gritted teeth, "Speaking of which, dragons should die. They left the remains of their ancestors in the ancestral temple without guards, but those useless ones..."

Ji Hao knew what she meant. She sneaked into the Dragon Palace and stole these few treasures. Guided by Ao Li, stealing a few treasures from the Dragon Palace wouldn’t be too hard.

Pan Jia went to the Dragon Palace for treasures that could recreate physical bodies. Dragons were wealthy. They must had quite a number of treasures like that in their treasury. But for an unknown reason, all those treasure were gone.

With no other choice, Pan Xi stole a few valuable treasures from the Dragon Palace and brought to the Kui Gate, intending to trade those treasures for something that could rebuild her physical body.

Ji Hao interrupted her and sneered, "Useless things? Hehe, if those treasures that can rebuild your physical body are so useless, why are you so eager for this Netherworld blood ganoderma then?"

In a blue funk, White Feather glanced at the dead Jia Clan guard, then screamed out hysterically, "This bitch wants to kill us all!

Everyone, let’s kill her together! We all want the Netherworld blood ganoderma! Let’s kill her, then we can negotiate!"

All surrounding creatures were enlightened. Before, they had merely been remaining vigilant to Pan Jia, in case she attacked them suddenly. But hearing White Feather, they were tempted — It was right, by killing Pan Jia together, they could not only take out a competitor who also wanted the Netherworld blood ganoderma badly, but they might also surprisingly attain a few valuable treasures from the Dragon Palace!

Those spirit creatures, who were merely thinking about defending themselves, now pulled out their weapons together and activated their treasures, looking at Pan Jia and itching to attack. They dared not to touch the pair of dragon horn swords, but the other few treasures from the Dragon Palace were all greatly useful to water-kind spirit creatures like them. Especially that milkyway soul-splitting fan, which could provide its owner an advanced method of cultivation, and was able to improve bloodlines... how amazing!

Not to mention those raging wave beads, which could automatically build a great formation to trap and kill the enemies, those beads could even serve as the greatest treasure of a family or a clan.

Attaining any one of those Dragon Palace treasures would worth everything!

"Kill her!" A Xiang Liu snake mumbled deeply.

"Eat her!" A Kun Peng bird looked at Pan Jia greedily and maliciously.

"Be patient, be patient. When we get the ganoderma, we should give her a tiny slice to rebuild her physical body when we have attained it. Then, after we have had enough fun with her, we will end her!"

Snakes and serpents were lascivious. The few dark water serpent men looked at Pan Jia greedily, and laughed creepily.

Pan Jia scornfully looked at everyone on the scene, then murmured in a low voice, "Ignorant barbarians...I am Great Liberty. I am strong enough to occupy this woman's soul, so can't I kill you?"

While chuckling, Pan Jia abruptly and slightly twisted her body, then released a subtle gust of wind. A faint, refreshing aroma spread along the wind, softening the bodies of people on the scene. In the reception room, almost everyone's limbs were limp and numb, becoming powerless.

Followed a series of metal clang, except for Ji Hao and Netherworld Hierarch and Pan Jia's followers, all the others fell to the ground, unable to move anymore.

Ji Hao's mouth corners twitched. Great Liberty? A holy-level sky devil like Great Freedom?

Chapter 1312: Stars In the Sky

"Elder, be careful. This thing is...not so easy to deal with!" Ji Hao didn't reveal Great Liberty's real identity to Netherworld Hierarch. Instead, he just cautioned the latter.

"I know. You be careful about the pair of dragon horn sword too!" Netherworld Hierarch arrowed his eyes and warned Ji Hao too.

Pan Jia...No, Great Liberty gave a faint smile, then enchantingly twisted her waist and wielded the pair of swords with both hands, causing a muffled swishing noise. A gentle gust of wind had been blowing out from her body, spreading that refreshing aroma. Gradually, a three-inch-tall layer of nicely scented mist accumulated on the ground, attempting to drill into Ji Hao's body like a living creature.

Ji Hao cast a deep shout. A silver-blue airstream was released from his body, which transformed into a small tornado and wrapped him up. The airstream was generated from the extremely negative power. Touching the airstream, the scented mist was frozen into tiny crystal pieces, tinkling on the ground.

Netherworld Hierarch's body was like a bottomless pool. He let the scented mist drill into his body, but not even a slight change of facial expression was shown on his face. The only thing different was the blood-red light spinning quickly inside each of his eyes. From his head, strands of blood-red mist had been rising.

"Eh?" Great Liberty frowned, then glanced at Ji Hao in surprise.

That cold airstream released by Ji Hao actually managed to protect Ji Hao from her scented mist. That silver-blue airstream seemed to be something out of the ordinary!

She then glanced at Netherworld Hierarch, showing a trace of fear in her eyes. In many worlds she had been, she had softened a large number of considerably powerful beings with the breeze and

aroma she created, especially the scented mist condensed from the aroma. This allowed her to trample over those powerful beings.

Nevertheless, nothing happened to Netherworld Hierarch yet, even as the scented mist drilled ceaselessly into his body.

If Netherworld Hierarch hadn’t reached a terrifyingly high level of cultivation, something extremely powerful must be hiding inside his body. Whatever the reason was, this was a strong enemy, and Great Liberty didn’t want to put up a desperate fight against an enemy like this.

They always liked to bully the weak ones. Who would like to bump straight at an iron board and break his own head?

While chuckling, Great Liberty swung the pair of dragon horn sword, which were as long as her own body, then smiled sweetly and said, "My two friends, we should be friends instead of enemies. I want nothing more than that Netherworld blood ganoderma, and you can take all these treasures from the Dragon Palace. What do you think?"

Laughing with a silvery voice, Great Liberty twisted her slim waist, leered at Netherworld Hierarch, and said, "If you’re not satisfied enough, I can also deal with this five-eyed ugly thing for you, and force him to give you all the twelve divine treasures!"

Sticking a sword into the ground with her right hand, Great Liberty patted her fleshy bosoms, and continued smilingly, "My two friends, don’t you worry. I am quite experienced in controlling minds and souls. That five-eyed ugly thing, I can make him give you all he has."

Ji Hao expressionlessly looked at Great Liberty. Divine treasures, he wanted those, of course. Who could be not greedy at all?

But, how could he ever give her the Netherworld blood ganoderma?

Great Freedom pushed Priest Hua into a deathly dangerous

situation, leaving Priest Hua no choice but to give Ji Hao his results of Dao of evolvement. And this Great Liberty controlled Pan Jia's soul, turning her soul into a puppet.

If she ever got a chance to build a physical body...Pan Jia was a creator of a world! Pan Jia world was a small world, but it was a healthy world. Not a single living being in Pan Gu world could compare with Pan Jia.

Pan Gu world was already in a mess. How could Ji Hao dare to allow a troublemaker in, to cause worse damages to this world?

"Elder, I know you like her!" Ji Hao smilingly looked at Great Liberty, and said in a deep voice, "Shall we capture her together?"

Netherworld Hierarch looked at Great Liberty, then glanced at White Feather and the others, who lied on the ground, paralyzed, but still having clear minds. "Use the star-controlling ring, build the great star formation, and trap this thing."

Netherworld Hierarch was indeed interested in Pan Jia. After all, she was the soul of a world creator. To Netherworld Hierarch, who lived with ghosts and zombies all day, Pan Jia was as attractive as a piece of warm, nicely grilled meat to a starving man!

Anything discovered from Pan Jia could be amazingly helpful to Netherworld Hierarch's future cultivation.

He had to capture her. But, he couldn't do it in front of White Feather and the others. Some things were better to not be let known to many people.

Ji Hao nodded smilingly, then laughed and pointed at the spot between his eyebrows. A splendid starlight shone from his forehead, and immediately turned into countless stars, sparkling in the room.

Countless stars sparkled around him, moving along the natural trajectories, which had never changed since the start of time. Earthshaking, rumbling noises were caused by these moving stars;

long, short, muffled or shrill, all kinds of star sounds composed a soul-shaking melody.

Ji Hao, Netherworld Hierarch, Pan Jia, and Pan Jia's group of followers were rolled into the star formation. Countless stars shone on their bodies and colored them, making them look like human-shaped lights and shadows.

The great star formation was used by the ancient heaven for wars. Information about this great formation flew ceaselessly into Ji Hao's mind. Ji Hao narrowed his eyes and accepted all the information, then satisfyingly nodded. Based on the current degree of mastery over the star-controlling ring, the star formation he created was powerful enough to trap and kill any enemy who was three times more powerful than himself. This meant that except for powerful beings at the level of Supreme Magus or above, no one could ever break his star formation!

Trapping and killing any enemy who was three times more powerful than himself... Without a doubt, Ji Hao had attained another dreadfully strong weapon for him to fight his battles.

Aside from the above function, the great star formation also had many other supportive functions, but those would take Ji Hao some time to study and practice. He just didn't have the time to figure it all out right away.

"Great Liberty, would you like to allow yourself to be seized without putting up a fight, or do you prefer to kneel and beg for mercy after we have almost killed you?" Ji Hao looked at Great Liberty and asked with a warm grin. As he pointed out his finger, all stars in the surroundings moved together. All of a sudden, tens of thousands of stars released dense, sticky streams of starlight and struck on Ao Li and Feng Qinxin's bodies, quietly throwing them away. They were injured severely, which made them vomit blood and fall unconscious.

Ao Li and Feng Qinxin were both powerful. Standing behind

them were a group of powerful ones from the dragon-kind and the phoenix-kind, some of whom were even at the level of half-step Supreme Magus.

Ji Hao only wanted to trap them, to keep them away so that they wouldn’t worsen the situation. But he didn’t think that this great star formation could actually be so destructive. A wave of basic starlight power strike wounded Ao Li and the others so badly, even disabling them from standing back up.

"This star-controlling ring is so amazing!" Ji Hao couldn’t help but exclaim.

Back then, what kind of powerful being did those non-humankind being send out, or what price did they pay to kill that divine god, the original owner of the star-controlling ring?

Imagining those word-shaking battles which happened back then, Ji Hao was obsessed.

"Die!" Watching Ji Hao and Netherworld Hierarch build the formation and trap herself, Great Liberty didn’t say too much. Instead, she pulled out the swords, bent her waist, and pounced on Ji Hao.

Chapter 1313: Pan Gu's Front Teeth

Netherworld Hierarch smilingly looked at Great Liberty, showing no sign of attacking.

Ji Hao helplessly glanced at him, then took a deep breath. As his silver-blue shell transformed into a misty light and disappeared, Ji Hao showed his true face. Rubbing his hands and spreading his arms, Ji Hao released a silver-white, violent bolt of lightning from his hands sizzlingly.

The water-tank-like lightning bolt dazzled towards Pan Jia like a raging dragon. A dragon horn sword airily landed on the lightning bolt, leaving a hazy afterimage in the air. The 'Yu Yu's divine thunder' that Ji Hao created with all of his power was shattered by a single sword move.

Countless electric bolts lingered around the sword. Following the sizzling noise, the pair of dragon horn swords reached Ji Hao's body almost simultaneously. One sword aimed at his heart, while the other sword swept straight to his neck.

Aiming to penetrate the heart and cut off the head, Great Liberty attacked so brutally, and was suffocatingly fast with the pair of swords. She was only a soul, yet she was already so powerful; it was hard to imagine how strong she would become once she rebuilt her physical body.

"Great!" Ji Hao gave a resonant shout while a clear light shone from his head. The Taiji Universe mirror glowed with a misty light and flew towards the pair of swords along with a deep buzzing noise.

The Taiji universe mirror was forged by Priest Qing Wei, Priest Yu Yu and that secret powerful being hiding in Priest Dachi's palace of Dao. The three of them combined their great powers and melted the Pan Xi divine mirror, then forged this Taiji universe mirror for Ji Hao, as a pre-world, supreme treasure. Typically, any

attack swept across by the light of the mirror would be sent millions of miles away, or be directed back to the attacker under Ji Hao's will. However, as Great Liberty put forth her strength through her arms, a dim light flashed across the pair of dragon horn swords. Next, the light of the mirror was torn apart by the pair of sword like a piece of paper. The sword edges were less than three inches away from Ji Hao's body by now.

Ji Hao was seriously startled by the power of the pair of dragon horn swords, as the Taiji universe mirror actually failed to stop those swords completely.

Ji Hao shouted out deeply. His brightly glowing Taiji cloak released two streams of air, silver and golden in color, hovering around Ji Hao while interweaving into an enormous Taiji diagram. A soft yet strong power stream then surged out of the cloak, flowing slowly and stably around the Taiji diagram as it shielded Ji Hao with layers of gentle yet strong protections.

"Move away!"

Netherworld Hierarch suddenly burst out with a growl.

Ji Hao's eye corners twitched as he sensed a great danger. He roared shrilly. In his spiritual space, the eyes of his embryo of Dao of space suddenly glowed dazzlingly. Meanwhile, the golden bridge emitted a bright golden light which wrapped up Ji Hao's body and brought him to tens of thousands of miles away at light speed.

Inside the great star formation, the space was infinite. Ji Hao moved backward for tens of thousands of miles, then over ten shooting stars descended between Pan Jia and himself.

He sensed a piercing pain from his chest. In shock, Ji Hao lowered his head and looked at his own body. A clear, transparent crack was left on layers of clear light emitted from the Taiji cloak. Ji Hao fought Priest Hua face to face, as well as those sky devils, yet none of them managed to break the Taiji cloak. But now, the Taiji cloak was broken for the very first time.

A three-inches-long slash was left on the cloak, and thin streams of blood had been spurting out from it.

Rapidly, the blood turned black and dried. The thriving life-force contained in the blood was drained, and within a blink of an eye, the blood became a puff of grey dust, drifting away in the air.

Ji Hao touched the wound. The dragon-horn sword penetrated the Taiji cloak, pierced into his chest, and almost hurt his heart. Even worse, the dreadful, destructive power from the dragon horn sword lingered inside his body, and had been destroying his life-force.

Divine Magi were able to regrow their bodies from a single drop of blood. No matter how badly a Divine Magus was injured, the blood he or she shed would flow back into the body, turn into pure life-force and fix the injured body. Nevertheless, the destructive power of the dragon horn sword turned the blood that flowed out from Ji Hao's body into ashes. The life-force contained in that blood was left in the air, instead of returning into Ji Hao's body.

Along with a sizzling noise, a thin stream of clear light flowed on the cloak, fixing the slashed portion. From the great star formation, countless beams of starlight gathered towards the cloak, being absorbed by it. Within a couple of breaths, the cloak fixed itself perfectly, and not even a mark was left on it.

But, Ji Hao's chest was still bleeding. He tried to boost up his spirit blood power to heal his body, but the destructive power from the dragon horn sword had been destroying the life-force contained in his spirit blood. He tried but failed over and over again.

"Great Liberty...This pair of dragon horn swords...They're only the dragon ancestor's pair of horns?" Ji Hao looked at Great Liberty and couldn't understand it. How could this pair of swords be so powerful? The Taiji universe mirror and the Taiji cloak were both pre-world supreme treasures, yet even with these two

treasures, Ji Hao failed to protect himself from one strike of those swords!

Great Liberty chuckled and responded, "Even local people like you don’t know about the power of this pair of swords, so how would I know? I’m not even from this world!" Great Liberty was clearly surprised by the power of this pair of swords too. Based on her power level, she could surely tell that both the Taiji universe mirror and the Taiji cloak were Supreme-level treasures.

The defense provided by two Supreme-level treasures was broken easily by these pair of swords!

What kind of treasures was this pair of swords? Great Liberty grinned happily. She held the pair of swords with her arms and kissed each sword. "Great, great! From now on, this pair of swords is my spirit treasure. Haha, gods or devils, I will kill them all. I am a holy master, and with this pair of treasure, who in the universe can stop me?"

Great Liberty was so excited that she directly spoke out her real identity.

‘Holy master’... As Ji Hao thought, she was a sky devil holy master, one of the top-grade beings among sky devils, same as Great Freedom! Poor Pan Jia, how could she let this evil thing invade and occupy her soul? Perhaps, the real Pan Jia was long gone by now.

Netherworld Hierarch also stared at Great Liberty in shock. Ji Hao’s Taiji universe mirror and Taiji cloak were genuine pre-world supreme treasures. Thinking about this, Netherworld Hierarch felt slightly sad — Yu Yu was truly one of the few destined successors of this world, that even a disciple of his can have supreme treasures like these!

But what shocked Netherworld Hierarch even more was the power of the pair of dragon horn swords.

Even two pre-world supreme treasures failed to protect Ji Hao from one strike of these swords. Was that legend true?

"Be careful about those swords...According to the legend, when Saint Pan Gu fall, his body, soul, and bloodline disintegrated, generating dragons, phoenixes, and human beings. Saint Pan Gu's body disappeared in the world, and only two strongest parts remained."

"His spine became Buzhou Mountain, the Sky Pillar, standing on the ground and supporting the sky, balancing the natural powers and serving as the core of the world. All stars in the world moved around the Sky Pillar. The Sky Pillar was also a path from the mortal world to the heaven."

"His pair of front teeth also remained, becoming the pair of horns of the dragon ancestor."

Ji Hao's face twisted in shock. He stared straight at the pair of dragon-horn swords and didn't say a word for a long while.

The pair of dragon horn swords were made from the dragon ancestor's horns, and the dragon ancestor's horns were actually Saint Pan Gu's two front teeth?!

Didn't this mean that countless centuries after Saint Pan Gu's death, Saint Pan Gu managed to take a heavy bite on Ji Hao's chest?

Chapter 1314: All-Conquering

Saint Pan Gu created the Pan Gu world. Every single hair of Saint Pan Gu represented the great Dao of nature of this world. The pair of dragon horn swords were actually Saint Pan Gu's two front teeth, which were undoubtedly the hardest parts of Saint Pan Gu's body. The power of this pair of swords was not so hard to imagine.

No pre-world or after-world supreme treasure, or spirit creature in this world could withstand a strike from this pair of swords, unless the treasure itself was powerful enough to create a whole new world like Saint Pan Gu did.

"Those horned and scaled long worms, how could they let anyone steal dangerous treasures like these?" Netherworld Hierarch cursed angrily, "Every generation of dragons is worse and stupider than the older one!"

"They're stupid or dumb. But anyhow, this pair of treasures is mine!" Great Liberty chuckled, slightly shaking her shoulders while she leered enchantingly at Netherworld Hierarch and said, "You shall stay quiet and let me chop you to take the Netherworld blood ganoderma and recreate my physical body. With this pair of treasures, who will I be afraid of?"

While laughing, Great Liberty moved again. She wielded the pair of swords with both arms and created sharp shreds of afterimages while pouncing on Netherworld Hierarch.

In Ji Hao's eyes, Great Liberty's sword skill was just average. Sure, her sword skill wasn't worse than ordinary cultivators, but no better either. The sword skill of any of Yu Yu's disciples was much greater than hers.

Nevertheless, the pair of dragon horn swords held in her hands was way too powerful!

The swords swished across the air. Netherworld Hierarch cast a

series of deep shouts in a row while the eighteen blood flying swords were darting around him. Every time those blood-red flying swords attempted to approach Great Liberty, she would swing the pair of dragon horn swords and force Netherworld Hierarch to bring back his flying swords hurriedly.

Not even the Taiji universe mirror and the Taiji cloak could stop the pair of dragon horn swords, so Netherworld Hierarch dared not to risk losing his blood flying swords. With countless years of effort, he extracted enough essence blood power from the blood pool and forged these flying swords as his spirit treasures. These flying swords could hurt the enemies brutally with the blood power, but the physical bodies of these swords weren't especially strong. How dare Netherworld Hierarch ever let the two dragon horn swords touch these blood flying swords?

The Dragon horn swords dazzled while the blood-red light shone brightly. Netherworld Hierarch was forced back by Great Liberty one step after another. He was powerful indeed, but facing the pair of dazzling dragon horn swords, he didn't even know how to attack!

A single step of his meant a hundred miles backward. Drawing back for thousands of steps in a row, Netherworld Hierarch was forced back hundreds of thousands of miles by Great Liberty. Finally, he couldn't stand it. This was way too humiliating. As a young cultivator, Ji Hao had still been standing aside and watching. Netherworld Hierarch couldn't just let himself be chased by someone else like this, could he?

"Evil thing, don't be too arrogant! Taste my treasure!" Gritting his teeth, Netherworld Hierarch threw out his 'blood shadow nine-moon mirror', which was made from 'blood pool nine-moon stones' that he conveniently collected from the deepest area of the blood pool when he forged his blood flying swords. The mirror transformed into a misty blood-red shadow and descended towards Great Liberty.

The first glance, the blood shadow nine-moon mirror was a small blood-red mirror, embossed with the ferocious portraits of countless ghosts and evil creatures. Once the mirror was thrown out, it immediately became a hazy blood-red shadow, darting out along with shrill ghost streams. Within the shadow, nine blood-red streams were faintly visible.

"Break!" Great Liberty shouted resonantly while wielding the pair of dragon horn swords and hacking randomly towards the mirror.

A long-lasting sizzling noise was generated. Netherworld spent quite some years to forge the blood shadow nine-moon mirror. He was going to gift this mirror to his first disciple as a special treasure when he finally decided to start taking disciples. But now, he watched the mirror be chopped into pieces by the pair of dragon horn swords.

A strong blood-red light burst while a dense blood-red mist rose. Following ear-piercing screams, the nine blood-red streams inside the blood-red shadow were also cut into pieces, and disappeared.

"Oh, my!" Netherworld Hierarch’s face twitched. The blood shadow nine-moon mirror wasn’t his greatest treasure. Instead, it was a small piece that he made for his future disciple. But still, he spent more than ten-thousand years on this small piece!

He never fought an enemy with the mirror before, and this was the very first time. However, the mirror was cut into bits just like that, so how could he not be sad?

"Evil woman, this isn’t finished!" Netherworld Hierarch growled in rage. Abruptly, he raised his head and yelled, "My friends, aren’t you going to help?"

A giant cloud of blood-red mist rose from his body, while eighteen thin beams of light flashed across the spot between his eyebrows.

Ji Hao saw the same thin beams of light in between Netherworld

Hierarch’s eyebrows back in the auction house. Following Netherworld Hierarch’s voice, the eighteen beams of light twisted, and right in the next moment, over ten figures suddenly darted out from the blood-red mist around him.

"Blood Pool, my friend, don’t panic! I am Blade Mountain, and I’m helping you!" Shouted a priest who looked exactly the same as the blood pool hell clone of Priest Hierarch, and was wearing the same long black robe. Black Mountain laughed aloud and then pointed his finger in the air. Instantly, an enormous metal mountain, which was formed from countless sharp blades, swished down from the midair.

This blade mountain was tens of thousands of miles tall, and released a sharp, bone-piercingly cold power vibration.

The mountain descended from the air while shrinking. The closer it got to Great Liberty, the smaller it became. When it almost landed on Great Liberty’s body, it had already shrunk to about a hundred meters tall and wide, but the power vibration released from it turned even sharper and colder, much more unstoppable.

"Break!" Great Liberty lazily swung her arm up. The dragon horn swords started a muffled swishing noise while it cut the blade mountain into two. Next, she gripped the pair of sword with both hands and launched another violent, random series of hacks, chopping the blade mountain into pieces. At last, the blade mountain exploded, and sharp metal pieces darted everywhere.

"What a brutal woman!" Blade Mountain screamed, "Blood Pool my friend, how did you provoke this crazy woman?"

"We’re the same being! I provoked her, which means you provoked her. What’s the difference?" shouted Blood Pool, "My friends, please, combine our powers..."

Before he finished, another priest laughed, "This girls’ swords seem to be quite special. They look a bit like the pair made from

the dragon ancestor’s horns, right? Haha, let my millstone try!"

This priest pointed out his finger and quaked the air as he sent out a tremendous, purely dark millstone, which was divided into two parts. The millstone roared as it rotated and trapped Great Liberty in the air. The ten-thousand-miles-wide millstone spun swiftly, vibrating the entire space.

The millstone generated a strong gale and blew around Great Liberty, disabling her from moving. Followed the rumbling noise, the two parts of the millstone began folding from above Great Liberty’s head and under her feet, seeming to crush Great Liberty even if she had a purely metal body.

"Break!" Great Liberty scornfully curved down her mouth corners while swinging one dragon horn sword upwards and the other one downwards, generating a thunderous boom. Followed the boom, the two gigantic parts of the millstone were hacked into four, then torn into pieces by countless sharp beams of sword light.

"Kill!" Leaving shreds of afterimages and generating dazzling sword light beams, Great Liberty marched towards the eighteen hell clones of Netherworld Hierarch.

"Ahyaya, this woman is so fierce!" The eighteen hell clones threw out all kinds of strange treasures, but they were all chopped easily by Great Liberty.

Chapter 1315: Smash with the Bell

Watching from aside, Ji Hao raised his eyebrows in excitement. The eighteen hell clones of Netherworld Hierarch were generated from the eighteen great Dao of hell; each one of them represented a Dao of hell. They had unique abilities and were greatly powerful.

According to Ji Hao's estimation, based on pure cultivation powers, any hell clone of Netherworld Hierarch could defeat ten cultivators that were as strong as Ji Hao, all at once. Without using his supreme treasures, Ji Hao could never win against any hell clone.

But Great Liberty was even more powerful. At this moment, she was only a soul. Therefore, one couldn't make a good estimate of her power. However, with the pair of dragon horn swords, she was suppressing the eighteen hell clones.

Within merely ten minutes, the eighteen hell clones threw out at least twenty rare and powerful Netherworld secret treasures, and cast at least fifty strange, fierce magics. But everything ended up being shattered by the pair of dazzling dragon horn swords.

Pan Gu's front teeth, the pair of dragon horn swords was so ridiculously powerful that it broke all treasures and magics!

Yu Yu was also capable of breaking all magics with his sword, because his unparalleled sword arts had already reached the top. But Great Liberty could break all magics with her swords, only because that pair of dragon horn swords was way too powerful.

"Elder, let me help!" Ji Hao shook his head and said. He couldn't watch Netherworld Hierarch be humiliated! As Ji Hao sightly flicked his fingers, the star-controlling ring released streams of starlight, spinning before Ji Hao's face. Inside the great star formation, all stars began quaking intensely, as a tremendous star power was brewing in the air.

"No need. This is my battle... I will either lose or win!" The eighteen hell clones growled in chorus and refused Ji Hao's help. Who were they? They were the hell clones of Netherworld Hierarch, and Netherworld Hierarch was one of the three cones of Netherworld Priest. As one of the few most powerful beings in Pan Gu world, Netherworld Hierarch would rather be defeated utterly by an enemy in a battle than accepting the help from Ji Hao, a junior cultivator!

That would be too, too humiliating. If that really happened, and if other people know about it, he would be too ashamed to see anyone in the world.

Roaring resonantly, the bodies of the eighteen hell clones suddenly disintegrated, transformed into differently colored mist and puffing into the air. Eighteen mist streams that were hundreds of miles in radius and tens of thousands of miles long swept across the air, end to end, then made eighteen enormous circles and overlapped in the air.

The eighteen giant circles locked on Great Liberty from a long distance away and buzzed deeply, then started spinning abruptly, clockwise or anti-clockwise, slowly or fast. A few circles spun with varying speeds.

Silently, a strange power was generated by the eighteen spinning circles. In the great star formation, countless intensely quacking stars quieted down. Gradually, a suffocating atmosphere was created, which disabled Ji Hao from moving or thinking, and even made him want to perish himself, both his body and his soul.

A dense mist suffused the air. Great Liberty paused suddenly, raised her head, and looked at the eighteen giant circles while shouting in a deep voice, "Who are you? Such a great power, this... Is this a great Dao of this world? You can control a great Dao of nature... You are nobody ordinary!"

"When I throw you into hell, when I torture you in every part of

hell, you will learn my name!"

Followed a sizzling noise, a thousand-miles-wide hand slowly reached out of the eighteen overlapped circles, coiled in a dark mist. Along with a deep roar, a tremendous, dark figure walked out of the eighteen circles.

That enormous being from the eighteen circles was wearing a crown and a long black robe, which was embroidered with misty mountains, along with a red, burning pair of boots, which were decorated with bloomed lotuses. A pale bone belt was tied around his waist, embossed with countless skulls, while a pair of black Netherworld dragons coiled on his ears. Every step he made would leave a burning red hole in the space.

In shock, Ji Hao looked at this dark-skinned giant, who had a square, imperatorial face, with three wisps of beard on the chin. "This is...Netherworld Hierarch!" Ji Hao exclaimed with a low voice.

Only when the eighteen hell clones merged together would the real Netherworld Hierarch show up!

Looking at Netherworld Hierarch's gigantic body, sensing the almost tangible, dark Netherworld power released from him, and the dreadful atmosphere he created, which even stopped the great star formation from operating, Ji Hao's fine hair stood straight up one after another.

This was exactly what he expected of Netherworld Hierarch... So strong, so terrifying, so worthy of the title of 'the owner of Netherworld'.

Netherworld Hierarch was one of the three clones of Netherworld Priest. He might not be as strong as Netherworld Priest himself, but sensing the scary power vibration from him, Ji Hao understood that he was indeed a powerful ancient being, equally famous as Priest Hua and Priest Mu.

"Girl, you're the soul of a world creator, so just stop fighting and come with me. I promise that I will let you live." Holding a dark seal with his left hand and a giant staff with his right hand, Netherworld Hierarch lowered his head and looked at Great Liberty.

"Do you want Pan Jia's soul to help your own cultivation?" Great Liberty chuckled and said, "Good idea, but I have never liked to help the others achieve their own success! You should be one of the few most powerful beings in this world. If I can control you, haha!"

Great Liberty smirked and screamed shrilly, while her body expanded like a swelling balloon.

Within a couple of breaths, Great Liberty grew as gigantic as Netherworld Hierarch. The pair of dragon horn swords held in her hands naturally expanded to tens of thousands of miles long, to match her giant body.

Raising the swords with both arms, she screamed and hacked towards Netherworld Hierarch.

Netherworld Hierarch showed an extra serious look. The eighteen circles hovered around her, releasing strong Netherworld power streams, which slowed Great Liberty Down and twisted her body. Netherworld Hierarch smacked and poked Great Liberty over and over again with the giant staff held in his right hand. But in the meanwhile, he had been carefully avoiding touching the pair of dragon horn swords.

One attacked hysterically with her full power, while the other one tried his best to avoid weapon contact. Within a couple of breaths, Netherworld Hierarch fell into a disadvantage.

Torrents of Netherworld power surged towards Great Liberty, but the pair of dragon horn swords was too powerful. With a slight touch, the Netherworld power could freeze an ordinary human being's soul. But now, it was sliced by the pair of dragon horn swords, and couldn't bring any actual harm to Great Liberty other

than slowing her down.

Watching the pair of dragon swords almost brush against Netherworld Hierarch's body for a few times, and nearly hurt him, Ji Hao shook his head and shouted, "Elder, I have things that may need your help in the future. Here is a treasure of mine, which you can use to fight her!"

Opening his mouth, Ji Hao released a stream of Chaos power. Glowing brightly, the Pan Gu bell flew towards Netherworld Hierarch.

Netherworld Hierarch seized the bell and paused for a second, then was thrilled. As he breathed out a stream of Netherworld power onto the bell, the three-meter-tall bell suddenly expanded to tens of thousands of miles tall.

Carrying the bell up with both hands, Netherworld Hierarch roared like a beast and smashed it down.

An earth-quaking series of thud could be heard. Great Liberty suffered thousands of heavy strikes. The pair of dragon horn sword suddenly flew out from her hands, and the Pan Gu bell landed heavily on her chest.

Chapter 1316: Netherworld Soul Chain

Screaming shrilly, Great Liberty began vomiting a sparkling blue liquid falling heavily to the ground.

On making contact with the air, the blue liquid she vomited immediately transformed into deep blue strands of mist, dissipating in the air. Instantly, a refreshing aroma suffused the air.

That was Pan Jia's original soul power, the only component of her soul. Suffered a series of violent strikes from Netherworld Hierarch, Great Liberty was injured severely. The more blue liquid she vomited, the weaker Pan Jia's soul became, and the more her cultivation downgraded.

"No, no, no!" Great Liberty shrieked heartbreakingly. Like a crazy woman who had suffered a mental breakdown, she crawled on the floor towards the pair of dragon horn sword. She howled, and her high-pitched voice even pained Ji Hao's ears.

Ji Hao flashed across the air. With the power of the great star formation, he teleported himself to the pair of dragon horn swords, bent his waist and picked them up. Conveniently, he spread the blood spurted out from the wound on his chest on the two swords.

Basically, Ji Hao had already attained a 'Pan Gu body'. Naturally, his spirit blood now delivered a strong sense of Pan Gu's power. At first, the pair of sword flipped in Ji Hao's hands, seeming to be unwilling to be controlled by Ji Hao. But once the two swords touched Ji Hao's blood, they began burning. The two swords stuck to Ji Hao's hands, sending streams of scorching hot power into Ji Hao's body.

The destructive power lingered in the wound on his chest was immediately gone, and the wound was healed within a blink of an eye. The hot power from the pair of swords flew rapidly inside Ji

Hao's body and burned his body. Soon, perspiration began oozing out of Ji Hao's body.

Ji Hao's body was already impressively tough. With the help of the power from the pair of swords, his body condition was improved further. At last, the boiling hot power came to Ji Hao's mouth and drilled to his teeth.

"Eh...You hurt me earlier because you are too sharp. You hurt my skin, but before you touched my blood, I drew back. You hurt me, but it's not your fault." Looking at the two swords, Ji Hao gave a bitter smile, then shook his head and said, "But now, hmm, this is your own 'Dao'?"

Ji Hao's teeth were heating, turning red, then blue, cyan, white. Every time the color of his teeth changed, the temperature of his teeth would reach a new high. By the end, his oral cavity couldn't withstand his burning teeth anymore. A sizzling noise was burned out of his mouth, and a dense grilling meat aroma lingered in his mouth for a very long while.

Countless tiny natural marks of great Dao emerged on Ji Hao's teeth, gums, and cheekbone, which was connected with the gums. Speedily, those natural marks of great Dao merged with his bones and teeth, while his teeth gradually emitted a strange cold light. A couple of breaths later, the strange light and those marks disappeared, and Ji Hao's teeth turned transparent, like top-grade crystals, and so did his cheekbone, jawbone and entire skull.

Ji Hao chattered his teeth, and even generated fire sparkles from his mouth. The dragon horn swords, the front teeth of Pan Gu, had imprinted its 'Dao' on Ji Hao's teeth and bones, which were connected with his teeth. By now, Ji Hao's teeth were thirty to fifty percent as strong as Pan Gu's teeth. Maybe not all-conquering, but not too many things in the world could survive a full-strength bite from Ji Hao now.

"Do you want me to bite like a dog?"

Ji Hao lowered his head and murmured to the pair of swords, while Great Liberty rushed up to Ji Hao, flicked her wrist and threw out a dragon-shaped thorn. The thorn transformed into a hundred-meters-long cold beam of light and came straight at the spot between Ji Hao's eyebrows.

"Kid, be careful! That's a 'heart-stabbing thorn', a very famous fierce weapon owned by the dragon-kind!" Just now, Netherworld launched a series of strikes with the Pan Gu bell. The bell was extremely heavy, and cost him quite a while to catch his breath. Seeing Great Liberty attacking Ji Hao, he hurriedly told Ji Hao to be careful.

The pair of dragon horn swords were made from the dragon ancestor's horns, and was unique. Unlike the pair of swords, 'heart-stabbing thorns' were made from the beard of dragon ancestors, and was a commonly used weapon, available in a large quantity.

After all, the dragon-kind had a large population, and dragons were born as aggressive fighters; their horns and beards were breaking all the time. The dragon beards were soft yet especially strong. Piercing into the body of a target, the 'heart-stabbing thorns' made from dragon beards could transform into sharp power streams, penetrating the target's body from the inside. 'Heart-stabbing thorn' was one of the most common hidden weapons used by the dragon-kind.

The 'heart-stabbing thorns' thrown out by Great Liberty weren't made from the beards of ordinary dragons. Instead, they were made from the beard hair fallen off from the few famous ancient dragons, and were also kept in the secret treasury of the Dragon Palace.

This 'heart-stabbing thorn' could even hurt Divine Magi, and break the thickest shield of the non-humankind.

Glowing dazzlingly, the 'heart-stabbing thorn' darted over along

with a shrill swishing noise. Ji Hao was murmuring to the pair of dragon horn sword about the sudden change that happened to his teeth. Seeing the ‘heart-stabbing thorn’, he instinctively opened his mouth and bit the thorn.

Crack! The thumb-thick thorn was bitten into two by Ji Hao as easily as an ordinary human being biting a fruit. A dim light flashed across Ji Hao’s teeth, then a destructive power erupted. The broken ‘heart-stabbing thorns’ suddenly exploded into drifting ashes.

"You!" Great Liberty paused and stared at Ji Hao’s crystal teeth, not knowing what to say or do.

"Stay away, or I’ll bite you!" Ji Hao gave a big grin, baring his shining crystalline teeth on purpose. He carefully raised a dragon horn sword and slightly tinkled his teeth with the sword edge.

The sword edge and his teeth rubbed against each other and generated a sharp noise and a shower of fire sparks. Not even a mark was left on Ji Hao’s teeth. The destructive, fierce dragon horn sword didn’t do any harm to Ji Hao’s teeth.

"Yeah, you see, my teeth are strong." Ji Hao looked at Great Liberty proudly and showed an evil smile, "I might make my teeth into flying swords, so that when I fight my enemies, I can shoot my teeth onto their faces. Would that be surprising? What do you think?"

Great Liberty looked at Ji Hao, stunned. She didn’t know what to say.

Netherworld Hierarch wiped the cold sweat from his forehead. Looked at Ji Hao’s weird crystalline teeth, and thinking about the ‘beautiful scene’ of Ji Hao shooting out his flying teeth swords to hurt his enemies, Netherworld Hierarch couldn’t help but quiver in speechlessness, then called him ‘little freak’ in his head.

Carrying the Pan Gu bell with both hands, Netherworld Hierarch

walked to Great Liberty with big steps, his eyes shining with a dark Netherworld divine light as he struck fiercely on her body.

A dense dark mist condensed into black chains, merging into Great Liberty's body. "This is my specially created Netherworld soul chain. Whoever you are, you shall stay quiet and let me study you!"

Great Liberty howled in rage. But no matter how hard she struggled, her body remained motionless.

Chapter 1317: Gone Traceless

Netherworld Hierarch loosened his hands and let the Pan Gu bell transform into a misty Chaos light, merging into Ji Hao's head.

Dragging the pair of heavy dragon horn swords, Ji Hao slowly walked to Great Liberty and looked down at her. Great Liberty was huddled on the ground without being able to move, when Ji Hao started talking.

"Great Liberty...No, Pan Jia, long time no see. I never thought that I would be able to see you again, I mean, the real you."

Great Liberty paused briefly, then looked at Ji Hao and asked, "Do you...know her?"

As a five-colored dim light flashed across her eyes, Great Liberty abruptly laughed coldly and continued, "Ji Hao, yes, she knew you too. Damn it, these useless memories...She gave you the sun of Pan Jia world. How could you bear to help that man and hurt me like this?"

Looking at the colorful light flowing in Great Liberty's eyes, Ji Hao responded coldly, "You are not Pan Jia. She...She is gone, isn't she? And you, in all places you set foot in, how many living beings have you killed?"

Great Liberty smiled, then softly leered at Ji Hao and said, "Ahyaya, my friend, why did you say that? We are the gentlest, nicest beings in the universe. Why would we kill anyone?" While chuckling, she continued, "Just now, I didn't mean to attack you. That was a moment of desperation, and I only did it to protect myself."

Shaking his head, Ji Hao put a dragon horn sword against Great Liberty's neck and said, "Cut the crap! I've seen Great Freedom!"

"Have you seen him? And you're still alive? Unharmed? Did he change? Or, Great Freedom, are you betraying the will of ancestor?

Do you like to watch me in trouble? Why don't you show your true face? Who are you trying to fool by wearing that human skin?" Great Liberty's eyes shone with a cold light, and her tone suddenly turned weird.

Great Liberty talked with a very strange tone. She seemed to be pretty assured about the fact that Great Freedom had already eaten Ji Hao's soul. She believed that at this moment, Ji Hao was Great Freedom. She looked at Ji Hao from head to toe gracefully and charmingly, also with all kinds of complicated, hard to understand emotions showing on her face.

"I'm not Great Freedom, I am Ji Hao." Ji Hao slightly twisted his wrist and left a shallow wound on Great Liberty's neck with the dragon horn sword. A deep blue strand of power began leaking out from the wound.

"He didn't manage to eat my soul and control my body, because he..." Ji Hao looked at Netherworld Hierarch and said with a faint smile, "Priest Hua tried to create a new system of cultivation with sky devil magics, but in the end, Great Freedom drilled into his body by using a sky devil magic. I think by now, he has locked himself somewhere and is trying to cast the devil away."

Netherworld Hierarch popped out his eyes in shock. Slowly, his tens of thousands of miles tall body shrank back to the normal size, with the eighteen giant circles floating behind him, spinning slowly.

"No wonder, not only Priest Mu, I haven't heard from Priest Hua these days too. If anything happened to Priest Hua, Priest Mu is certainly trying his best to help Priest Hua. They don't have the time to come out and cause any more trouble, which is reasonable."

"It's just that this Great Liberty is only average. If that Great Freedom is equally powerful as her, how could he ever entrap Priest Hua?"

Netherworld Hierarch looked at Great Liberty in confusion. Except for the pair of dragon horn sword, Great Liberty didn't show any impressive power or ability. With the Pan Gu bell, Netherworld Hierarch could easily hurt her. If Great Freedom were at the same level as her, no matter what happened, he shouldn't be able to hurt Priest Hua.

After all, Netherworld Hierarch honestly believed that Priest Hua and himself were at about the same level, and Priest Hua was even slightly stronger. Great Freedom shouldn't be able to hurt him.

Great Liberty sneered. Sulkily and scornfully, she glanced at Netherworld Hierarch and sighed, "I was injured accidentally in the Chaos, then I broke into Pan Jia world and put up a desperate fight against Pan Jia to seize her soul, losing ninety percent of my power. The great Dao of nature of this Pan Gu world is so suppressive to me, that I can release no more than ten percent of my power...If all this hadn't happened..."

A faintly sensible gust of wind was suddenly blown out of Great Liberty's body, while a hazy, misty colorful figure rose into the air. Along with a beautiful melody, the figure flashed away and disappeared without a trace.

An enchanting, extremely sweet voice could then be heard, "Netherworld Hierarch? Marquis Yao Ji Hao? I'll remember you two! You should all die...I'll leave Pan Jia's soul to you for now. But when I restore my strength, I will certainly come back for her soul, and rebuild the physical body of a world creator. After that, I will kill every last one of you."

Neither did Netherworld Hierarch nor Ji Hao manage to react timely, especially Netherworld Hierarch. His dark face was blushed embarrassedly, with his beard shaking intensely. He dared not to even take a glance at Ji Hao.

Earlier, he bragged that no one could ever run away from his Netherworld soul chains. Indeed, Pan Jia's soul didn't run away,

but Great Liberty had gone without a trace. That gust of wind just now, it was completely different from all escaping magic that existed in Pan Gu world. Netherworld Hierarch failed to even figure how did Great Liberty run.

"Elder...These sky devils are mysterious. Hehe, even Emperor Shun's body was nearly occupied by them. Stone Dragon old man, the leader of our Star Guard, died because of them." Looking at Netherworld Hierarch's embarrassed face, Ji Hao hurriedly comforted him, "If you want to defeat them, you have to use a top-grade supreme treasure."

Netherworld Hierarch looked at Ji Hao in shock and asked, "Was Emperor attacked by them? Hehe, I didn't even get to know. Was he too ashamed to tell me? Interesting, interesting... Sky devils, hah...Tell me, tell me everything about them. And Priest Hua and Priest Mu, what exactly happened to them?"

Ji Hao picked up the few Dragon Palace treasures brought by Great Liberty and put them into his sleeves, one after another, then handed the milkyway soul-splitting fan to Netherworld Priest. Afterward, he told Netherworld Hierarch about all his experiences with the sky devils in detail. From the time he met sky devils for the first time outside the palace where Chi You was kept in, back in the Southern Wasteland, to the stories between these sky devils and Priest Hua, Priest Mu, including the fact that Priest Hua fell into Great Freedom's trap and locked himself up. He also told Netherworld Hierarch about what those sky devils did to Emperor Shun and Stone Dragon old man.

Netherworld Hierarch was dumbfounded on hearing Ji Hao. Gradually, the redness on his face, which appeared because of the feeling of shame, faded.

Priest Hua, Priest Mu, and Emperor Shun were all attacked by sky devils, and suffered losses, while Netherworld Hierarch only, accidentally let a sky devil run. In comparison, that was nothing.

Netherworld Hierarch shook his head and put the milkyway soul-splitting fan into his sleeve, then laughed out loud, "I didn’t think that such a magical species actually existed outside our world... Hehe, I wonder..."

He smirked and narrowed his eyes, then changed the topic, "Hm, let’s go check those kids from the dragon-kind and phoenix-kind... This pair of dragon horn swords..." Clicking his tongue, Netherworld Hierarch said to Ji Hao, "Are you keeping them, or giving them back to those dragons?"

Seeing Ji Hao hesitating, Netherworld Hierarch continued, "This pair of swords is against my nature. Therefore, I don’t really want them. But they seem to like you. If you decide to keep them, I won’t tell anyone!" Netherworld Hierarch sounded quite faithful.

Chapter 1318: Taiji Dragon Horn

"Eh...Elder, you are teaching me bad things!" Ji Hao looked at Netherworld Hierarch with dazzling eyes while stroking the pair of swords with both hands, seeming to be reluctant to part with them. Feeling Ji Hao's fingers, the pair of swords quaked slightly while letting out a deep buzz.

After the creation of the world, Pan Gu fell. His body fell apart, and generated the dragon-kind, phoenix-kind and humankind.

Saint Pan Gu's greatly strong physical body generated the dragons, which could be seen as the strongest creatures in this world. The dragon ancestor was lucky, because he was gifted with Pan Gu's two front teeth, which became his indestructible pair of horns. Back in the prehistorical era, he crushed countless supreme treasures with that pair of horns.

Later on, the dragon ancestor disappeared. No one knew where he went. But his unbreakable pair of horns were turned into a pair of swords, being kept in the ancestral temple of the dragon-kind. During the past countless years, people only saw this pair of swords at important ceremonies, and on normal days, this pair of swords had been kept away from all living beings.

Powerful treasures had souls, and this pair of dragon horn swords was lonely.

By now, Ji Hao had basically attained a 'Pan Gu body'. He inherited Pan Gu's power, which was pure and clean. Touched by Ji Hao, the pair of swords were shaking in his hands like abandoned kitties that ran into their owner; they didn't want to leave Ji Hao.

"Am I teaching you bad things? Hehe!" Netherworld Hierarch smirked, then pointed at Ji Hao and said, "Don't you want them? If you really don't want them, give them to me. I will bring them to those long a*s dragon worms. This pair of swords are the remains

of their great ancestor. I will extort them with these swords, and will get the most out of them!"

Clicking his tongue, Ji Hao threw a sideways glance at Netherworld Hierarch. Once again, he gently stroked the pair of swords. He truly couldn’t decide.

If he wanted to keep this pair of swords, right now was the best opportunity. Great Liberty had fled, and he was still in the great star formation. He could always tell the others that Great Liberty brought away all Dragon Palace treasures when she ran. But pocketing an ancestral treasure that belonged to someone else? Somehow, Ji Hao felt bad about this. He liked this pair of swords indeed, but he wasn’t shameless enough to do such a thing!

In his spiritual space, the mysterious man showed up. Through Ji Hao’s eyes, he took a long glance at the pair of swords, then started talking with a rumbling voice, "Don’t give them back to those dragons. They won’t use this fierce pair to kill enemies, such a reckless waste. Poor treasures, they were kept in the ancestral temple, suffering incense smoke every day... Poor things."

Pausing slightly, the mysterious man continued, "Besides, since they were Pan Gu’s front teeth...You are more qualified to have this pair than the dragon-kind."

"Am I?" Asked Ji Hao.

"Yes, you are more qualified than them." murmured the mysterious man, "Dragons only have Pan Gu’s physical strength, while you, you have basically built a Pan Gu body. Pan Gu’s strength, soul, and the fertility of his bloodline...You are weak, but you are the purest descendant of Pan Gu in the world."

"You don’t need to give these swords back to them. Just keep them. Hmm, take out your Taiji divine sword." said the mysterious man loudly.

Ji Hao opened his mouth and let out the Taiji divine sword. The

sword transformed into a clear airstream and puffed out of Ji Hao's mouth. As a sword light flashed through the air, the eight-feet and one-inch long Taiji divine sword appeared. All of a sudden, the Taiji divine sword quaked intensively, screaming shrilly as it released a sharp sword power.

The pair of dragon horn swords quaked slightly as well, buzzing deeply, which sounded like tens of thousands of roaring dragons. A strong, heavy power vibration spread out in all directions. Ji Hao's long hair fluttered in the air, while Netherworld Hierarch, who was standing aside, was startled, and even forced back by the strong waves of power vibration.

Netherworld Hierarch gasped in shock, then gave an exclamation from the heart, "Ji Hao, if you were not Yu Yu's disciple, and if this pair of dragon horn swords wasn't against my nature, I might not help but seize them!"

Stimulated by the Taiji divine sword, the power of the two dragon horn swords erupted, forcing Netherworld Hierarch back. Netherworld Hierarch was shocked deeply. Meanwhile, his curiosity was aroused, as he wondered exactly how powerful Saint Pan Gu, the creator of the world, was.

The power of his two front teeth was already so dreadful, so what about Pan Gu as a living being then?

A living being with an axe, who slaughtered thirty-million Chaos monsters...Netherworld Hierarch quivered in excitement, with his fine hair standing straight up one after another. He hated himself for not being able to witness that universe-shaking battle. If he had managed to witness that battle, he might have made a major breakthrough already!

As the pair of dragon horn swords quaked slightly, the deep buzzing noise caused by them gradually suppressed the Taiji divine sword's shrill scream.

The Taiji divine sword's glow was dimmed. It quietly floated

before the pair of dragon horn swords like a baby deer. As a pre-world, Supreme-level sharp weapon, the Taiji divine sword released its strongest power to challenge the pair of dragon horn swords. But the two dragon horn swords burst into eruption and easily suppressed the Taiji divine sword.

In Ji Hao's spiritual space, the mysterious man looked at the pair of dragon horn swords, which were heavy, thick, and ancient styled. He sighed slightly, then locked his fingers together and cast a spell with a low voice.

A deep dragon roar could be heard from the pair of dragon horn swords. The two dragon horn swords suddenly melted and became two colorless spheres of liquid. Streams of Chaos power surged out, while the two spheres of liquid transformed into two feet long dragon figures and pounced on the Taiji divine sword from both sides.

Following the sizzling noise, the pair of dragons merged into the Taiji divine sword. A terrifying, scorching hot power stream surged out of the Taiji divine sword, and next, a scarily cold airstream was released. While the hot power and the cold airstream were released from the sword alternately, black and white light sparkled on the Taiji divine sword. Meanwhile, thick, heavily colored marks of great Dao flashed across the sword like flowing water streams.

A sharp sword intent erupted. Following sizzling noises, over ten thin cracks suddenly appeared on Ji Hao's Taiji cloak. Ji Hao screamed with startle and hurriedly stepped back, leaving tens of shreds of afterimages in the air.

Followed by another sizzling noise, a heavy dent was left on Netherworld Hierarch's crown. Netherworld Hierarch couldn't help but curse out, while turning around and running away at his highest speed too, as if his butt was on fire.

A strong Chaos power wrapped the Taiji divine sword. In the

great star formation, countless stars quaked intensely. Dazzling beams of starlight surged ceaselessly into the Taiji divine sword. Floating beside Ji Hao, even the star-controlling ring creaked, as it was overloaded. The Taiji divine sword absorbed the star power from the star formation at an incredibly high rate, which had already surpassed the star-controlling ring's limits.

Along with a sudden dragon roar, two hazy dragons flew out of the Taiji divine sword. They widely opened their jaws and tore the star-controlling ring into two, swallowing it completely.

The great star formation shattered, and all the stars merged into the Taiji divine sword.

The few Dragon Palace treasures that Ji Hao collected just now screamed out in despair. The few treasures flew out from Ji Hao's sleeves, being swallowed by the two dragons as well. The two dragons roared in satisfaction, then slowly flew back into the Taiji divine sword.

"A divine thing is created, and treasures must be sacrificed for it...This sword is so fierce! It swallowed so many supreme treasures!"

As Netherworld Hierarch sighed in exclamation, that dense Chaos power stream dissipated, exposing an oddly shaped longsword, floating before Ji Hao's face.

Chapter 1319: Young Dragons and Phoenixes

Ji Hao took a long gasp, then slowly stepped forward and gently gripped the hilt of the new Taiji divine sword.

Compared to the old Taiji divine sword, which was thick and wide, simply and anciently styled, the new Taiji divine sword was long and slim. It seemed to be the sharpest weapon in the world, that could easily penetrate anything.

The long and slim sword was crystalline and transparent. Within the time span of every breath, the color of the transparent, slim sword would change, from black to white, or from white to black. As the color was changing, countless marks of great Dao emerged, faintly visible on the sword.

On both the left edge and right edge of the sword were two partly visible dragons, heads lowered, claws clenched, and horns reaching forward. The horns of these two dragons met on the tip of the sword.

The tails of the pair of dragons coiled and interwove on the sword hilt. The hilt was a swiftly spinning, coiling sphere of Chaos power, with the tails of the two dragons faintly visible in it. When Ji Hao gripped the sword, the Chaos power coiled on his hand like a living creature. From the hilt, an electric-bolt-like power stream flew into Ji Hao's body.

Ji Hao's body was slightly numb. The new Taiji divine sword was not like a weapon at all. Instead, it was like an extension of Ji Hao's arm. His power and the power of the sword merged together into one. As he wielded the sword, he felt as free and natural as using his own arm, extremely flexible and easy.

The old Taiji divine sword was a pre-world, supreme treasure. It merged with the pair of dragon horn swords and violently

swallowed a few Dragon Palace treasures, also swallowing the star-controlling ring, which was a divine supreme treasure from the ancient heaven. Ji Hao couldn't tell how powerful this new Taiji divine sword was. But, without needing to try, Ji Hao knew that this new Taiji divine sword was way more powerful than the old one, even stronger than the pair of dragon horn swords.

"I wonder which unlucky guy will suffer your first hack." Ji Hao gently stroked the long and slim sword, and said with a deep voice, "Since you've merged with a part of Saint Pan Gu's body, calling you Taiji divine sword will no longer be appropriate. 'Pan Gu Dragon Mark' is your new name."

"Pan Gu Dragon Mark?" Standing aside, Netherworld Hierarch looked at the sword in Ji Hao's hands, seeming to be a bit jealous. Shaking his head, he said, "This name is average, but truthful...I feel this name is not good enough for the sword. But we are cultivators, so we shouldn't care too much about these small things."

Shaking his head, Netherworld Hierarch abruptly sighed towards the sky, "Too ashamed, too ashamed. If I were as shameless as Priest Hua and Priest Mu, 'this treasure is meant to be ours', that's what I would certainly shout out. Shame, shame, I just can't bear doing it! Store it away, just store it away... Such a treasure..."

Ji Hao laughed out loud. On purpose, he wielded Pan Gu Dragon Mark towards Netherworld Hierarch, then opened his mouth and took a deep breath. The sword transformed into a Chaos power stream and flew into his mouth, silently floating in his spiritual space, being nourished by the powers of Ji Hao's embryos of Dao.

"These people..." The great star formation was eaten by Pan Gu Dragon Mark. The star power faded, and in the reception room, people could be seen lying all over the ground. Because of Great Liberty, everyone was still unconscious.

Ji hao glanced at White Feather and his people, then shook his

head and walked to Ao Li, who was also unconscious, with blood on his mouth corners. Carefully checking Ao Li's body with his hands, Ji Hao found that he was indeed injured quite badly by the great star formation. But as a tough dragon, those injures were nothing to him.

What made Ji Hao frown was that Ao Li was in serious lack of spirit blood. At least eighty percent of his spirit blood was gone. At the moment, Ao Li looked like a healthy, muscular man, but in fact, he was as weak and exhausted as a dying elderly. Without his extra strong dragon body, he would have been completely bedridden for a long time, and wouldn't be able to even walk.

"This is...too much sensual pleasures... He's drained!" Ji Hao looked at Ao Li in shock. Ao Li was as strong as Divine Magi, and as a dragon prince, he was actually 'drained' by excessive sensual pleasures?

Even Ao Li's marrow was drained. By using the spirit power, Ji Hao scanned his body, and found that his spine was almost empty, with nothing but a slight little bit of marrow remained inside his bones.

Ji Hao didn't know what Great Liberty had done to Ao Li to shrink his veins by more than ninety percent. Both Ao Li's spirit blood and life-force had withered. Although he remained to be at the level of Divine Magi, he could fall to the lower level at any time.

"This is as unbelievable as seeing ghosts in broad daylight!" murmured Ji Hao.

"I see ghosts in broad daylight every day, but I've never become like this!" Netherworld Hierarch snorted coldly. His eyes shone dimly as he glanced at Ao Li, then abruptly pointed at Feng Qinxin and said, "By taking some tonic drug, this boy might recover, but this Phoenix girl is the poorest!"

Ji Hao turned to Feng Qinxin in surprise. Hesitating for a short

while, he pointed his finger on her body and quickly checked her vital body parts.

Her spirit blood was drained too. But even worse than Ao Li, she was dying. Ji Hao suspected that without the powerful magic drugs she had been using, she would have become a dried corpse long ago.

However, in Feng Qinxin's lower belly, a strong life-force was brewing. The life-force was so thriving that Ji Hao's eyebrows knitted on noticing it.

Feng Qinxin was pregnant. The fetus in her womb was already as powerful as a half step Supreme Magus, even before it was born. Perhaps, Great Liberty had been hiding the infant's power with some special magic to disable Ji Hao from discovering it. Now, on looking closely and scanning her body with the spirit power, Ji Hao found the infant glowing dazzlingly like a tiny sun inside Feng Qinxin's belly.

"This, his!" Ji Hao suddenly punched on the ground and growled, "Damn you, Great Liberty! She made Ao Li and Feng Qinxin give birth to a baby with all their spirit blood and life-force, as her...her stored physical body for ...future use. If she failed to find a natural treasure to recreate Pan Jia's body, she would seize the body of the fetus inside Feng Qinxin!"

"So cruel!" Netherworld Hierarch stood aside and murmured, "I am a cruel, merciless being, but I'll never do things like this." Clicking his tongue, he continued, "The ninth prince of the dragon-kind and the youngest phoenix princess were harmed so badly...Ah, thinking about the bad tempers of those dragons and phoenixes, hmm!"

In Feng Qinxin's womb, the fetus suddenly moved, releasing a dreadful devouring power to crazily absorb Feng Qinxin's life-force and spirit blood, which was already depleted. Even in a deep unconsciousness, Feng Qinxin showed pain and despair on her

face.

"Elder, do you have any tonic drug to replenish their life-force and spirit blood?" Ji Hao spread his hand towards Netherworld Hierarch.

"Hmm, poor kids. Alright, alright, I can’t bear watching this anyway."

Netherworld Hierarch frowned, then took out two Netherworld blood ganoderma and handed them to Ji Hao.

Chapter 1320: The Trade of Blood Ganoderma

The blood pool in hell, the dirtiest place in the world...

However, if the number fifty represented the world, only forty-nine would be occupied, and the remaining 'one' would be a glean hope, that always existed in the world. As extreme negativeness generated positiveness, and extreme positiveness generated negativeness, some extremely pure and clean spring mouths existed in the blood pool.

Nourished by the inexhaustible spirit blood power and the power of reincarnation from the Netherworld for countless centuries, the two blood ganoderma provided by Netherworld Hierarch grew into stunning baby shapes. These two blood ganoderma were at least ten million years old.

Ji Hao put Ao Li and Feng Qinxin together, side by side, then gently pointed his finger at their bodies and opened their mouths. As Ji Hao flicked his hand, the two blood ganoderma transformed into two extremely pure and strong torrents of spirit blood and surged into their mouths.

Ao Li and Feng Qinxin' bodies began shaking intensely. Under their skin, every wisp of their muscle fiber was shaking intensively. Every single cell of theirs had now been screaming greedily, striving for the spirit blood that suddenly flooded into their bodies.

It was like a sudden rain of tremendous life-force and natural power falling onto a desert that was dried for millions of years. From their marrow to their skins, Ao Li and Feng Qinxin' bodies began glowing and heating. Drops of grey-colored sweat oozed out of their pores, along with a faint stinky odor.

Ji Hao locked his fingers together and cast the 'inner lion seal'

and the ‘outer Vajra seal’, which originated from his Mantra Dan with Nine Secret Words, in turns to stimulate Ao Li and Feng Qinxin’ potential vitality, and trigger the mysterious energy in the universe, bringing that into their bodies.

Under the effects of Ji Hao’s magic seals and the two blood ganoderma, Ao Li and Feng Qinxin were healed gradually. Their skins shimmered, and their empty bodies were filled up. A pink hue emerged on their faces, as their strength and life-force were restoring.

Netherworld Hierarch looked at Ji Hao’s hand motions as his eyes sparkled. Behind him, the eighteen circles disappeared and became the eighteen hell clones again. Afterwards, seventeen hell clones silently disappeared, leaving Ji Hao and Blood Pool hell clone, the one Ji Hao was most familiar with.

Coughing slightly, Netherworld Hierarch looked at Ji Hao, then grinned and said, "These seals seem to deliver a magical effect... Hmm, ingenious, interesting, quite impressive!"

Ao Li and Feng Qinxin slowly opened their eyes. Netherworld Hierarch attentively pressed his thumbs heavily between their eyebrows. After a series of shrill screams and howls, a soft gust of wind blew out of their bodies, along with a faint aroma. Their eyes were bright again. Immediately, they looked at Ji Hao.

"You!" Both of them screamed out, then turned to each other.

"Damn you!" Feng Qinxin pointed her finger at Ao Li and cursed out loud. If she could make any larger movement, she would have leaped up and punched on Ao Li’s face already.

"I dare to act, also dare to bear the responsibility! Indeed, the baby in your belly is mine!" His face blushed, Ao Li looked at Feng Qinxin’s perfectly shaped body and almost drooled. "You can’t marry to anyone else now, so just marry me!" said Ao Li.

The power of the two blood ganoderma had still been boiling

inside their bodies. By now, they could already control their bodies to absorb the blood ganoderma power. While restoring their spirit blood and life-force, they ‘viciously’ cursed each other. But why did Ji Hao feel that they were flirting with each other?

"Prince and princess, do you remember what happened before? If you do, good, but please don’t expose me. Hm, I still have many things to do!" Sightly shaking his body, Ji Hao slowly became ‘old crayfish Summer’, right in front of Ao Li and Feng Qinxin.

In shock, Ao Li and Feng Qinxin stared at ‘Summer’, as if he were a ghost.

Ji Hao turned around, spread his hand again directly towards Netherworld Hierarch, and said, "Hmm, the magic seals you watched me cast just now, I have nine of them in total. They are powerful and effective. With the nine seals, you can communicate with the world, and also reach to the secrets of the universe... You’re an elder, so would like to trade a blood ganoderma for the nine magic seals?"

Netherworld Hierarch chuckled, then conveniently took out a blood ganoderma from his sleeve. This blood ganoderma seemed to be even older than the other two. "Give it to me now. Hmm, these magic seals of yours are strange. Somehow, I feel that I will be able to figure out something with them. Strange, strange, you shouldn’t be able to create them, but that friend of mine..."

Netherworld Hierarch was trying to say that even Yu Yu might not be able to create these magic seals either. After all, Yu Yu was the strongest sword artist in the world. He was good at pulling out his sword and hacking the others to death, but in the sphere of magic seals, Yu Yu was far weaker than Priest Hua and Priest Mu.

In Netherworld Hierarch’s eyes, Ji Hao’s nine magic seals based on the Mantra Dan with Nine Secret Words were more like something created by Priest Hua.

Ji Hao smiled. He didn’t tell Netherworld Hierarch the about the

history of these magic seals. Instead, he pointed out his finger and shared everything he understood about these magic seals, and everything he learned in his previous life regarding the Mantra Dan with Nine Secret Words, with Netherworld Hierarch.

Netherworld Hierarch popped out his eyes in surprise, while nodding and humming in praise. He tried, but failed to hide the light of delight sparkling in his eyes.

"Good, good, good... Today is my lucky day!" Netherworld Hierarch laughed while waving his arms excitedly. Abruptly, he turned around and walked to White Feather and the others, who were still unconscious. Waving his broad sleeves, a frigid gust of wind blew out and woke up White Feather and the others.

One, two, there, four, five...

Ten Netherworld blood ganodermas floated in front of Netherworld Hierarch in a straight line. Once White Feather and the others woke up, they fixed their eyes straight on the ten blood ganodermas. They even stopped breathing. Without making any move, they stared at these treasures.

"Do you all want these treasures?" Netherworld Hierarch smilingly looked at them and said, "Countless kinds of natural treasure that can recreate physical bodies exist in this world. You are all wealthy men; I believe, you can always find those treasures if you want."

"But, you are so eager for Netherworld blood ganodermas, because these treasures are generated by the purest spirit blood power in the world, without any impurity and other nature. With these, you can create the purest, cleanest physical bodies, right?"

"In other words, the physical bodies created with these Netherworld blood ganodermas are the perfect ones, that can meet all your demands."

"Therefore, no small talk, Mr. White Feather. The other eleven

divine treasures you mentioned earlier, get those for me as soon as you can, then this Netherworld blood ganoderma will be yours."

Pausing slightly, Netherworld Hierarch laughed happily out and continued, "Anyone else wants a Netherworld blood ganoderma? Simple, what the Westin Family paid is your reference price. I am by no means greedy. If you don't have so many valuable treasures...you can always pay with crystals! As for how many crystals does a divine treasure worth..."

Netherworld Hierarch grinned quite warmly, just like a butcher grinning towards a group of chubby pigs. With that bright, warm grin, he nodded and said to the others, "You are all influential figures, I believe...You will not try to lower the price too much, will you?"

"If the price you offered is beneath my expectation, I will turn around and walk straight away. Netherworld blood ganodermas are special treasures in Pan Gu world, so I don't worry about having no buyers."

Chapter 1321: A Pair of Poor Things

Netherworld Hierarch prepared to get the most out of White Feather and the others by using his Netherworld blood ganodermas. Ji Hao didn’t want to see the widow-like bitter looks of White Feather and the others. Therefore, he brought Ao Li and Feng Qinxin back to his bone house.

Shermie attentively served tea and fruits. Ji Hao held a cup of tea, then sighed to Ao Li and Feng Qinxin and asked, "How did you end up like this?"

Ao Li and Feng Qinxin glanced at each other. Abruptly, Ao Li giggled, while Feng Qinxin’s pinky face turned pale, then blushed, and then paled again. As the color of her face changed countless times, she finally gave a long sigh and helplessly spread her hands.

"I fell into that evil thing’s trap."

With a gloomy face, Feng Qinxin told Ji Hao about everything happened to her and Ao Li back in Pan Jia world, in detail.

Things were simple though. At first, Ao Li and Feng Qinxin were busy at finding all kinds of resources, peacefully without any special trouble. About half a year ago, the space of Pan Jia world suddenly broke. A gust of wind wrapped in a colorful light blew into Pan Jia world, and a dark gale chased closely behind. The colorful wind and the dark gale fought violently in Pan Jia world, shattered the sky, split the ocean, and killed countless mermaids and mermen, even perishing their souls.

Pan Jia was hiding in the deepest area of the ocean. Finally, she couldn’t bear watching. She launched her move and fought the two. With the great Dao of Pan Jia world, Pan Jia thoroughly suppressed the dark gale and the colorful wind at the beginning.

Gradually, the wind was dying, seeming about to disappear at any time. Pan Jia relaxed her vigilance towards the colorful wind,

and instead, she launched a fierce series of attacks at the dark gale.

Watching Pan Jia activate the power of the great Dao to fight her enemies, Ao Li, Feng Qinxin and the other dragons and phoenixes even trembled in fright. Each of them was powerful indeed, but facing the rage and power of a world, they couldn't even move. Even though Pan Jia world was way less powerful than Pan Gu world, that destructive sense of power still scared them so much.

Suffering Pan Jia's overwhelming violence for a long while, that crazy dark gale didn't run. It detonated itself, hurting both Pan Jia and itself.

The colorful wind was Great Liberty. Pan Jia was injured by the dark gale, and before she could heal herself with the natural power, Great Liberty drilled into her body. Ao Li, Feng Qinxin and the other dragons and phoenixes watched Pan Jia scream in the sky for half a month. At last, Great Liberty devoured Pan Jia, occupied her soul, and controlled the great Dao of Pan Jia world.

The situation was despairing. Feng Qinxina and Ao Li didn't even know where to run with their people. With the power of the world, Great Liberty easily caught them. Afterward, Ao Li and Feng Qinxin fell into the endless nightmare.

As Ji Hao saw, Ao Li and Feng Qinxin couldn't control their bodies at all. They clearly knew what they had been doing, but they couldn't stop.

Great Liberty made them a pair. As Ao Li and Feng Qinxin were almost drained, finally, a fetus was successfully developed in Feng Qinxin's womb. That was a powerful fetus, powerful enough to scare both of them.

"Fortunately, fortunately, we met you...Otherwise..." With a complicated look, Feng Qinxin gently stroked her own lower belly. Fortunately, Ji Hao found her. Otherwise, she would have been drained by her own child and died already.

Sitting beside her, Ao Li giggled again and continued telling their story.

Great Liberty attained their memories, and found out everything they knew about Pan Gu world. From their memories, Great Liberty also found all kinds of natural treasures that were treasured by the dragon-kind and phoenix-kind, and could recreate physical bodies.

She urgently wanted to recreate Pan Jia's physical body and restore Pan Jia's tremendous power, for herself to use. Immediately, she took Ao Li and Feng Qinxin back to Pan Gu world through the portal.

Pan Jia had a nature of water, while most of the treasures that could recreate physical bodies collected by the phoenix-kind had a nature of fire. Therefore, at first, Great Liberty give up on the thought of visiting the phoenix-kind in Pan Gu world. Guided by Ao Li, they easily sneaked into the Dragon Palace.

Not a single dragon elder or leader was in the Dragon Palace. As the heart of the dragon-kind, the Dragon Palace was barely guarded, except for the layers of strong defensive formations and magic screens. However, those defensive formations and magic screens delivered no effect to Ao Li.

They successfully broke into the secret treasury in the Dragon Palace, but surprisingly, they found that all treasures that could recreate physical bodies were gone. Great Liberty controlled a manager of the treasury, and from his memory, Great Liberty learned that those treasures were taken away by dragon leaders for an unknown purpose three years ago.

With no other choice, Great Liberty and Ao Li took a few valuable treasures from the Dragon Palace. While they were stealing the treasures, they were discovered by dragons who stayed behind to guard the palace. Those dragons rallied together to attack. Great Liberty's power was mostly suppressed by Pan Gu world, and

facing those dragons, she, Ao Li, and Feng Qinxin were almost trapped in the Dragon Palace.

The three of them escaped, but some top-grade ones under Ao Li and Feng Qinxin's commands, and most of their guards, were captured alive in the Dragon Palace. What happened next was them fleeing to Kui Gate in a flurry. They heard about the auction and decided to trade those Dragon Palace treasures for a suitable one for Great Liberty to rebuild Pan Jia's physical body.

"Which means, your families know about what you did, don't they?" Ji Hao looked at Ao Li, who raised his eyebrows and seemed to be quite excited for an unknown reason. "Aren't you afraid that your parents might beat you to death? Why are you still laughing?" Ji Hao asked in confusion.

Ao Li's bright smile instantly froze. He was happy about the fact that Feng Qinxin's baby was fathered by him, but he hadn't thought about what Ji Hao said. Indeed, he guided outsiders into the Dragon Palace and stole valuable treasures. The worst, he even stole the pair of dragon horn swords, which were made from the horns of the dragon ancestor!

"I'll be beaten to death!" Ao Li's face suddenly turned pale. Thud! He slid off the chair and sat straight down on the ground, as his face turned deathly pasty. Cold sweat flowed down from his forehead in large streams.

"I won't end up better than you!" Feng Qinxin mumbled, biting her lips, "I sneaked into the Dragon Palace with you. When we stole treasures from the secret treasury, the few old dragons caught us....My holy ancestor, I truly want to die!"

Screaming for a while, Feng Qinxin slapped herself heavily on the belly and yelled, "How can I be so unlucky?"

"That's my baby!" Ao Li instantly yelled out, "Even if you are going to die, you have wait until he's born! Why are you screaming? Why are you screaming? We didn't mean to betray our

families..."

After yelling loudly for a while, Ao Li suddenly started crying. "But, but those old dudes, they're unreasonable...This time, they're gonna peel me and pull out my tendons, they're really gonna do it! Perhaps, in tens of years, the armor worn by a little b*stard will be made from my scales and skin!"

Chapter 1322: Large Family People

Feng Qixin was in a daze. She sat on her chair, holding her slightly swollen belly with both hands.

A few strong phenixes surrounded her, each with a bitter, sorrowful look, as if they had just been forced to eat a hundred kilograms of gall bladders, and the bitter gall was even oozing out of their pores. Their faces even turned green.

As the guards of the youngest phoenix princess, they escorted a little princess out of the family for a journey, and now, they had to escort a mother back to the family. Phoenixes had always been proud and unreasonable, based on which, one might easily imagine the terrifying punishment that they were going to face.

Unlike Feng Qinxin, Ao Li and the few dragons under his command had been circling quickly in the room in anxiety. Ao Li's eyes were red, with two streams of tear spurting out of those eyes, dripping on the ground.

Dragon tears contained a magical power, that stimulated and improved water-kind bloodlines, and could even trigger an evolution of low-level water-kind creatures. Ao Li was crying, while a few little shrimps carried a jade bottle and followed behind him to cast a magic, collecting all his tears.

Ao Li cried widely, and the few little shrimps laughed so happily that they even started dancing.

'Cry, cry, shed more tears!' These few little shrimp fixed their eyes on Ao Li's crying face. They even wanted to poke a knife into Ao Li's butt to shed some dragon blood! This was a pure-blood true dragon. A single drop of his blood might turn a little shrimp directly into a flood dragon!

If Ao Li weren't so strong, and if Ji Hao and Shermie weren't watching, these greedy little shrimps might have rushed up and

bitten Ao Li's arm off already.

After crying for a long while, Ao Li started murmuring.

Feng Qinxin did nothing too bad but come home pregnant. She could still be counted as a victim. No matter how angry those phoenix elders could be, in the worst case, Feng Qinxin would be put under house arrest for about a hundred years, before she was set free again.

But Ao Li was different. He guided an evil being into the Dragon Palace and stole important treasures. As the ninth prince, losing a few treasures would bring him a terrible beating and about a hundred years of house arrest at most. To a dragon with a long lifespan, this kind of punishment was not even worth mentioning. Nevertheless, he lost the pair of dragon horn swords made from the horns of the dragon ancestor, and that pair of swords was the most sacred, inviolable totem in the heart of every dragon!

This sounded as bad as Ao Li colluding with outsiders and smashing the ancestral temple of the dragon-kind. He would be peeled and his tendons would be pulled out from his body, aside of which, his soul would be crushed. Ao Li tried, but he failed to picture a better end for himself!

"I'm dead, I'm dead...Hah, that Great Liberty is such a disaster....My good ancestors' souls, if I knew this would happen, I should have spent a few more nights with little phoenix back in Pan Jia world!"

Ji Hao was taking a sip of the tea from the cup held in his hand. Hearing Ao Li, he choked on the tea and almost fainted. Coughing loudly, he dropped the teacup and threw Ao Li a sideways glance.

'Alright, even now you still have the mood to think about these things, keep worrying then!' thought Ji Hao.

Ji Hao would never, ever stand out to admit that he was the one who made the pair of dragon horn swords disappear. The Taiji

divine sword had become Pan Gu Dragon Mark, and it was impossible for it to spit the pair of dragon horn swords out!

If those old dragons found out the pair of dragon horn swords disappeared because of him, they would send out all warriors to attack Yao Mountain City, wouldn't they? Ji Hao dared not to imagine that terrifying scene, which might not be better than this flood raised by Gong Gong.

So...

Ji Hao sighed, brushed his long pair of feelers, and said slowly, "This, this is not entirely your fault! This should be Great Liberty's fault. She stole that pair of treasure, and the treasures disappeared because of her!"

Narrowing his eyes, Ji Hao continued slowly, "Ao Li, if you return to the Dragon Palace just like this, you will be chopped into pieces for sure. But, it doesn't mean that you're doomed. If you can find someone strong enough to depend on, then put all the blame on Great Liberty, you won't be held guilty, will you?"

Ao Li and Feng Qinxin looked at Ji Hao simultaneously. Ao Li raised his head, then sneered proudly as the tears flowing down his cheeks, and said, "Who in the world can be even stronger than our dragon-kind? I am dead...No one can protect me!"

Ji Hao dropped his face and said nothing.

This stupid dragon. Under the current situation, how could he still be so extremely arrogant?

'Alright, keep worrying then.' Thought Ji Hao. Ji Hao had known Ao Li for a while, and the pair of dragon horn swords disappeared because of him. Therefore, in the future, when dragon leaders truly decided to execute Ao Li, Ji Hao would beg Yu Yu to save him.

But, he couldn't say it out now. Ao Li believed that the dragon-kind was the strongest force in the world, and no one was able to

save him from his own family. In this case, Ji Hao decided to let him keep crying and worrying. He wouldn't do anything about it for now.

Picking up the teacup, Ji Hao continued tasting the refreshing tea. He even narrowed his eyes and started humming a happy folk melody.

Ao Li was still circling in the room, while Feng Qinxin remained sitting in her chair, dazed.

They were both silly and proud. Ji Hao estimated that they might stay like this for quite a while. 'The pressure from the dragon-kind and phoenix-kind', Ji Hao clicked his tongue and thought, 'I wonder how long they can hold up.'

A beautiful cyan-blue shrimp warrior with long and glowing silver feelers leaped into the room, bent its body, and thudded its knees on the ground. He kowtowed to Ji Hao and reported, "Great Ancestor, Great Ancestor, you told us to look for human beings, and we seemed to have found some!"

The shrimp warrior raised his head, pointed outside with his slim arm, and continued, "Just now, we were hanging out on the street, and a toad was taking a nap in a puddle of mud. The toad told us that he saw human beings passing by, faces covered with black clothes. He heard their conversations. One of them was named Wu Gu, and the toad sensed a scary power from him!"

Ji Hao instantly popped up his eyes in shock. Wu Gu? Was this a joke?

The leader of the group of Chu Wu people he met outside the Kui Gate, known as the top-ranked Gu artist in the world... Did he sneak into Kui Gate himself?

Dark Water Ao Ao's information was true. The allied force gathered outside Kui Gate, were they really planning to break the gate from both outside and inside?

Narrowing his eyes and rubbing his chin, Ji Hao then waved his hand towards Shermie and said, "Shermie, go find White Feather to pick up our armors and weapons. Give those gears to our boys. By the way, go recruit as many shrimp and crab warriors as you can, and the other relatively weaker water-kind warriors. Tell everyone that I, King Summer, am recruiting, as many as possible! Everyone is welcomed!"

Holding his hands behind his body, Ji Hao stood up and said a few more words to Shermie. Then, he dragged the shrimp warrior, who brought Ji Hao the news, and flashed out of the room.

Ao Li paused for a second and burst with a growl, "Oi, oi, you said find someone to depend on, but you have to tell me who?"

Chapter 1323: Everybody Has A Plan

When Ji Hao walked out of the bone house with the little shrimp warrior, he had already become another unimpressive little shrimp warrior, with cyan-grey shell, sharp head, slim limbs, and a stooped body. He carried a short fish bone spear, wearing a rubbish armor made from iron tree bark, and looking like a fainthearted mouse trying to steal an egg.

In a stinky puddle by the road, Ji Hao saw the reflection of himself and couldn't help but exclaim in surprise.

Priest Hua's Dao of evolvement was indeed powerful, and his shapeshifting magic was truly ingenious. So many powerful beings existed in Pan Gu world, but not even Priest Dachi, Qing Wei, or Netherworld Priest created a shapeshifting magic like this.

"Interesting, Priest Hua's little tricks are truly interesting." murmured Ji Hao. Guided by the little shrimp warrior, they sneakily moved forward by the corner of a wall.

Having walked for half an hour, some little shrimps, crabs, toads, loaches, and other low-grade water-kind spirit creatures popped out one after another, showing them the way with sign language. Following the directions given by these small creatures, Ji Hao came to a giant coral building.

A few fierce-looking shark warriors guarded by the gate of the building, holding shiny bronze blades and ferociously looking at every living being crossing the road. Seeing any spirit creature who dared to linger for a slightly longer while around the gate, these shark warriors would rush up and chop it without saying a word.

Following shrill screams, a few small spirit creatures were hacked into pieces. These Shark warriors laughed and picked up the body parts of those poor spirit creatures, throwing them into their own mouths and chewing pleasingly.

Soon, not a single breathing creature was left on the road.

The little shrimp warrior was scared to death. He huddled in a corner and looked at Ji Hao pitifully. He was freaked out by those shark warriors, and truly dared not to take another step forward. Even though he clearly knew that the shrimp warrior following behind him was actually ‘Summer, the great ancestor’, he dared not to take one more step.

Ji Hao shook his head, patted the little shrimp’s head, and told him to go back.

Slightly quivering, Ji Hao let the Taiji universe mirror hover around his body and wrap him up with a stream of divine light of extreme negative, then cast an invisible spell that was specially created by Priest Hua. Afterward, he held his hands behind his body and walked straight to the gate of the coral building.

In front of the gate, Ji Hao paused briefly. He glanced at the few shark warriors guarding there, then looked at the foot-thick fence wall. Walking to the wall, he cast a spell and allowed himself to easily enter into the yard through the fence wall.

The wall was built with coral mixed with clay, with three layers of early warning formations buried in it, along with a highly lethal magic trap. However, the ‘go-through-wall’ spell created by Priest Hua was amazingly sensitive, such that when Ji Hao entered through the wall, none of the three early warning formations and the magic trap was triggered.

The yard was heavily guarded. Tens of shark warriors wearing metal spell symbols armors were on patrol, while a group of fierce piranhas were darting around the yard, bearing their sharp teeth. The spacious yard was almost filled up.

What made Ji Hao especially speechless was that sticking to the roof of the main building, were thousands of water-tank-sized sea snails, with their large eyeballs reaching out from their shells. They were rolling almost three-hundred and sixty degrees,

vigilantly watching everything in the surroundings. The roof was filled up with these sea snails, such that if anyone slightly touched the roof, it would immediately catch the attention of these weird looking creatures.

As this building was so strictly watched, something under-the-table must be happening inside. Ji Hao narrowed his eyes and pondered for a while. He continued casting the invisible spell to dodge the patrols even more carefully, dashing madly in the yard, then silently walked to the door of the main building.

A beautifully glowing, extremely luxurious black pearl curtain was hanging on the door. Each black pearl was as large as the thumb of a human adult and translucent. Deep inside each pearl, tiny and complicated spell symbols were sparkling.

As a breeze blew across, the pearl curtain swayed slightly. Black pearls tinkled against each other and released faintly sensible waves of power vibrations, which wove into a large web and firmly sealed the door.

Ji Hao carefully released his spirit power. The pearl curtain was a highly sensitive treasure, and any external force would trigger it and alarm people in the room.

Looking closer, Ji Hao found that the wall of this building was also sparkling with a dim light. Defensive formations buried in this wall were much stronger than the ones inside the fence wall, such that even with Priest Hua's 'go-through-wall' spell, Ji Hao couldn't guarantee to enter into the room through this wall.

"The 'go-through-wall' spell may fail, but I have this treasure." A clear light darted out of Ji Hao's forehead. Wrapping Ji Hao up, the golden bridge slightly quaked the space and brought Ji Hao into the room.

Inside the room, three-hundred extra large metal boxes were placed on the ground in ordered lines. Contained in those boxes were powerful magic talismans, magic medicines, and top-grade

crystals. Ji Hao even saw the ‘life-extension doses’ in a box. The ‘life-extension dose’ was a medicine newly developed by the Magi Palace. One dose could extend the lifespan of an ordinary human being by three thousand years. If used on Divine-Magus-level powerful beings, one dose could deliver about ten-thousand years extension of life.

The ‘life-extension dose’ was extremely hard to concoct, especially because of the rarity of the raw materials. Currently, only three doses were kept in the secret treasury of the Magi Palace, and without Emperor Shun’s order, no one could use them. Those three doses were prepared for the most important core leaders of the alliance of human clans. For example, if Candle Dragon Gui’s life was running out, he could have a dose.

The entire Magi Palace owned merely three doses, but right now, Ji Hao saw ten whole doses sealed in a black crystal.

In the room, a dark-skinned, wrinkled old man sat in the middle. His legs were crossed, eyes glowing dimly with a green light, as he greedily looked at all kinds of treasure contained in the three-hundred metal boxes. Especially the ten doses, those almost made him drool.

Wu Gu sat aside, carelessly fiddling with a dragon-skin scroll.

Shaking the scroll, Wu Gu laughed with a high-pitched voice and said, "Dark Water great ancestor, come on, why are you still hesitating? Accept our terms. Then, even if Gong Gong dies, and his whole family dies, you and your Dark Water Serpent Family can still live wealthily, happily, and safely. Take a look at this land title deed I brought you. The territory our Chu Wu Clan chose for you is even three times larger than your current territory in Northern Wasteland!"

Laughing with a hissing voice, Wu Gu narrowed his eyes and continued with a vicious tone, "We’re not asking you to do much. We simply want you to do your job! You Chao Family, Qiong Sang

Family, Ghost Chariot Clan, Cloud Sun Family, High Sun Family, Wu Chang Family, Suiren Family...Kill their people, as many as you can!"

"You only need to promise that Kui Gate will eventually be broken by our Chu Wu Clan. In return, we, Chu Wu Clan, promise you and your families a happy and safe life!" Slapping the scroll loudly, Wu Gu said in a deep voice.

Chapter 1324: Assassinate Wu Gu

So ironic, so pathetic. Hearing Wu Gu, Ji Hao sensed a sadness that drilled deep into his marrow.

Chu Wu, the beginning of the Magus system... ‘Wu’ literally meant Magi; with this last name, with the unimaginably strong power, Chu Wu people weren’t thinking about helping the humankind through the difficult time. Instead, they were procrastinating, planning on hurting the other families, and gaining more profits.

With all resources possessed by the Magi Palace, only three ‘life-extension doses’ were concocted, but Wu Gu offered ten doses without any pressure. Chu Wu Clan was even more powerful than the Magi Palace, where the elites among human beings gathered. However, at this critical stage of the flood-control mission, they were thinking about how to weaken the other powerful ancient families and earn credits for themselves!

What good could such a clan do to the humankind?

Ji Hao’s fingers were slightly itchy. Ji Hao suddenly felt that he had the same problem as Yu Yu, that once he found anyone unbearable, his ten fingers would itch. Soon, the itchiness spread to every corner of his body. At last, he even sensed it from his marrow.

He truly wanted to pull out Pan Gu Dragon Mark and hack Wu Gu directly to death. Just one hack, that must feel so good! That delight might even stimulate his heart of Dao and lead to an improvement.

Sitting in the middle of the room, the dark-skinned, scrawny, Dark Water Serpent hissed to laugh and then said, "Human beings...Ever since I knew you, you’ve never changed. So many brave people, heroes, even I admire them...Fortunately, quite a number of people like you exist among human beings, Elder Wu

Gu. Otherwise, all the other creatures would have no place to stand in this world."

While smirking, Dark Water Serpent pointed at Wu Gu, then grinned and continued, "If every human being is like Emperor Shun, like Si Wen Ming, like those heroes that I admire, we, Dark Water Serpent Family, Xiang Liu, Kun Peng, Wuzhi Qi, Henggong Fish, Snake Xiu, old Yu, and that old flood dragon in the North Sea, we all would have become your slaves long ago, generation after generation!"

Wu Gu snorted coldly and showed an angry look on his old scrawny face, then said, "Dark Water great ancestor, you're a powerful prehistorical being, an eldership. Enough of these sour words. Tell me, will you accept our offer or not?"

"I, Wu Gu, have lived for long, and I've seen much. You have to know that wrongheaded people always end up miserably. Always having an alternative plan is the safest way to live!" With a dark face and a weird tone, Wu Gu tried to persuade Dark Water Serpent.

Ji Hao silently walked behind Wu Gu, without making even the slightest sound nor leaving the slightest trace. Pan Gu Dragon Mark quietly flew out from his palm. Ji Hao gripped the sword hilt with both hands and reached the sword tip to the back of Wu Gu's neck inch by inch.

With the Big Dipper step, Ji Hao carefully and slowly adjusted his position.

He prepared to kill Wu Gu with one sword move, then conveniently hack Dark Water Serpent to death. He wanted to do this in a perfect way. Therefore, the relative position between Ji Hao, Wu Gu, and Dark Water Serpent was extra important. Dark Water Serpent was strong. After all, he was a powerful prehistorical being, one of the eight senior ministers under Gong Gong's command, and was famous for his tremendous strength

and unbreakable tough body.

But Ji Hao was confident. As long as he managed to land his sword on Black Water Serpent's body, he believed he would succeed. Not even Dark Water Serpent could survive the sharp edge of Pan Gu Dragon Mark.

Slowly, the sword tip reached out, as Ji Hao found the best attacking angle. He would pierce the sword into Wu Gu's head and then swing, so that the sharp edge of the sword could smoothly cut open Dark Water Serpent's neck.

Ji Hao held his breath and calmed himself down. Without leaking any intent of killing, he put the tip of Pan Gu Dragon Mark slowly against the back of Wu Gu's skin. The sword edge swept across his skin and silently shredded a few silvery-grey fine hairs on Wu Gu's nape, but Wu Gu felt nothing.

All of a sudden, a high-pitched, shrill scream burst from inside Wu Gu's body. Next, a fierce power vibration erupted.

Ji Hao seized the opportunity and pushed the sword forward. Puff! The sword penetrated Wu Gu's nape, and slantingly came out of his forehead. Wu Gu, the Master Elder of Chu Wu Clan, was assassinated by Ji Hao with a single sword move, right in front of Dark Water Serpent.

The special, destructive power that belonged to the pair of dragon-horn swords surged into Wu Gu's body like a flood, crushing all his meridians and acupoints. Inside his body, nine dark-green stars shone dazzlingly. His spirit stars were activated, sending up torrents of dark-green star power.

Ji Hao griped the sword hilt and put forth his strength. The destructive sword power landed violently on Wu Gu's spirit stars. Waves of dark-green star power were dispelled, and the nine spirit stars collapsed rumblingly. Wu Gu's thirty-six spirit Gu bugs hiding inside the nine spirit stars were shredded as well.

Wu Gu's chest disappeared. Dark-green star power surged up into the sky like reverse waterfalls, causing a muffled rumbling noise. Above Kui Gate, high up in the sky, nine enormous dark green natural stars shone in broad daylight. The starlight poured down through thick layers of dark cloud and illuminated all mountains and waters within a radius of millions of miles.

Wu Gu screamed hoarsely. His soul had collapsed, and he was already dead. But the strong life-force lingered in his physical body, allowing his body to scream ear-piercingly, instinctively.

He was a powerful being, a half step Supreme Magus. He was closer to the level of Supreme Magi than Ji Hao. His cultivation and his spirit star power were both far greater than Ji Hao's.

From his body, the vast power that belonged to his spirit stars was withdrawn by the nine natural stars. The thick, dark-green power torrents broke the space and turned into nine enormous light beams, piercing straight into the sky. Wu Gu's body roared like a beast, while his limbs twitched intensely.

It was a half-step-supreme-level physical body. Even though its chest was crushed by the massive spirit star power, this body could still remain 'alive' without decaying for ten million years, unless Ji Hao decided to destroy it for good.

Dark Water Serpent was startled. He screamed shrilly.

He and Wu Gu combined their powers and set layers of defensive formation in his reception room. But all of sudden, someone popped out and assassinated Wu Gu with a single sword move!

Holy ancestors' soul, Wu Gu was a half-step Supreme Magus, and Divine-Magus-level magic treasures couldn't even harm a hair of his! But, his metal-strong head was actually penetrated by a sword. What kind of treasure was the sword held in that shrimp warrior's hands?

"Shrimp warrior? A goddamned shrimp warrior?!" Dark Water

Serpent leaped up, tempted to pounce on Ji Hao. But when he saw Ji Hao's face clearly, he paused, and all his strength was suddenly gone. Wu Gu was stabbed to death by a shrimp warrior?!

'This Wu Gu was not fake, was he?'

'Chu Wu people aren't planning on framing me, are they?

'But we are enemies already, why would they send a fake Wu Gu to frame me? It's pointless. No matter how many human beings I kill, I will earn no blame but credits, right?'

Dark Water Serpent was deeply confused.

Ji Hao breathed deeply and then burst into a series of roar. He shouted and yelled like a real shrimp warrior while turning around, hands gripping the sword as he swiftly and ferociously swung the sword towards Dark Water Serpent.

The sharp sword edge came straight at Dark Serpent's neck!

Chapter 1325: The Twelve Worlds Arrive

Dark Water Serpent shrieked with a fiendish voice, staring at Ji Hao with a pair of burning eyes.

He had no time to dodge or move his feet. Ji Hao concentrated all his strength and spirit power to launch the sword move. Through this move, he perfectly demonstrated Yu Yu's sword art, based on his current ability. Wherever the sword edge swept across, the space was frozen, and so was the time. Ji Hao opened his erect eye and released the water-clear light, which illuminated the entire space. He saw beams of colorful light being cut broken by the edge of his sword, one after another.

Those breaking light beams were the light of Dao!

As Ji Hao wielded his sword, even the great Dao of Pan Gu world restrained its power to avoid getting harmed. Before the sword edge, the lights generated from the great Dao were compressed into visible, almost tangible beams, that could be sensed directly by using spirit power. These light beams were cut broken by Pan Gu dragon Mark.

Breaking all with a single sword move; one could already see Yu Yu from this sword move made by Ji Hao.

Even though Ji Hao made this world-destroying sword move only with the terrifying power of Pan Gu Dragon Mark, he immersed in this almost perfect move from his heart to his soul. Each time the sword cut a beam of Dao light, Ji Hao would gain a deeper understanding about a certain part of the great Dao.

Facing the sword, Dark Water Serpent's face twisted in fright.

So strong, so unstoppable! An irresistible, bloodcurdling pressure descended, as he felt unable to even struggle, be it his body or soul. Dark Water Serpent was one of the first generation of creatures in Pan Gu world, a powerful being who lived since the prehistorical

era. He had sensed a similar overwhelming pressure only back in the prehistorical era,.

Back then, Saint Pan Gu created the world, and was besieged by thirty-million Chaos monsters. Unfortunately, Pan Gu fell.

Saint Pan Gu's body disintegrated and became parts of this new world. Before some of his body parts disappeared completely, traces of Saint Pan Gu's power still lingered in the world. Back then, Dark Water Serpent sensed the same power from the newly created world, the same pressure that belonged to Saint Pan Gu.

Pan Gu Dragon Mark hacked straight to his head. Ji Hao performed the combined move of sky-opening, earth-splitting, everything-grow, everything-perish, and all living beings recreate, generating an overwhelming Chaos power that surged out from his head. It seemed to condense into a tall and strong human figure.

In Dark Water Serpent's eyes, he saw a giant holding a large axe and roaring thunderously while hacking at his head.

He couldn't dodge, because the space was frozen and the time was stopped; every power, every magic was suppressed.

"This clone is generated from thirty percent of my spirit blood and cultivation, yet I failed to dodge a sword move from you! What is your name? Let's me know who killed me before I die!" screamed Dark Water Serpent.

"I am just an insignificant shrimp warrior!" Ji Hao chuckled while the sword edge sliced across Dark Water Serpent's neck.

A large head was sent up into the air. On Pan Gu Dragon Mark, the two dragons sparkled dimly, and next, Dark Water Serpent's head and body suddenly became a cloud of ash, drifting in the air.

Before Kui Gate, in a hundreds of miles radius dark cloud, Dark Water Serpent, the real one, had coiled his body into a giant serpent formation. His eyes shone brightly as he was facing the allied human force. All of a sudden, he leaped straight up and

straightened his enormous body like a wooden stick, while dark blood spurted out of his mouth.

"Who is it? Who is it? Who destroyed my clone?!" Dark Water Serpent screamed hysterically, also frighteningly. That clone he created with thirty percent of his cultivation and spirit blood could only be defeated by a Supreme Magi. Even if one of those Supreme-level human beings truly joined the war, one Supreme Magi could only injure that clone severely at most, but could never destroy it with a single move.

Dark Water Serpent was powerful. He controlled his clones, and felt everything that happened to them. No detail could hide from him. Just now, he lost a clone and suffered a great loss. His real body was harmed badly as well. However, he sensed nothing from that clone of his before all this happened. He temporarily lost his eyesight, then the connection between him and that clone was broken completely, after which, blood erupted from his body, and thirty percent of his power was already lost.

"Who is it? Who is it?" Dark Water Serpent shrieked. He transformed into a tremendous dark cloud, flying into Kui Gate. Watched Dark Water Serpent go mad, warriors from the tens of human clans who had been attacking the Kui Gate as an allied force, directly left the battlefield without paying any attention to the overall battle situation. Countless human warriors were thrilled, roaring towards the sky. Drums were beating as loud as thunders, as these warriors marched into Kui Gate.

Dark Water Serpent was going crazy, and the group of descendants of his were instantly thrown into panic. They failed to stop the wild waves of attacks from the allied human force, and suffered a debacle. They desperately fled into the Kui Gate.

"Attack! Break the Kui Gate! The more heads you cut off, the more credits you earn!" Ghost Chariot Green Grass, Qiong Sang Sheng, You Chao Yu, and the leaders of High Sun Family, Wu Chan Family, Chu Wu Clan, and the other families and clans which

arrived later, shouted out and excitedly launched the attacks.

In the Kui Gate, Ji Hao waved his arms and swept away the three-hundred boxes brought by Wu Gu, then flashed out of the room. While retreating at his highest speed, he constantly changed his look.

Once he rushed about a hundred miles away from the building, a dark hurricane descended from the sky. Strong toxins were brought down by the hurricane, which struck on the large coral building. Followed by a thunderous boom, dark gusts of wind blew towards all directions, immediately turning millions of water-kind creatures into skeletons.

"Hah, impressive, Dark Water Serpent is crazy!" Ji Hao narrowed his eyes and laughed. Losing thirty percent spirit blood and cultivation? Anyone would go crazy because of that, right? Especially at this life-risking point of time, Dark Water Serpent suddenly lost so much spirit blood and cultivation, which caused a steep fall of his power. He was very likely to fall in the flood.

"Thanks to you, baby!" While sneering, Ji Hao gently stroked Pan Gu Dragon Mark and praised it, then sent it back into his body.

Ji Hao didn’t expect Pan Gu Dragon Mark to be so powerful, that the first move he launched with it seemed to even destroy all powers in the world. That clone generated from thirty percent of Dark Water Serpent’s spirit blood and cultivation failed to resist the power of the sword, and was turned into ashes instantly.

"Marvelous, truly marvelous!"

Ji Hao just couldn’t stop praising the sword. He slowed down and rushed back to his bone house at the fleeing speed of an ordinary water-kind spirit creature.

"Who is it?! Who the hell is it?!" An enormous dark water serpent showed up from the dark hurricane. Dark Water Serpent raised his upper body from the hurricane, swaying ferociously and shattering

the dark clouds in the sky.

Buzz! Pan Gu world quaked suddenly.

Everyone raised their heads and looked at the northeast sky. Up there, the sky of Pan Gu world was broken. From a giant hole in the sky, which was tens of millions of miles in radius, flood poured in.

The world quaked once again. In the southeast sky, another gigantic hole was created.

Following a drumming noise, twelve huge holes appeared in the sky in a row, within a blink of an eye. Flood poured down, while the super strong water power transformed into fierce gales and blew into Pan Gu world.

‘Ha…’

From the core of Pan Gu world, an earth-shaking, braying laugh could be heard, that sounded like the happy laughter of human beings.

Chapter 1326: Return Through the Space

The Chaos was vast, boundless, and endless.

Chaos tides struck against each other, as dazzling light streams extended for billions of miles. Occasionally, one could see enormous, strangely shaped Chaos creatures roaring and struggling in the lights.

Across the boundless Chaos and countless, different sized worlds, was a jellyfish-like creature. Its head was a million miles in radius. Under that head were hundreds of thousands of tentacles, long or short, thick or thin. Its body glowed with a five-colored light. It roared, screamed, and dashed across a tremendous Chaos whirlpool, then flew out of a turbid ocean of clouds.

The gigantic and beautiful creature flew to above a beautiful world and pointed out its tentacles. Five-colored light beams descended like rain and swished shrilly, falling into a vast ocean in the middle of this world.

A middle-aged man stood on the ocean surface. His square face gave him a majestic look. He was wearing a long black robe, and a colorful bronze armor vest. Treading on a pair of dark dragons, he looked at the surface of the ocean, seeming to be lost in his thoughts.

The rain of five-colored light fell from the sky. The middle-aged man raised his head and teasingly sneered to that giant, jellyfish-like creature.

"Evil thing, in the past ten thousand years, you've gone too far in bullying. Today, you have returned once more. How can I, Gong Gong, tolerate you for another day?" Under this man's feet, the pair of dark dragon roared towards the sky. Their bodies transformed into a pair of large blades. Flicked by Gong Gong's fingers, a pair of hundred-thousand-miles-long, dark, crescent-shaped light streams rose into the sky, then silently sliced across

the jellyfish’s body.

Countless beams of five-colored light were shredded by the dark crescent lights, while the giant jellyfish silently fell apart. Crystal-like five-colored liquid splashed out from its body.

"Pre-world five lights divine essence water! Great, great, I can achieve an even higher level now!" Gong Gong looked at the five-colored liquid falling like a heavy rain, waved his arms and roared in excitement. He opened his mouth and breathed deeply. As the five-colored liquid fell into his mouth, the power vibration he released got stronger and stronger. Gradually, hazy, endless waves emerged behind his body.

"Pre-world Chaos treasure, dark dragon blade! Hahaha, indeed marvelous!" While gulping the five-colored liquid, Gong Gong pointed out his fingers. Following his move, the pair of dark crescent lights, which were flying further and further away, helplessly roared, then slowly returned.

Gong Gong gripped he pair of crescent lights and shouted, "Evil things, if I didn’t bring you back from the hopeless situation, when could you ever fulfill your appetite with fresh blood? I’ve wasted a thousand years on you. If you still refuse to yield..."

A thunderous boom could be heard from above Gong Gong’s head, as an unimaginably strong water power shattered the space like an actual flood and drilled into his body. Behind him, a crimson Yu roared towards the sky. The figure of the Yu turned clearer and clearer, while Gong Gong became more and more blur.

"He succeeded! He succeeded...My boy, after several generations, he finally succeeded! Haha, I can finally return! I can finally leave this bloody Chaos and return! I can go home!" Gong Gong was thrilled. He stomped his foot against the ocean surface and growled excitedly.

"The green mountains and rivers in Pan Gu world, the icebergs and snowfields in Northern Wasteland, and those beautiful,

beautiful little girls from Pan Gu world... Strong liquor, appetizing grilling meat, haha, I am finally leaving this bloody Chaos!"

"I'm coming back, I am coming back! Haha! Pan Gu world, from this day on, I am your dominator!"

At the same time, immeasurably far away in the Chaos, a tens of thousands of meters tall man, wearing a long black robe and holding a dark trident, was fighting against tens of Chaos creatures, showering blood. Above his head, the space cracked suddenly as well.

Torrents of pure water power surged into his body. The man was exhausted a minute ago, but now, he roared towards the sky, sounding like dragons. Hearing his thunderous roars, the tens of Chaos creatures vigilantly drew back. This battle had lasted for nearly a hundred years.

A crimson Yu gradually emerged from behind this man, getting clearer and clearer, while the man became more and more blur. Seeing the tens of Chaos creatures, the ferocious-looking Yu instantly opened its mouthpart. From its mouth, poisonous gas and sands puffed out like a storm.

"Hah, do you even have any strength left to fight?" The man gripped his trident and shouted to the tens of Chaos creatures, "The treasure you took from me, give it back!"

Flashing across the sky, giant waves rose from around this man's body. Replenished by the endless water power from the Chaos, this man's strength had been restored to his peak state. Wave after wave, the pure water power descended ceaselessly, forcibly filling his body and boosting his power and cultivation.

He wielded the trident and left billions of eye-piercing cold light beams in the air. The waves around him formed a giant whirlpool that looked like a black hole, easily swirling the tens of Chaos creatures in.

The cold light dazzled. The largest Chaos creature in the battle looked like a mixture of a toad and a lobster. The creature burst into a howl as its belly was torn apart by the trident. A water-tank-sized, brightly glowing bead flew out of his body, being grabbed in the man's hand.

"Haha, weightless divine pearl, which can destroy a world with one strike. With this treasure, when I return to Pan Gu world, one of the five divine emperor thrones in the heaven...should belong to me!" The man laughed wildly towards the sky while his body disappeared amidst surging waves.

In the boundless Chaos, twenty-seven men in black robes had been exploring new worlds, or aimlessly traveling across the Chaos, or fighting against Chaos creatures...

An endless water power from Pan Gu world suddenly arrived through the Chaos and merged into their bodies, speedily restoring their powers. Added with special 'position-switching' magic, they were brought back to Pan Gu world.

Among the twenty-seven men, the one who traveled the furthest unintentionally went through over ten Chaos whirlpool, and crossed a very long distance. When the 'position-switching magic' prepared by Yu Ancestor was triggered, this old Gong Gong paused suddenly. In both shock and fright, he gazed at the boundless Chaos before his eyes.

A golden light shone from the endless Chaos and expanded speedily. Within a blink of an eye, all Chaos tides in the area a billion miles in radius were shattered by the golden light.

A golden, shining, immeasurably large and magnificent city was flying in the Chaos at a startling speed, crushing all Chaos tides on its way like an enormous ship. The fence wall of this city was over three-meter-tall. Standing on the fence wall were countless divine towers.

Above each divine tower was a sun-like, dazzling sphere of light,

and within every light sphere was a giant erect eye, vigilantly looking around.

"A non-humankind city...in the Chaos!" murmured this old Gong Gong, "I, have I approached the non-humankind's nest? Oh my, how many non-humankind armies can this city contain? Good, good, they're not heading to Pan Gu world!"

Following his sigh, this old Gong Gong disappeared, as a giant, crimson Yu appeared.

Chapter 1327: The Destination — Pan Gu!

The boundless Chaos...

The unimaginably enormous golden city dazzled with a golden light. Wherever it flew across, the Chaos was quieted down, and the disturbed natural powers were eased. The heterogeneous Chaos power was turned into clear streams, softly flowing by the city.

On the fence wall, strong warriors in full armors were on patrol under those golden divine towers. Occasionally, unlucky Chaos creatures would fly across, and a warrior would immediately burst into a resonant growl, then pull open his longbow.

The golden light flashed across, as blood and flesh splashed. Chaos creatures were slaughtered one after another. Countless exquisitely made golden flying boats hovered around the city, classifying and collecting the skin, meat, blood, and bones of those Chaos monsters, shipping back into the city to store. Left behind the golden city was a storm of blood. Not one Chao creature survived.

Inside the city, in the core area, hundreds of enormous, magnificent, mountain-like golden palaces stood on the ground. These palaces were built from golden, translucent crystals, giving out an inexhaustible light and heat at every moment. Ordinarily, cultivators wouldn’t be able to even approach these palaces before being incinerated.

On the squares around these palaces, countless heavily armored warriors were on patrol. Showering under the golden light of those palaces, the skins of these warriors were slightly translucent, such that one could even see their bones and veins under their skins.

In the tallest palace, on a stage which was about six-hundred-meters tall, was a throne. It was as large as a hill, and embossed with countless luxurious and exquisite beautiful plants. Sitting

straight on the hollow carved throne was a handsome man in a long golden robe, with his eyes narrowed, looking at the disturbed Chaos outside the widely opened gate of the great hall.

From the stage to the floor, countless Yu Clan, Jia Clan, and Xiu Clan people stood on each stair, according to their positions. They were wearing long golden robes, seriously looking at the few Xiu Clan old mn, who were busy at work in the middle of the hall.

Countless extremely complicated and precise mechanical components floated in the air. The core of this giant machine was thousands of different sized crystal pieces. The smallest piece was only about a foot squared in area. Each small crystal piece had countless brightly shining spell symbols flowing down from it in streams.

The largest crystal piece was about three-thousand-meters-squared and ten-meters-thick, covered in a misty sparkling light. Inside the crystal piece were curved lines, different colored light spots, along with triangular, round, and rectangular, sparkling symbols.

‘Beep, beep’

A Xiu Clan old man raised his head and reverently reported to the man sitting on the throne, "Master, about the man in a black robe just now, based on our database, the nature of the water power surged out from his head was highly similar to the water power from Pan Gu world."

"That man should be from Pan Gu world."

This Xiu Clan old man continued cautiously, "The man disappeared and left that red creature. We guess that they have used some kind of ‘position-switch’ magic, replacing the man with the red creature, and bringing him back to Pan Gu world."

The man sitting on the throne slowly opened his eyes.

Same as human beings from Pan Gu world, this man had one pair

of eyes, sparkling like stars, without the third, fourth, or the fifth eye.

When this man opened his eyes, the entire golden city was dimmed down due to the glaring, dreadful light emitting from his eyes. His shining pair of eyes illuminated the immeasurably wide golden city.

"Local creatures of Pan Gu world, those ignorant lives, are they strong enough to come to this place? He seems to be lucky." The man teasingly smiled, then gently waved his hand, said, "Capture that red creature and dissect it."

With a faint, cold smile, he continued, "Based on the developmental level of Pan Gu world, they shouldn't be having any advanced 'position-switch' magic. Therefore, this should be a smart use of a natural ability. That man can't have such an ability, which means, this red creature is born with this ability...This is worth studying on."

A Xiu Clan man stood on the stage, holding a thick crystal book. He abruptly laughed and said, "Master, I found it. This red creature is a magical creature from Pan Gu world, called 'Yu'."

"'Yu', they can harm living creatures by spraying poisonous sands onto their shadows. Attacked by Yu's sands, living creatures would suffer a great pain, and eventually die of exhaustion. Yu Ancestor is a creature with a nature of water.When Pan Gu world was created, he was generated by the natural reward power for the creation of the world, as one of the first generation of creatures in Pan Gu world. Currently, he serves as one of the eight senior ministers under Gong Gong's command."

Coughing slightly, the old Xiu Clan man nodded to the man sitting in the throne and said, "Master, Gong Gong Family people are carrying out Lord Dishi Cha's 'navigation plan'. The twelve carefully selected water worlds are merging with Pan Gu world. The energy waves releasing from the great navigation formation

we designed can be detected by our ‘void divine mirror’, which can guide us to Pan Gu world."

"Ah, in this case, Gong Gong, a chess piece of ours, is not willing to remain out of the limelight." The man sitting on the throne gave a faint smile and responded with a low voice, "What Dishi Cha promised them is not enough to fulfill their greed, is it? Anyhow, the ones capable enough to travel into the Chaos are all powerful beings."

Slightly shaking his head, this man continued blandly, "However, bringing these powerful beings back to Pan Gu world, what’s the point of this? When we arrive in Pan Gu world, the world can only...yield."

Slowly standing up, the man looked at the complicatedly designed void mirror and said confidently, "We’ve been planning carefully and elaborately for so long. Finally, finally, Pan Gu world is in our control. Most importantly, those bloody people will not fight me over it. All resources in that world will belong to me, and me only."

"Dishi, Yemo, Fan, Polo, Pi, Yanmo, Jialou..." The man said the family names of the twelve families in power of Yu Dynasty in Pan Gu world carelessly, then sneered scornfully, "You poor low-grade nobles, how can you, how dare you grow such an ambition? How dare you occupy this fabulous great world?"

"Even I am tempted by this great world. It is so perfect, so healthy. It has never been damaged. It is a world that may allow me to finally take that step. You poor lowly things, how dare you? You don’t deserve it."

"You tried so hard. You concealed the coordinates of this world for so many years. But now, it’s mine!"

On the largest crystal piece in the void divine mirror, a colorful, large light sphere emerged.

Strangely, twelve white tiny light spheres were attached to the surface of the large light sphere. The twelve tiny light spheres released waves of milky white ripples ceaselessly, interweaving and dazzling like lighthouses on the sea during the dark night.

"The destination — Pan Gu world! At full speed!" The man smiled warmly and said, "I can’t wait to harvest!"

Chapter 1328: Welcoming Ceremony

When the twelve water worlds crashed into Pan Gu world, or in other words, Pan Gu world began devouring the twelve small worlds which delivered themselves over, Ji Hao and all living creatures in or around Kui Gate instinctively raised their heads and looked at the sky.

Twelve immense holes were opened up in the sky, as pure and strong water power condensed into an actual flood, pouring in.

‘All Streams to the Final Land’, the great formation was about to be completed perfectly. In Pan Gu world, torrents of water power had been surging towards Final Land, behind the nine water gates, and the endless heavy rain was already getting light. But, the twelve water worlds descended suddenly, suffocatingly, and despairingly. A new heavy rain fell from the sky, thousands of times stronger than before.

Ji Hao blankly stood in the middle of the main street of the Kui Gate market, watching tens of miles wide jets of water pouring down from the sky, and giant waves falling from the air like overwhelming waterfalls.

No raindrops existed in this rainstorm, only water streams and endless waves. The waves fiercely bumped into the mountains and rivers of Midland and flattened some less sturdy mountains rumblingly. Floating mountains in the sky couldn’t stand the high water pressure, as they slantingly fell from the sky and smashed on the ground.

"Lord Gong Gong! Lord Gong Gong!" Countless water-kind spirit creatures raised their arms thrillingly, roaring towards the sky.

"Lord Gong Gong! Lord Gong Gong!" Countless lower-grade water-kind creatures, who hadn’t managed to transform into human shapes, roared ferociously and mumbled to praise the greatness of Gong Gong.

A great number of large water-kind spirit creatures raised clouds and waves, then darted into the sky and rejoiced with wild excitement. Destructive waves slapped on their bodies, but caused no effect on them at all. They easily and freely moved through the waves and the enormous jets of water.

With their natural abilities, they brought the water level higher by over a hundred miles. Water stages rose from the flood one after another. Standing on the turbid water stages, countless water-kind spirit creatures wielded their weapons while roaring excitedly.

Hearing a high-pitched hissing noise, Ji Hao immediately raised his head and searched for its source.

That was Yu Chi's house. Tens of old Yu stood on the roof, in their original shapes. They happily and cheerfully twisted their large and swollen body, with clouds of poisonous gas and sands puffing out of their mouthparts. These old Yu were overexcited, even to an extreme degree. Their poisonous gas and sands spread out in all directions along the flood, yet, they didn't care. Surrounding them, countless shrimp warriors had fallen.

"Damned things!" Ji Hao cursed. He flashed across the air and dashed towards these old Yu, then conveniently wielded Pan Gu Dragon Mark and shredded them.

He clenched his left fingers, then loosened, releasing a water thunder with the extremely negative power. Following a muffled boom, the body parts of those old Yu and their terrifying poisonous gas and sands were all gone. Glancing at Dark Water Serpent, who was roaring and wriggling cheerfully a long distance away, Ji Hao stomped the roof broken, then broke into Yu Chi's house.

The thriving water power had been gathering towards this house. The altar in the middle of this house was like a black hole that had been ceaselessly absorbing the water power. Because of

what Ji Hao had secretly done to him, Yu Chi was still unconscious. He leaned against the altar with a pale face.

Coldly glancing at Yu Chi, Ji Hao silently wielded his sword. A destructive power drilled into Yu Chi's body and blew him into a puff of ash.

The altar had been releasing a strong power vibration wave by wave, spreading out in all directions, such that even Ji Hao could barely stand by it. Three Yu were huddled on the altar, twitching intensely. Their bodies gradually turned blur, and above their heads, three tall and sturdy men slowly showed up, each wearing a long black robe.

"Welcome back to Pan Gu world!" Looking at the three men, Ji Hao grinned. In the meanwhile, the nine blood flying knives gifted by Netherworld Hierarch swished up, transformed into nine extremely thin, blood-red threads, and darted into the altar.

Days ago, Ji Hao buried his Yu Yu sword intent in the altar, and now, the sword intent buzzed shrilly, merging with the nine blood flying knives right away. Guided by Yu Yu sword intent, eight flying knives disappeared from the altar in front of Ji Hao and then silently reappeared in the eight altars, located in the rest eight water gates behind the Kui Gate, through the faintly sensible space vibration inside the altar.

"We are back!" On the altar in front of Ji Hao, a strong man, who was wearing an armor vest, each hand gripping a black crescent blade, growled towards the sky, "I, Gong Gong, am back! Hahaha, Shennong, back then, you and your people forced us into the Chaos to search for the non-humankind's nest, but you would never know that one day, we will be back!"

"Haha, you can never know how terrifying the Chaos is until you dive in. No directions, no roads, all that one can rely on is luck! But we, Gong Gong Family, have our own path that leads back to Pan Gu world. What about you? You've all become ashes already,

haven’t you?" Another man laughed towards the sky as well. Abruptly, he turned around and politely bowed towards the man in an armor vest.

"Abba, you’re alive! Haha! We’re all alive!" The man growled in surprise.

"You little b*stard, do you know anyone else but your Abba? Don’t you remember me, your uncle?" On the altar, the third man excitedly shouted out, "Big brother, you’re safe, and that’s enough. And you, you little b*stard! Haha! We’re all safe! We’re all alive! We’ve all made it back..."

Puff! Ji Hao wielded Pan Gu Dragon Mark, stepped swiftly onto the altar, and silently penetrated this ‘uncle’s chest.

On the sword, the pair of faint dragons sparkled, while a deep dragon roar brought Ji Hao a piercing ear pain. ‘Uncle’ quivered intensely. He hadn’t completed his return, and his body was still slightly blurred. That body of his quivered intensively, without being able to launch any effective counterattack.

"How dare you?" That ‘Abba’ with an armor vest roared in rage.

"You, you, who are you?" The last Gong Gong screamed hoarsely, then raised his fist and attempted to punch Ji Hao. Nevertheless, his body had still been slowly returning to Pan Gu world, and he didn’t have the strength to punch.

"Who am I? Not important. What’s really important is that I can’t let you return to Pan Gu world!" Ji Hao looked at the three Gong Gongs and said in a deep voice, "You should better go back to where you came from, even though you might get lost in the Chaos or die."

Buzz! The Yu Yu sword intent Ji Hao buried in the altar erupted horrifyingly, along with the power of the blood flying knife.

Countless blood-red beams interwove on the altar, tearing Gong Gongs’ bodies. Not only on this altar, the same blood-red beams

burst from the rest eight altars too.

The twenty-seven Gong Gongs hadn’t completed their return, and their bodies were not yet solid. Due to the strangely sharp blood flying knives, countless slashes were left on their bodies.

"What are you all doing you scums?! Defend the altars! Defend the altars!" Thunderous roars descended from the sky.

Chapter 1329: Cut the Serpent

Far away, too far away...

The twenty-seven old Gong Gongs were too far away from Pan Gu world. Even with the amazing ability of Yu Ancestor and the inexhaustible water power provided by Pan Gu world, they needed ten breaths at least to complete their return.

The time span of ten breaths was not long, but not short either. This span of time was enough for Ji Hao to severely injure or even kill the twenty-seven old Gong Gongs, who were still switching positions with the twenty-seven Yu, and had no power of resistance, with the sword intent he buried in the altar ahead of time.

Typically, the span of ten breaths might pass within a blink of an eye. The plan of Gong Gong, the nine altars in the nine water gates, covered by the strong earth meridian power stirred up by the 'All Streams to the Final Land' great formation, no one was supposed to know about these. If nobody knew, then no one would be able to stop the return, and the span of ten breaths would soon pass. The time was enough for those old Gong Gongs to safely return to Pan Gu world.

Unfortunately, Ji Hao was like an invincible opponent of Gong Gong Family. He sneaked into the Kui Gate, discovered Yu Chi and the group of Yu, then entrapped Yu Chi and approached the altar to set an ambush.

The nine blood flying knives were activated by the Yu Yu sword intent. Interweaving blood-red beams sliced across Gong Gongs' bodies, leaving marrow-deep wounds. The scary blood power from the blood pool in hell drilled into their bodies and soon mixed with their own blood, permeating into their internal organs and bones.

Gong Gongs screamed in pain. How could such a major reversal happen to this great plan, which was supposed to be perfect? Gong

Gong in the heaven, was he trying to bring his ancestors back to Pan Gu world to conquer this world, or did he actually betray his family and bring his ancestors back to die?

The nine blood flying knives were made by Netherworld Hierarch with the great Dao of blood pool; they were sharp, powerful, and cruel. The dirty blood pool power drilled into old Gong Gongs' bodies, causing a pain that was even worse than the cruelest torture in the world.

The old Gong Gongs felt that their bodies had started melting slowly, bit by bit, inch by inch, like candles by a burner. An earth-shaking hiss burst from a distance away. Dark Water Serpent, who was responsible for guarding the Kui Gate, looked at Yu Chi's house in rage. He roared hissingly, and without using any shapeshifting, his enormous body smashed down like a giant pillar.

His gigantic body tore apart space and brought up a dark gale as it fell straight down. Even as his body was still tens of miles away from the ground, more than a half of all buildings in the Kui Gate market were crushed by the dark gale.

Next door, Shermie shouted out loud and led tens of small crayfishes to dart out of the bone house in panic. Crayfishes and shrimps were good leapers. Shermie led the group of small crayfish to leap away desperately. With a few rises and falls, they bounded to a long distance away.

Ao Li and Feng Qinxin cursed out loud in both shock and anger. With tens of their guards, they dashed out of the bone house as well.

Ao Li raised his head in fury. He was planning to give vent to a torrent of abuse, but when he found out that the enormous body smashing down from the sky actually belonged to Dark Water Serpent, a strong, powerful being who dared to go against the dragon-kind back in the prehistorical era, Ao Li silently held Feng

Qinxin up and rushed straightaway, fleeing at his highest speed.

The roof was shattered by the dark gale. Without taking a glance at Dark Water Serpent, Ji Hao continued wielding Pan Gu Dragon Mark and neatly cut off the three Gong Gongs' heads.

Raising the 'Abba's head, he now raised his head and growled towards the sky, "Gong Gong! Do you see it? Which ancestor was he to you? I chopped their heads off! Come on! Kill me!"

Dazzling thunderbolts flashed in the sky, illuminating the enormous jets of water. Gong Gong's raging roars came from the ends of the sky. However, he didn't show up. He didn't risk his life to fight Ji Hao because of the death of his three ancestors.

Ji Hao laughed out loud. Gong Gong didn't show up, which was perfect!

Smashing down from the sky, Dark Water Serpent was merely about three-hundred-meters away from Ji Hao. The strong gale quaked the earth. The Kui Gate was strengthened by the power of countless earth meridians, and was almost unbreakable. But right now, it quaked intensely, while countless thin cracks appeared on the ground.

Ji Hao pointed out his finger. The Pan Gu bell transformed into a Chaos power stream and rose into the sky, expanding to three-hundred-meters-tall while glowing brightly and shielding him.

Dark Water Serpent landed heavily on the bell. The bell ring echoed, as Chaos power streams urged out of the bell. In shock and rage, Dark Water Serpent screamed in pain!

The Pan Gu bell rang and turned all natural powers into Chaos. As Chaos power streams swept across, Dark Water Serpent's scales split, his skin shattered, and flesh moldered. His skin, flesh, and blood were turned into strands of Chaos power, dissipating in the air. On a thousand meters long section of his body, all the skin, blood, and flesh was gone, exposing his black bones.

"What is this?! What is this?!" Dark Water Serpent shrieked without knowing what to do.

He came down to kill, but why on earth did he get himself injured so badly before he could kill anyone?

Ji Hao didn't say a word to him. When the bell rang, he gripped the hilt of Pan Gu Dragon Mark and pierced the sword fiercely into the core of the altar, while casting the supreme sword spell taught by Yu Yu. Silently, Ji Hao boosted his power and sent all his power into Pan Gu Dragon Mark.

Following a puffing noise, sharp sword power streams erupted from the sword. Through the connection between all nine altars, sword power streams burst from all the other eight altars in no time. Showering under the blood-red beams, waves of colorless sword power penetrated those old Gong Gong's bodies, tore apart their muscles, cut their bones, and devoured their life-force.

Shrill howls could be heard. Old Gong Gongs died one after another miserably and with grievance, without having the time to fight back.

Gong Gong flared up. He cursed Ji Hao loudly like a shrew. Nevertheless, he never showed up. From the beginning to the end, he never showed up to fight Ji Hao. Instead, he watched Ji Hao kill those old Gong Gongs one by one.

Poor old Gong Gongs! Each one of them was far stronger than Ji Hao, but...Before they had a chance to fight back, they were all killed so easily by him.

Dark Water Serpent burst into crazy roars. He twisted and coiled up, then transformed into a scrawny, dark-skinned old man with long white hair. He raised a snake-shaped staff and hit down on the Pan Gu bell.

All of a sudden, something flashed out of Ji Hao's shadow. That was Yemo Shayi. He didn't make even the slightest sound as he

approached Dark Water Serpent from the back and launched a sword hack.

Netherworld Hierarch roared with laughter. Surrounded by his eighteen blood flying swords, Netherworld Hierarch locked his fingers together and raised a thousands of meters long, blood-red sword light beam, which struck violently down on Dark Water Serpent.

Howling in despair, blood splashed out of Dark Water Serpent's body like a heavy rain.

Chapter 1330: Utterly Isolated Gong Gong

Dark Water Serpent hissed and wailed, while his poisonous blood splashed all over the sky.

The Pan Gu bell rang deeply and constantly, releasing strong streams of Chaos power, which enveloped Dark Water Serpent's entire body. He struggled with all his strength; he rushed and punched, but failed to free himself from the bell's power.

Ji Hao, Netherworld Hierarch, and Yemo Shayi launched their moves together. Pan Gu Dragon Mark, blood flying swords, and Yemo Shayi's sword of destruction, which was crafted with a secret, non-humankind technique, swished across the air simultaneously. Every single sword was a top-grade, lethal weapon. Dark Water Serpent's scales were strangely strong, but were broken by these fierce swords one after another.

Netherworld Hierarch grinningly looked at Dark Water Serpent, watched blood spurting out from his body. He shouted hurriedly, "Be careful, be careful, leave his body whole! Don't cut him into pieces! Otherwise, I would have to do a lot of extra work to fix his body if I want to make him into a zombie!"

Hearing this, Ji Hao laughed out loud. Pan Gu Dragon Mark shone with a cold light and pierced deeply into Dark Water Serpent's forehead, which was a vital body part. The sword tip sank into Dark Water Serpent's body and squeezed out a large stream of blood mixed with the brain.

"Lord Gong Gong...Kun Peng...Xiang Liu...Wuzhi Qi, what are you doing?! The great plan will be ruined if you don't do anything!" Dark Water Serpent shrieked towards the sky shrilly.

Netherworld Hierarch chuckled. He wielded his arms and sent large streams of Netherworld power to Dark Water Serpent. The Netherworld power drilled into Dark Water Serpent's body through his wounds. Dark Water Serpent felt that both his body

and soul were paralyzed and numb, then a weird change happened to his body.

Netherworld Hierarch was too impatient; he just couldn't wait. Before Dark Water Serpent even died, he had already started using his body as a raw material.

Dark Water Serpent freaked out. He struggled harder and harder, but Chaos power streams released from the Pan Gu bell tightly wrapped him. He even drained the last bit of his strength from his marrow, but still failed to break out.

High up in the sky, in the magnificent, sacred heaven, Gong Gong was looking at the images shown in a divine mirror above his head with a badly darkened face. On the nine altars, suffering from those interweaving blood-red beams, the twenty-seven powerful old Gong Gongs were defenseless. Yu Ancestor's special ability, that 'position-switching' magic he cast, actually triggered the death of these old Gong Gongs.

He growled in wrath. Through the special formation in heaven, his voice echoed through the entire world.

He roared and growled, but it was all useless. Gong Gong wanted to dive down to the Qui Gate to save his ancestors. As long as he arrived with his people and stopped Ji Hao to let his ancestors return safely, things would be back in control. Even though those old Gong Gongs were all wounded seriously, they were still powerful enough to awe the humankind, and the Gong Gong Family would still have the strength to conquer the world.

But Dishi Cha blocked his way. With a warm grin on his face, Dishi Cha was wearing an indescribably luxurious armor, each hand gripping a shiny, resplendently decorated sword, as he stood in front of Gong Gong.

His blood-red armor was fabulously beautiful, embossed with countless blood-red metal roses, each rose looking so lifelike. The petals seemed to be tender and soft, and from the flower cores,

blood-red light spots had been drifting out, as if a breeze was shaking the flowers and stirring up pollens.

Every petal of each metal rose had thousands of tiny cutting surfaces on it. Every cutting surface reflected a dazzling light, and within the light, countless spell symbols sparkled. Wearing the armor, Dishi Cha's entire body was covered by countless metal roses that glistened so brightly that Gong Gong couldn't bear to even look directly at him.

As for the pair of swords in Dishi Cha's hands, those were hollow carved, also with rose embossments. The swords were transparent, seeming ready to be blown away by a breeze. A flame-like bright blood-red light coiled on the pair of swords. When Dishi Cha wielded the pair of swords, two blood-red, frigid streams of light would linger in the air dazzlingly, without fading for a long while.

"Gong Gong, this is the end." Dishi Cha smilingly looked at Gong Gong and said, "Enough, it's already enough. You better stay here and don't move. If you do what I say, our agreement can still be effective...The souls of human beings will belong to you, while we have their bodies."

In confusion, Gong Gong looked at Dishi Cha and asked, "What are you doing? What do you want? Dishi Cha, we are allies. Are you gonna watch the ancestors of our Gong Gong Family be killed? Without them, our Gong Gong Family can never conquer the humankind!"

"We don't need you to conquer the humankind, because... we will be doing that." Dishi Cha answered the question with a bright smile, "As a chess piece, you have already accomplished all your missions perfectly. Now, you can stay here and watch."

"You are a chess piece of ours. For a long time to come, we still need you as a mask to paralyze human beings in this world, to wear out their courage of resistance. We will destroy their fighting will and their spirits, and they will fall into slavery, both their bodies

and their souls."

"During this process, we need a mask to paralyze them, all of them. You are our best choice. When you sit on the throne of a divine emperor, serving as our puppet, you will be treated the way you deserve."

"As a chess piece, that is all you can do now. Therefore...Don’t move, don’t do anything reckless. Otherwise, switching to a new puppet is not a difficult thing for us." Dishi Cha smiled brilliantly, but his words sounded cold and so mean.

Gong Gong’s heart sank. Looking at Dishi Cha’s smiling face, he said frowningly, "Are you sure that you are able to conquer the humankind without my help? Don’t you forget that many powerful ones are still hiding among human beings, much more than we already know. It has been so many years, but even I failed to reach to the bottom of their strength."

"Facing a crushing force, all so-called ‘strengths’ are valueless!" Wearing that destructive weapon, Yemo Tian floated in the air like a hundreds of meters tall giant. Behind him, all kinds of wings released strong, dreadful power vibrations.

Yemo Tian said overexcitedly, "Just do what we said, or you will die in a very miserable way!"

Scrupled, Gong Gong looked at Yemo Tian. Remaining silent for a while, he turned around and looked at the few senior ministers under his command. He believed that he was strong enough to defeat Yemo Tian in that destructive weapon, but he needed people to stall Dishi Cha for him.

But his heart sank even deeper as he turned around.

Wuzhi Qi carried his large club and stood still. His eyes dazzled dimly, fixed on the two standing in front of him.

Those were Kun Peng and Xiang Liu, each with a tiny lotus faintly sparkling between their eyebrows. With a fake smile, they

blocked Wuzhi Qi’s way.

"Wuzhi Qi, we are friends for so many years. So, don’t bring us troubles," said Kun Peng with a low voice.

Gong Gong gasped in shock.

His ally and ministers had all betrayed him.

Chapter 1331: Dark Water Serpent Slough

Back in the Kui Gate. Ji Hao, Netherworld Hierarch, and Yemo Shayi joined hands and beat Dark Water Serpent, making him scream in pain. But no one came to help him.

Outside the Kui Gate, the allied human force saw the sudden change of the natural environment and realized that things weren't right. They stopped hiding their powers. Instead, they boosted up all their strength and launched a full onslaught on the Kui Gate.

Once these human warriors exerted their powers, the dark water serpents who were guarding the Kui Gate suffered.

Seriously speaking, the Dark Water Serpent Family was as powerful as You Chong Family, Qiong Sang Family, Suiren Family, and the other large ancient human families and clans, at most. Dark Water Serpent was trapped by Ji Hao, so how could his descendants possibly stop these warriors from tens of families and clans, who had combined their powers and been attacking so fiercely?

Dark water serpents were killed one after another. Their giant bodies fell from the sky, and their blood dyed the flood red.

Countless water-kind spirit creatures, who were sent to the frontline by Dark Water Serpent, had died. Corpses floated on the water surfaces; body parts soaked in blood, drifting in the water. The world was blood-red wherever the sight went, looking just like the blood pool in hell.

The fact that nearly crushed the Dark Water Serpent Family members guarding in the Kui Gate was the outbreak of what Ji Hao had prepared.

Led by Shermie and supported by Heng Xing, hundreds of heavily armored shrimp warriors, crab warriors, and some low-grade

water-kind spirit creatures rushed onto the street. They carried amazingly sharp spears, swords, strong bows and all kinds of powerful weapons produced by the non-humankind.

Water-kind spirit creatures who chose to stay loyal to the Dark Water Serpent Family didn't see this coming. They were completely unprepared, and the Kui Gate area was thrown into chaos. In every corner, one could see a shrimp warrior on the rampage, roaring, hacking its weapon, and killing the others. Shrimp warriors pulled their longbows and shot out sharp arrows, which darted through the air like a rain, putting down the other water-kind spirit creatures who only had thin armors. The strong buzzing noise caused by their bows could be heard from everywhere.

Shrimp warriors were weak indeed, and not smart. However, they followed every order, and they were good at group fights. They could even be counted as the most disciplined ones among low-grade water-kind creatures.

When shrimp warriors wore armors crafted by Xiu Clan masters, held well-designed weapons forged by the non-humankind, and were surrounded by powerful battle puppets and flying forts, which provided a strangely strong defensive power, they marched onto the street with all these gears, killing everyone who was not on their side...

All of a sudden, these weak shrimp warriors became so ferocious. They lunged their long shiny spears and released waves of arrows. Divine towers provided them with strong defensive magic screens and launched destructive attacks.

As two especially strong warriors, Shermie and Heng Xing were leading the army. They combined their powers, and added with the armors and weapons that Ji Hao specially designed for them, no ordinary 'spirit creature king' could survive even one strike launched by them joint-handedly.

The Kui Gate was disarrayed completely. Countless shrimp warriors yelled, dashed, and killed, leaving corpses behind. Blood flowed in rivers.

Many ‘spirit creature kings’ had large numbers of shrimp warriors under their commands. Normally, those shrimp warriors would follow all orders of their ‘kings’. But today, as Shermie burst into a resonant growl and his ‘pure crayfish power’ was released, all shrimp warriors changed sides. Their weapons were swung violently down towards their old leaders.

The number of shrimp warriors was at least a hundred times larger than the total number of the other water-kind spirit creatures. When Shermie gradually united all shrimp warriors in the Kui Gate and rose in rebellion, the breakdown of the Kui Gate force was reasonable.

Dark Water Serpent was trapped by the Pan Gu bell. No matter how crazily he tried to struggle, he failed to protect himself from the attacks of Ji Hao, Netherworld Hierarch, and Yemo Shayi.

He was covered in wounds and blood, while the Netherworld power was drilling into his body and internal organs, corroding his blood, flesh, and soul. Dark Water Serpent even saw illusions. He saw eighteen strange men standing before his face, and behind them were eighteen overlapped circles, releasing an overwhelming, irresistible power, that belonged especially to the Dao of nature.

The eighteen men, and the power released from the eighteen circles, had been forcing Dark Water Serpent to kneel, surrender, and give up resistance. Once he gave up, he would be turned into a zombie.

He would become the strongest zombie of Netherworld Hierarch. After all, among all ‘raw materials’ Netherworld Hierarch had found before, none could be mentioned in the same breath with Dark Water Serpent.

"Dark Water Serpent...Do you have a branch clan in Southern Wasteland?" Seeing that Dark Water Serpent had lost a big half of his power, Ji Hao brought up the old debt, "When I was little, Dark Water Serpent Clan in Southern Wasteland was a deadly enemy of our Gold Crow Clan."

"Marquis Yao Ji Hao, are you trying to destroy my Dark Water Serpent Family?!" As Ji Hao finished, Dark Water Serpent roared out in fury. "I fell into your trap today...But you can't kill me so easily."

Breathing deeply, Dark Water Serpent shifted to his human shape again — The scrawny, dark-skinned old man, with long white hair.

Covered in wounds, he hissed with laughter as he looked at Ji Hao and Netherworld Hierarch and growled, "Do you really think that I don't have the power to fight back? Anyhow, I am one of the first generation of living creature in this world. The dragon ancestor and phoenix ancestor were my peers! Young kids, how dare you underestimate me?"

Gasping for air, Dark Water Serpent reached out a hand. Clang! He slapped on Yemo Shayi's sword, which was coming at his heart from the back. Silently, Yemo Shayi drew back. Three fingers of Dark Water Serpent were cut off by Yemo Shayi.

"This final move, I saved it for my next natural trial." Dark Water Serpent looked at Ji Hao and Netherworld Hierarch, then said with a deep voice, "But today...Never mind. If I can't survive today, how would I ever have a chance to pass the natural trail and attain the Dao?"

Before Ji Hao said a word, Netherworld Hierarch already started teasing, "Pass the natural trail and attain the Dao? You're nothing but a black snake. Except for your thick skin and strong muscles, you have no other abilities. How dare you even talk about attaining the Dao?"

Dark Water Serpent threw a sideway glance at Netherworld Hierarch and shouted, "Kid, how dare you despise me? I do have thick skin and strong muscles, so what? I can still have a chance to attain the Dao and stand high above the masses. You're only a bunch of kids; three against one, with those treasures in your hands... You're at an advantage, but what do you know about 'Dao'?"

Dark Water Serpent sounded full of anger and scorn. Ji Hao didn't care, because he was really a kid.

Unlike him, Netherworld Hierarch was enraged, such that a cloud of blood-red mist rolled up behind his body. Kid? How dare Dark Water Serpent call him a kid? He had to teach this black snake a good lesson today. Otherwise, this snake might think that it could even rule the world!

Before Netherworld Hierarch reprimanded, Dark Water Serpent moved and widely opened his mouth. Shreds of dark shadows flashed out of his mouth and swished up into the sky along with strong waves of power, quietly floating above Dark Water Serpent's head.

Each shred of dark shadow was a tens of thousands of miles long, black slough. Within a couple of breaths, at least ten-thousand black sloughs floated above Dark Water Serpent's head.

Dark Water Serpent bit his tongue tip broken and sprayed a mouthful of blood onto these sloughs.

With a series of hissing noise, all sloughs began swelling, and within a few more breaths, over ten-thousand enormous dark water serpents flew all over the sky, spreading their overwhelming power in all directions like a tsunami.

Along with a buzzing noise, even the Chaos power streams wrapped around Dark Water Serpent's body were slightly tightened.

Chapter 1332: Whose Credit?

Dark Water Serpent roared hysterically and told the story of these slough clones of his.

Snakes sloughed, and Dark Water Serpent was not an exception. As the first dark water serpent in the world, an ancient creature that lived since the prehistorical era, Dark Water Serpent's sloughs could be counted as top-grade natural treasures. Every slough was especially strong, something which no ordinary holy weapon could leave even a slight mark on.

Dark Water Serpent had a goal of Dao. Naturally, he wasn't willing to live merely as a spirit creature which relied on its own natural abilities all its life. He wanted to cultivate, to attain the Dao. He wanted to conquer a part of the great Dap, to stand high and look down on all ordinary creatures.

He didn't know much about the great Dao, but he did understand that once a prehistorical spirit creature like him started the long journey of 'Dao', he would be facing all kinds of natural trials and disasters. Therefore, he saved his sloughs and turned them into his clones.

It had been so many years, and Dark Water Serpent had accumulated over ten-thousand sloughs, which had been turned into his clones.

All clones were tightly connected with him. Once those clones were activated, they could share their powers with Dark Water Serpent. Each clone was only less than ten percent as powerful as Dark Water Serpent himself, but together, these clones were terrifying.

Ji Hao killed a clone of Dark Water Serpent which was generated from thirty percent of his cultivation and power. By doing so, Ji Hao largely weakened Dark Water Serpent. However, the moment these slough clones were activated, Dark Water Serpent regained

his lost strength and cultivation. The pure and strong power even broke out from his body and condensed into countless dark long tentacles, wagging around him.

Dark Water Serpent's scrawny body swelled rapidly. Along with a series of bone creaking noise, he grew taller and taller, and soon became a nine-meter-tall, sturdy man, from a skinny and elderly one.

Slightly twisting his muscular arms, Dark Water Serpent roared deeply, "Marquis Yao Ji Hao, and you, nameless kid, come on, fight!"

Netherworld Hierarch looked at those slough clones with a great interest. He chuckled and said, "Great, great, I'm gonna be rich today. Ji Hao my friend, you do your work, while I will take this old snake!"

While laughing, he continued in excitement, "If I knew this old snake had so many slough clones...I would have killed it long ago. How could I let him live till present?"

Dark Water Serpent's look changed. Judging by what Netherworld Hierarch said, he hadn't been taking Dark Water Serpent seriously at all.

"You..." Raising his arms and pulling out a pair of long spears which were made from his own fangs, Dark Water Serpent pointed at Netherworld Hierarch and roared.

Ji Hao smirked, then turned around and walked away. He brought the Pan Gu bell away as well. Netherworld Hierarch wanted to finish Dark Water Serpent himself, and he didn't need to borrow a treasure from a kid to trap his target.

From a long distance away, Ji Hao heard Dark Water Serpent howl in both shock and fury. Afterward, streams of Netherworld power merged back together, then nothing could be heard anymore from the darkness.

Drawing back from the battle, Ji Hao stood on a cloud, looking down at the Kui Gate.

The Kui Gate area was thrown into a mess. The allied human force was attacking from the outside while Shermie and his army was stirring from the inside. All over the streets, shrimp warriors had been yelling and shouting while on a rampage. Because of them, the water-kind force in the Kui Gate could no longer gather together to strike the allied human force back.

Ji Hao opened his erect eye and covered the Kui Gate area up with his strong spirit power. Holding Pan Gu Dragon Mark, Ji Hao watched the battlefield with concentration. All strong spirit creatures who caused severe damages to shrimp warriors would be slaughtered immediately by Ji Hao with a sword move.

The Taiji universe mirror floated in the air, emitting dazzling beams of light of extreme negative nature. Every spirit creature struck by the light was set ablaze with a silver-white fire. Howling and crying, these spirit creatures slowly melted into strands of gray-colored mist.

With a crushing power, Ji Hao kept the situation well under his control. Shermie and Heng Xing had been rushing ahead and slaughtering. Shrimp warriors in the Kui Gate were getting more and more unstoppable. They routed the water-kind forces in the Kui Gate, and made larger water-kind spirit creatures flee desperately.

In the front, rumbling drums and resonant horns suddenly echoed to the clouds. Tens of thousands of dark water serpents darted into the Kui Gate through the water channel. Some of them were in their human shapes, while the others were in their original shapes.

Dark water serpents were freaked out. They wailed, shrieked, while the allied human force chased closely behind. Countless heavily armored human warriors wielded shiny weapons and

hacked on these fleeing dark water serpents. Body parts fell into the water, mixing with the blood that dyed the entire water channel red.

"Kill every last water-kind creature! The credit belongs to us! Qiong Sang Family!"

"Nonsense! The credit belongs to us! We, Wu Chang Family people have made the greatest contributions! The credit belongs to us!"

"Didn't you see our Cloud Sun Family warriors? Without our elite warriors, could you even break into the Kui Gate?"

"How dare you? The credit belongs to our Chu Wu people! How dare you claim our credit? I'm not afraid to tell you that our Elder Wu Gu is already in the Kui Gate! The credit belongs to our Chu Wu Clan!"

The war wasn't over yet. Tens of thousands of dark water serpents were still alive. The water-kind armies in the Kui Gate were disarrayed by Shermie and his warriors indeed, but the large number of non-humankind spirit creatures remained. At this point of time, if a powerful, influential spirit creature showed up and let the rest hear his or her voice, the water-kind forces in the Kui Gate could still be united to strike back.

However, these human clans had already started striving for the credit.

Standing on the cloud, Ji Hao showed his true face. Sneering at those human beings who rushed over in disordered lines, he said, "People, you're late. I, Marquis Yao, broke this Kui Gate under the order of Minister Si Wen Ming! As for the credit, does that have anything to do with you?"

Ji Hao's laughter resounded through the clouds. Down below, countless human beings raised their heads and saw Ji Hao immediately.

The leaders of those families immediately burst into rage, and even screamed out loud. They had driven Si Wen Ming and Ji Hao away, but why was Ji Hao here? Was this a joke? Ji Hao was here, then where was Si Wen Ming?

If Si Wen Ming gained the credit, why would they even bother to bring their people all the way to the Kui Gate?

Ji Hao laughed out loud, then took out the mountain-driving whip and swung towards the Kui Gate.

All kinds of formations buried in the mountains were activated. The Kui Gate extended for millions of miles, Nourished by the pure earth meridian power, it was almost unbreakable. But at this very moment, it collapsed, and a thousand-mile-wide water channel was created.

The flood surged to the next gate through the suddenly opened water channel.

Chapter 1333: Because of Jealousy

The Kui Gate was broken.

The allied human force tried for so many days, and even suffered losses, but still failed to make actual progress. Nevertheless, the tough Kui Gate was broken so easily by Ji Hao.

No matter how many different thoughts those large family people had, shouting and yelling instead of truly contributing when the allied human force attacked the Kui Gate, or how often had they been intriguing against each other and trying to hinder each other, the mission that an allied force formed from the elites of tens of top-grade human clans and families failed to achieve in a long span of time, was achieved by Ji Hao all alone!

Under the effect of the ‘All Streams to the Final Land’ great formation, all water power in Pan Gu world gathered in the nine water gates. Drawn by the strong tractive force caused by the moving water power, the earth meridian power gathered in the mountains of the nine water gates.

The mountains of the nine water gates were extra strong and sturdy. The Kui Gate collapsed, and opened a thousand-miles-wide, hundreds of millions of miles long water channel. Through the immense channel, the water power surged in. Everyone heard the thunderous swooshing noise caused by the friction between the water power and the air, and saw the white air blasts left in the sky by the torrents of water power.

Countless white-dragon-like water power torrents roared across the Kui Gate, end to end.

Tens of thousands of warriors in the allied human force was looking at Ji Hao, stunned. Consequently, they didn’t manage to dodge the suddenly erupted flood of water power. They were swirled into the waves of dragon-like, white air blasts. They howled and screamed, then were dragged into the water channel.

Along with the flood, the storm and the hurricane, they were instantly flushed far, far away, which was beyond their control.

All water power in Pan Gu world had been flowing towards the next eight water gates through the Kui Gate. One could easily imagine how overwhelming the pressure that the Kui Gate had been suffering was. White air blasts tore the mountains on both sides of the water channel and generated dazzling fire sparkles. Every now and then, giant rocks were dragged down from the mountains and shattered by the flooding water power.

The allied human force desperately fled in all direction. They dashed away from the water channel and dared not to stand before the surging water power torrents.

Only a few elders were left on the scene. Relying on their great powers, they floated in midair, making no other moves. They bristled with anger, staring at Ji Hao. Waves of air blast struck violently on their bodies and fell apart, causing thunderous booms, even quaking the sky.

Ji Hao floated in midair, with his broad sleeves fluttering in the wind. He looked down at these elders like a divine god standing high above the masses.

He did it, eventually.

In the future, when people would talk about the credit, they would say that in the final stage of the flood-control mission, the nine water gates were broken, and the first gate, Kui Gate, was broken by Marquis Yao Ji Hao. The world knew that he was a follower of Si Wen Ming. So, the credit would go to Si Wen Ming without a doubt!

For any event, only the first time could be shocking and impressive. From mouth to mouth, human beings would only repeat that when the nine water gates blocked the flood, the first gate was broken by Marquis Yao Ji Hao under Si Wen Ming’s order!

As for who broke the second and the third gates...

Perhaps, people wouldn't even remember the names of the second, the third, and the other water gates!

At this time, the cultures of many human clans were primitive. Their elders told their memories and the history of the clans to the younger generations, then the younger ones told the same stories to their kids; that was how their culture passed on. One could not expect them to memorize too many things, and they wouldn't be willing to either. They would rather go hunt a boar in the forest then spending time to memorize the names of those people who broke the nine water gates.

The Kui Gate, the first of the nine water gates, the last major credit earned in the flood-control mission, and also the most essential one, was earned by Marquis Yao Ji Hao, a follower of Si Wen Ming. People would remember this fact, and this would be the only fact they would remember!

"Rude boy!" A You Chao Family elder yelled in anger.

"How dare he? How dare Si Wen Ming!" A Qiong Sang Family elder shouted, sounding utterly discomfited. They represented almost all the most powerful few human clans among the entire humankind, but how dare Si Wen Ming and Ji Hao take the credit that 'belonged to them'?

"We haven't owed the credit to anyone yet, he, he...This kid is so rude!" A few Cloud Sun Family elders even had their faces darkened in anger. They were trembling, because they couldn't restrain the anger in their hearts anymore, and even wanted to attack Ji Hao.

"This kid is so rude. He has to be punished. When is these rude, ignorant kids' turn to step in the essential matters of our humankind?" A Chu Wu Clan elder said proudly, "Ji Hao, this boy is dead. When Elder Wu Gu returns, he will be dead!"

The group of elders nodded and agreed with him.

Ji Hao was actually daring enough to take ‘their credit’. This kid acted in such a ridiculous way, and showed no respect for the elders and superiors. He had to be punished severely. But of course, if Ji Hao were smart enough to willingly kneel under their feet, then cry and beg to give the credit back to them, they wouldn’t mind to show some mercy and spare his insignificant life.

At the moment, here was the problem — If Ji Hao knelt on the ground, crying and wailing and begging to give the credit away, who should have it? Or in other words, which one among these elders should Ji Hao beg to?

No one cared what Ji Hao had been thinking. These elders widely opened their eyes and arrogantly looked at each other. Their gazes were as sharp as swords and blades, hacking straight on each other’s faces. They were all trying to frighten each other with the fierceness in their eyes, to make each other withdraw from the competition.

Even at this point in time, these elders believed that Ji Hao couldn’t possibly refuse their request!

Having the credit for breaking the Kui Gate all to himself? Did Ji Hao have the guts to actually do that? His credit being taken away should be a pleasure to him. If this credit were only an ordinary one, these elders wouldn’t be willing to have it!

Ji Hao stood in midair and heard every word those elders said.

Such shameless words, so arrogant. Ji Hao couldn’t help but grin. Back then, human emperors and ancient, powerful human beings had made great contributions to the rise of the humankind. But what about their descendants? What were these people? Indeed, a few good-for-nothing people would always exist in a human clan, but there were too many of them!

Was there a higher possibility for descendants of human

emperors and ancient, powerful human beings to be disappointing?

A Qiong Sang Family troop suddenly marched to the Kui Gate, growing thunderously while rushing towards the group of water-kind beings who were in a great mess.

"Make contributions! Today, for the humankind, slaughter water-kind creatures! Kill! Kill! Kill!" yelled a Qiong Sang Family man, who was a peak-level Divine Magus.

Tens of thousands of Qiong Sang Family archers raised their bows one after another, and started a long-lasting, shrill swishing noise. Arrows flew out like a storm, and shot groups of water-kind creatures into sifters, puncturing tens of thousands of shrimp warriors.

Chapter 1334: He Who Has A Mind to Beat His Dog Will Easily Find A Stick

Shrimp warriors were too silly.

Countless shrimp warriors were excited, thrillingly chasing after those dispersed water-kind creatures. But when arrows were shot, puncturing their bodies, their undeveloped nerve networks didn't manage to react timely.

Some shrimp warriors had their vital body parts penetrated. They fell on the ground, without being able to move anymore. But, they were still shaking their heads and roaring 'kill'. They saw nothing but those fleeing water-kind creatures; they didn't even notice that strange things were stuck inside their bodies.

Among all shrimp warriors and water-kind creatures who fell to the ground, only a little crayfish under Shermie's lead was much smarter than the others. Three arrows almost penetrated his chest, and this little crayfish immediately dropped his weapon, gripped the arrowheads that came out of his chest, and shrieked shrilly.

These little crayfishes were Shermie's life. Shermie worked truly hard to become a spirit creature. After that, going from an ant-like, tiny, insignificant spirit crayfish to a strong being, Shermie suffered even more. He nourished these little crayfishes with his own spirit creature power, taught them everything, and protected them as much as he could. These little crayfishes were not only his descendants, they were the future of his bloodline and spirit, and they were everything he had.

For crayfishes, cultivation was never easy. He tried with no spare efforts for so many years, but till present, less than one hundred little crayfishes around Shermie managed to 'grow up' and attain 'human shapes'. Shermie was chasing after an electric eel. Abruptly hearing the shriek of a little crayfish, Shermie hurriedly turned around. Seeing the little crayfish's chest punctured by three

arrows, his eyes instantly turned red.

"You!" Shermie leaped into the sky and pointed at those Qiong Sang Family warriors, then roared hoarsely.

The three arrows exploded simultaneously. Fire, hurricane, and thunderbolts erupted together from the arrowheads, covering the area with a radius of three-hundred-meters. The little crayfish was torn apart, and so were the hundreds of shrimp warriors and water-kind creatures around him.

On Shermie's chin, his pair of feelers wagged quickly in sadness. He flashed across the air along with a shrill swishing noise, leaving hazy shreds of afterimages in the sky. He instantly dashed to that Qiong Sang young man, who gave the order to kill.

"We're not..." Shermie still tried to explain.

The young man chuckled and gripped the longbow with both hands. The bowstring was as sharp as a blade. A frosty beam of light was left in the air when the young man swung the longbow towards Shermie's neck.

"What are you? You're water-kind creatures! You are the enemies of the humankind! You should die!" shouted the young man

Shermie moved swiftly and dodged this lethal attack. "We are under Marquis Yao Ji Hao's command! Under his order, we attacked water-kind warriors and broke the Kui Gate!"

Not only the young men, even the group of elders behind him showed the intent of killing in their eyes. Under Ji Hao's command? Did Ji Hao recruit a giant number of shrimp warriors, equip them with high-quality armors and weapons, and order them to break the Kui Gate from the inside?

They looked at those shrimp warriors darting everywhere, at their shiny armors and weapons, which were much better than those owned by some human warriors. According to these elders' estimation, at least a million shrimp warriors were fighting in this

area!

Ji Hao did not only break the Kui Gate, he had also incorporated so many shrimp warriors!

Shrimp warriors were weak indeed, but when their number was large enough to reach a certain degree, they could serve as a terrifying force! Besides, Shermie was apparently a strong one, as powerful as a Divine Magus!

Who knew how many like Shermie would emerge among millions of shrimp warriors under Ji Hao's command?

Ji Hao improved his own power even further. Those were millions of daring shrimp warriors with high-quality gears!

These elders clearly understood that Ji Hao's Yao Mountain territory was broad and rich. The only weakness was that his territory was sparsely populated, and had a weak military strength. Therefore, Yao Mountain territory couldn't be compared with those strong human clans and families yet.

Nevertheless, millions of brainless, well-equipped, and daring shrimp warriors, perfect to order followers, had joined the Yao Mountain territory. The enhancement they delivered to Yao Mountain territory was not weak; instead, they made up for the biggest weakness of Yao Mountain territory. With them, Ji Hao's power could soar even more!

Not to mention that Ji Hao was capable enough to incorporate millions of shrimp warriors...Couldn't he forcibly incorporate some strong water-kind creatures? Which strong human clan or family didn't have a few non-human forces as muscles? With these shrimp warriors, Ji Hao could easily incorporate hundreds and thousands of 'spirit creature kings', Divine-Magus-level strong beings from the rest eight water gates, and turn them into strong fighters of Yao Mountain territory.

"Ridiculous! Marquis Yao Ji Hao is an important member of our

humankind. How could he even know lowly things like you?" The young man’s ears slightly twitched as he learned the words from his elder.

While smirking, the Qiong Sang young men pointed at Shermie and yelled, "This thing is full of nonsense. Kill it!"

From all directions, a great number of Qiong Sang warriors pulled open their longbows and locked on Shermie. In the meanwhile, warriors from the other families and clans approached too.

Shermie was strong. Just now, he covered hundreds of miles with one single step and instantly darted to the Qiong Sang young man, as fast as a bolt of lightning. Some elders didn’t even see his movements clearly.

How could such a strong spirit creature be willingly under Ji Hao’s command?

"Kill this thing!" A Qiong Sang elder shouted shrilly. As he flicked his finger, an arrow swished out, starting a hundreds of meters long dazzling beam of light towards Shermie’s chest.

Shermie gave a resonant roar while raising his pair of fist. In front of him, shreds of afterimages left by his fists merged into a strong shield.

The arrow released by the elder bumped into the shield and caused three thunderous booms in a row. The arrow was shattered, while Shermie sightly trembled, being forced to take one step backward because of the great force brought by the arrow.

All elders were shocked. The arrow released by that Qiong Sang elder was powerful enough to kill a peak-level Divine Magus. However, facing such a lethal attack, Shermie, this unknown water-kind spirit creature, only took one step backward.

They couldn’t let Ji Hao have such a powerful water-kind spirit creature.

Tens of thousands of Qiong Sang warriors pulled open their bows. Warriors from the other clans and families moved as well, especially those Maguspriests from Chu Wu Clan. All of a sudden, all cruel kinds of magic curses were cast towards Shermie like a storm.

Ji Hao was enraged. He dashed out, shattered the space, and directly showed up before Shermie.

The Pan Gu bell floated above his head, releasing Chaos power streams as it shielded Ji Hao and Shermie and crushed all attacked coming at them.

"Shermie is my disciple. He has made a major contribution to the battle of the Kui Gate. How dare you..." Looking at those human warriors approaching from all directions, Ji Hao growled in rage.

But before he finished, a Cloud Sun Family elder had already laughed out loud in excitement, "People, listen to him carefully. Marquis Yao Ji Hao has admitted himself...He is colluding with the water-kind! He has evil plans! As a marquis of the humankind, he took a water-kind creature as a disciple! Is he betraying the humankind?"

Chapter 1335: The Sin of These Families

Ji Hao gritted his teeth and laughed with a high-pitched voice. He sounded like crying ghosts at night, completely lifeless.

Powerful, influential families, which stood on top of the alliance of human clans, were represented by these people. People from these families of power and influence were greedy and shameless; for their own interests, they would even turn the black into white.

A human-head-sized, vividly green thunder bomb silently popped out beside Ji Hao. Ji Hao didn't manage to see where this thunder bomb came from. The thunder bomb attached to the Chaos streams released from the bell and generated a faintly audible popping noise. The Pan Gu bell gave a muffled scream, while waves of ripple were stirred up from the Chaos power streams.

Ji Hao was forced back for tens of steps by the invisible, soft, yet strong force that erupted from the thunder bomb!

Streams of light sparkled across the surface of the bell, then the stirred Chaos power streams were quickly stabilized. Ji Hao glanced at the Pan Gu bell in shock. Ever since he attained this treasure, he fought many powerful beings, but this was the first time that the bell encountered such a heavy strike!

The thunder bomb just now was even more powerful than the attacks Ji Hao took from Priest Hua!

For sure, Priest Hua wouldn't fight Ji Hao with all of his power. Perhaps, he only used ten percent, or twenty percent of his power while facing Ji Hao, maybe thirty percent tops. The thunder bomb was many times more stronger than Priest Hua's attack, which meant, whoever made it was actually as powerful as Priest Hua, right?

Ji Hao raised his head in surprise. He saw a scrawny elder from Chu Wu Clan, who was laughing with a deep, creepy voice, while

waving a three-foot-long, grayish-white small flag in his hand.

"Marquis Yao Ji Hao, you colluded with the water-kind and hurt the humankind. Today, we, Chu Wu people, will not allow you to live any longer." The elder laughed, "I am Wu Thunder... Hehe, hearing my name, you should know my specialty! However, the thunder bomb that kills you is not produced by me!"

He wielded the small flag while talking. Streams of Chaos power slowly gathered on the small flag from all directions. Along with a muffled, sky-shaking noise, a vividly green thunder bomb emerged from the top of the flag.

Wu Thunder looked at the thunder bomb, seeming to be reluctant to use it. With a deep voice, he said, "To die in my hands, you should feel honored...Because this thunder bomb...Saint Pan Gu created the world with it!"

Ji Hao's mouth corner twitched. Swiftly, the other elders glimpsed at Wu Thunder, all with complicated looks. Some elders even showed a fierce intent of killing in their eyes.

In Ji Hao's spiritual space, the mysterious man showed up with his eyes shining with a bright blue light. Through Ji Hao's eyes, he glanced at the small flag in Wu Thunder's hand, and carefully observed that vividly green thunder bomb, then chuckled coldly.

"Did he say that Saint Pan Gu created the world with that piece of sh*t?" murmured the mysterious man teasingly, "What kind of world can be created with that? But, that small flag is made from a finger bone of Pan Gu... Not easy, truly not easy."

"Ji Hao," The mysterious man suddenly raised his voice and continued resonantly, "Let Pan Gu bell absorb his small flag. More or less, it's nourishing to the bell...Be careful, you can't release one hundred percent of the bell's power yet, but that small flag is already connected with that Wu Thunder's life. He can fully release the flag's power!"

Wu Thunder smirked and pointed the small flag out. The vividly green thunder bomb disappeared on the flag, silently moving towards Ji Hao while being attached to a Chaos power stream, and then exploded.

Ji Hao was again forced back for tens of steps. As Chaos power streams released from the bell quaked, and even Ji Hao's spirit blood was stirred. He narrowed his eyes, then vigilantly stared at Wu Thunder as he said with a deep voice, "This should be the greatest treasure of Chu Wu Clan, right?"

The mysterious man sat in Ji Hao's spiritual space with his legs crossed, and responded seriously, "Priest Hua, Priest Mu, Dachi, Qing Wei, they dare not to preach unbridledly among human beings, and there's a reason for that. This small flag can be counted as one of the best treasures possessed by the humankind...But definitely not the only one."

Ji Hao was enlightened. He took a deep breath and burst with a shrill growl, "Shayi, kill!"

Wu Thunder held the small flag, waving his arms while he pointed at Ji Hao and laughed, "Kill me? How can you..."

Puff! A purely dark sword penetrated Wu Thunder's heart from the back. The sword wasn't translucent, decorated with exquisite embossment, yet had been releasing a suffocating power of destruction. A large hand gripped Wu Thunder's neck, slightly clenched its fingers and pulled off his head.

Silently, Yemo Shayi showed up behind Wu Thunder. A sticky, black flame spurted out from his palm, which wrapped up Wu Thunder's head. Followed by a shrill scream, Wu Thunder's head was incinerated. Coiling in thunderbolts, his soul struggled desperately in the dark flame, but soon was swallowed up by the fire of destruction.

Smirking evilly, Yemo Shayi said, "How can he kill you? I killed you!"

Yemo Shayi was a true Supreme-level powerful being, one of the strongest few in the Yemo Family of Yu Dynasty. Wu Thunder was indeed powerful, but he was only an elder of Chu Wu Clan, and was still far away from the level of Supreme Magus.

Besides, as a Supreme-level powerful being, Yemo Shayi assassinated Wu Thunder. Without being times more powerful than Yemo Shayi, how could Wu Thunder ever survive that?

The fire of destruction turned Wu Thunder's soul into pure original soul power. Yemo Shayi released his devouring dark sun power and slowly absorbed Wu Thunder's original soul power. His soul power was instantly improved, which made him feel extremely comfortable. Laughing out loud, he raised his long sword and shouted, "Who else wants to die? I can...Damn it!"

While Yemo Shayi shouted provocatively, in the surroundings, elders from tens of families and clans attacked simultaneously.

Tens of magic treasures were triggered together, each releasing a strong power vibration. Thunder, fire, lava, toxic gas... All kinds of attacks mixed together; even as a Supreme-level powerful being, Yemo Shayi was startled, hurriedly drawing back.

By joining hands, these elders were strong enough to cause lethal harm to Yemo Shayi.

Yemo Shayi dared not to be careless. Silently, he transformed into a dark shred of shadow and merged with the shadows of all surrounding people.

"Chu Wu Clan has a good relationship with High Sun Family, and we High Sun people should keep this treasure!" A High Sun Family elder dashed towards the small flag which floated in the midair.

"Nonsense! We Cloud Sun Family people and Chu Wu people are true relatives! This treasure should be ours...No, I mean, for temporary safekeeping!" A Cloud Sun Family elder immediately raised a long sword that was wrapped in bolts of lightning, and

conveniently launched a hack towards that High Sun elder.

"Stop! The ancestor of our Qiong Sang Family once served as the great elder of Chi Wu Clan. This treasure should belong to us!" Tens of arrows fiercely swished over, surrounding the small flag.

Ji Hao curved his lips corners upwards. Powerful and influential families, which possessed the top-grade strength of the entire humankind, indeed!

Chapter 1336: Gong Gong Escapes

"Haha, haha, haha!"

Ji Hao shielded Shermie behind him, his arms crossed over his chest as he laughed out loud towards those elders who had been shouting and yelling.

Undeniably, this small thunder bomb flag was a great treasure, but it was only one treasure. These people from powerful human families and clans, who believed that they were extraordinary, were acting like a bunch of street dogs at the moment, who gave up their basic dignity for one piece of bone!

"If I were an ancestor of yours, I would certainly slap you to death!" Looking at those greedy elders who were fighting over the small flag, Ji Hao laughed.

Many of them threw angry glances at Ji Hao. However, millions of elite warriors from those families also had the most of their attention on the small flag. Ji Hao's words were ugly, despite which, no one had the time to attack Ji Hao.

Chu Wu Clan, Cloud Sun Family, High Sun Family, Qiong Sang Family, You Chao Family, Ghost Chariot Family...

All kinds of attacks were launched. Thunderbolts dazzled across the sky, smoke puffed up, while shrill ghost cries could be heard from all directions. All weird kinds of insects darted everywhere while spurting venoms; arrows, flying knives, misty skulls, long streamers, flags, large staffs, all kinds of treasures swished along with countless heavily armored, sturdy warriors.

Surrounding the small thunder bomb flag, people from those large human families and clans almost went insane.

Chu Wu Clan elders seemed to be even crazier than the others. Wu Thunder was assassinated by Yemo Shayi with a single sword move, but his death brought the other elders no feeling. Chu Wu

people had always been wacky; most of them lacked the feelings that normal people had.

However, the small thunder bomb flag was the obsession in many Chu Wu elders' hearts. In their eyes, human lives were not worth mentioning. Therefore, they neglected Wu Thunder's death. Nevertheless, the small flag represented the highest thunder power. Anything related to 'power' could imprint deeply in their souls.

They dared to fight anyone in the world who attempted to lay a finger on their power!

It was like countless centuries ago, when for the 'power' they were pursuing, the ancestors of Chu Wu people even tried to assassinate Shennong!

"Wu!" Around thirty Chu Wu Clan elders held weirdly shaped staffs, raised their arms high, and screamed hoarsely. Behind them, tens of thousands of Chu Wu Maguspriests started an offering dance. Strong power streams transformed into different colored, glowing torrents, surging into these elders' bodies.

Over thirty Chu Wu elders cast a spell in chorus. Above their heads, a weirdly colored sphere of light had been quickly swelling and shrinking, followed by a muffled thudding noise. This sphere of light looked like the heart of a strange creature, seeming to be quite weird and scary.

All of a sudden, this light sphere expanded to tens of thousands of meters long, then exploded. Countless light spots darted in all directions. Hiding in each light spot was a grasshopper-like, tiny poisonous Gu bug, covered in poisonous hair. Large amounts of venom had been spurting out from every single hair on these Gu bugs' bodies. Those Gu bugs transformed into thin streams of light, striking towards everyone on the scene like a storm of shooting stars.

An indiscriminate attack...

No one thought that Chu Wu people could actually be so frenzied until they launched the attack on all surrounding elite warriors from those powerful families and clans.

Some elders protected themselves and a small number of their people in the surroundings with powerful magic treasures, while the other over a million elite human warriors shrieked in pain. Gu bugs drilled into their bodies, more or less; the poorest ones even had tens of bugs landed on their bodies.

Following a sizzling noise, dazzling light beams struck on these warriors' faces, arms, thighs and all the other body parts which were exposed to the air. The bugs sprayed venoms, rapidly corroding their bodies. Be it Magus Kings or Divine Magi, their bodies had all been melting in the venom speedily.

These bugs were thousands of times tinier than sesame seeds. These Gu bugs happily wagged their tails and drilled into these warriors' bodies. Within a blink of an eye, billions of big eggs hatched in the bodies of these warriors.

Around the wounds on these warriors' bodies, their fleshes were squirming. Countless bugs hatched inside their bodies, ate their muscles, drank their blood, then laid more eggs and excreted large amounts of venoms.

They screamed and wailed. Hundreds of thousands of relatively weaker warriors covered their wounds with their hands and fell straight to the ground. Black smoke puffed up in streams from their wounds. They twitched intensely, with faint-pink blood oozing out of their eyes, ears, and mouth corners.

These Gu bugs were extremely greedy, and had been reproducing at a stunning rate. They crazily drank those warriors' spirit blood. The bugs drank too fast, and their number was way too large. Consequently, these warriors suffered a rapid loss of spirit blood, and by now, the blood flowing out of their eyes, mouths, ears, and noses, was already like clear water.

‘Zi…’

Along with a shrill scream which was not pleasant to hear, a tens of thousands of meters long Gu bug darted out from that dazzling light sphere, behind countless Gu bugs. This enormous one looked exactly like those tiny ones.

This grasshopper-like, tremendous bug was also covered in poisonous hair. It suddenly raised its head and screamed towards the sky.

Countless thunderbolts descended from the air, struck on this bug and shattered the dense poisonous clouds rising from its body, but failed to destroy the clouds and truly touch its body.

This was an extremely fierce and dangerous Gu bug, that even the world couldn’t stand!

A dreadful power vibration spread all over the area. This gigantic bug roared and shook its body, clanging its dark poisonous hair, which were much thinner than cow hair. Followed by a high-pitched swishing noise, its poisonous hair darted everywhere.

Ji Hao scanned across this giant Gu bug with his spirit power and couldn’t help but bare his teeth and shake his head.

Chu Wu people were too terrifying. Ji Hao couldn’t tell exactly how the Chu Wu people raised this giant Gu bug, but every flying hair of this bug was as powerful as an arrow shot out by a Divine-Magus-level Eastern Wasteland archer with all of his power!

Without being able to protect those elite large family warriors, Ji Hao rang the bell with all strength and generated strong Chaos power streams, trying his best to shield those shrimp warriors in the Kui Gate.

A sizzling noise lingered around his ears, as thousands of highly poisonous bug hairs flew across Yu Chi’s house, where an altar was set in.

Ji Hao immediately turned around. He saw the altar was

shattered by the bug hair. The sword intent and blood flying knife he buried in the altar slightly deviated. The three old Gong Gongs were trapped in the altar, without being able to do anything except roaring, with countless blood-red light beams generated by the blood flying knife constantly slicing their bodies. But as the sword intent and blood flying knife deviated, the three old Gong Gongs burst with resonant growls and struggled out of the altar.

The bodies of two old Gong Gongs blasted into clouds of blood mist the moment they left the altar.

The last old Gong Gong screamed in pain while barely holding his body together. He flicked his hand and threw out two tens of thousands of meters long, sharp crescent-shaped blades.

The crescent-shaped pair of blades swept across the Kui Gate battlefield. Tens of thousands of human warriors, who were suffering from Gu bugs, didn’t manage to react timely. As the blade light dazzled, they were cut into pieces.

Chapter 1337: Gong Gong's Counterattack

"What is this?" A Suiren Family elder exclaimed, his eyes fixed on the old Gong Gong.

"He is... is...!" Some people seemed to recognize the old Gong Gong. A Chu Wu elder leaped up, pointed his finger at Gong Gong, and shouted. But he didn't manage to speak out that title, because he was too nervous.

Tens of thousands of elite human warriors, who were cut in two at the waists, fell from the sky into the flood, along with a rain of blood. Among theme, some were strong Divine Magi, but they managed to do no more than howl in pain, before the flood swirled them away.

A Divine Magus could regrow his or her body from a single drop of blood. One wouldn't be able to kill a Divine Magus by cutting him or her in two at the waist. Even if one chopped this Divine Magus into meat paste, as long as a trace of the soul remained existing, he or she could quickly regrow his or her body with his or her great life-force. However, the pair of crescent-shaped blades was strangely powerful, which drained the spirit blood of those warriors who were cut by it. Therefore, even Divine Magi were killed by the pair of blade right on the spot.

The entire Kui Gate battlefield fell into a deathly silence. Ji Hao carefully gave Shermie a hand sign and told him to lead all shrimp warriors in Kui Gate to retreat as quickly as possible. An old Gong Gong escaped from the altar, and the situation instantly became difficult.

Elders and elite warriors from those powerful human clans and families all paused, staring at Gong Gong, stunned. He slaughtered tens of thousands of elite human warriors with a single strike. What kind of powerful being was him?

"He...he..." A Cloud Sun Family elder suddenly burst with a

scream, "Crazy Chu Wu people, give us the antidote!"

"Give us the antidote!" All elders who had their warriors injured by Chu Wu people's Gu bugs growled out. They were facing a strong enemy now, and they had to restore the strengths of all their warriors as soon as they could. Otherwise, under Gong Gong's blades, these warriors would be no stronger than a group of weak rabbits, and he would be able to do anything he wanted to them.

"Antidote?" Before Chu Wu elders responded, the old Gong Gong, who had just freed himself from the altar, had already leaped into the air and roared in rage, "What antidote do you want? Die, die, die! Human beings, you should all die!"

Gong Gong's long black robe was ragged by the flying blood knife, and his sturdy body was covered in wounds. Visibly, blood-red power streams lingered around his muscles and bones, and had been corroding his body. Sticky drops of blood dripped down from his wounds, emitting a suffocating odor. Meanwhile, the power vibration releasing from his body had been declining constantly and rapidly.

The blood flying knife was so evil, that even Gong Gong couldn't do anything to the nasty blood power released from it. While suffering from the blood power, Gong Gong tried all secret magics he knew and took tens of kinds of precious magic herb within the span of a couple of breaths, but failed to dispel the dirty blood power lingering inside his body. In the meanwhile, he watched the other two old Gong Gongs become two clouds of blood mist.

Clouds of blood mist, gone without leaving a trace, completely disappearing...

This old Gong Gong was shocked, enraged, and sad. They were gods, divine creatures; as a feature of gods, they were different from human beings, who had relatively separated and independent physical bodies and souls. When human beings died, their souls

could reincarnate. With special secret magic, their souls could turn into ancestors' souls, ghosts, and many other strange forms. But when gods died, they would die for good. They would disappear from this world without leaving a trace, even without a chance to become ghosts. Therefore, this old Gong Gong understood that the other two old Gong Gongs, his direct relatives, his families, were gone! He was injured severely too, and the blood flying sword had still been fiercely hurting his body, his soul. He gasped desperately; he could die at any time.

Gasping for a while, without saying one more word, Gong Gong wielded his pair of blades and raised tens of thousands of meters long, crescent-shaped beams of blade light, hacking towards the elite warriors of the large families in the front.

"Kill! Kill! Kill! I will kill every enemy of our Gong Gong Family!" The old Gong Gong roared insanely. He had fallen into a crazy, hysterical state. The pair of destructive blades swept across the battlefield and shredded countless elite warriors, who were injured by Gu bugs and could not move.

Ji Hao stood still. He released his spirit power like waves of water, firmly locking on the broken altar.

This altar was broken already, and the damage it suffered had affected the other eight altars. The other eight altars were quaking intensely. Old Gong Gongs struggled violently in the eight altars, and the eight altars seemed to be on the verge of collapse. Among twenty-seven old Gong Gongs, including this one in the Kui Gate, twelve managed to keep their bodies together barely.

Under the overwhelming waves of hacks launched by the nine blood flying knives, five old Gong Gongs were minced and turned into puddles of blood before they could even fight back. The nine blood flying knives absorbed old Gong Gongs' blood, turning fiercer and even more powerful. In the other eight altars, the eleven surviving old Gong Gongs were injured even worse, seeming to die right away.

All of a sudden, the enormous Gu bug controlled by Chu Wu elders screamed shrilly, then widely opened its mouthpart and sprayed a sticky stream of dark venom towards that old Gong Gong.

The old Gong Gong instantly dodged, transformed into large streams of water, and merged into the blood. Arrow-like streams of venom swished across the sky but failed to touch even a hair of Gong Gong. Instead, it struck the broken altar and completely shattered its base.

The nine connected altars exploded thunderously, while the nine blood flying knives clanged brightly. The tractive force from the nine altars was gone. Instead, the nine blood flying knives sensed the tractive force from Ji Hao’s spirit blood, transformed into nine long streaks of blood-red light, and flew over, darting into his body one after another.

Eleven severely wounded old Gong Gongs rushed out of the other eight altars, with their bodies turning into blood bit by bit, dripping down. They roared towards the sky. Chasing after the nine blood-red streaks of light and crossing millions of miles, their thunderbolt-light, sharp gazes landed on Ji Hao’s body.

"Little human scum!" Eleven old Gong Gongs shouted in chorus. They strenuously flew into the sky and boosted up their powers. Visibly, dark power streams transformed into dense dark clouds and covered the sky. From all directions, the flood, the rain, and the water streams pouring down from the sky were all being absorbed by their bodies, turning into pure water power and surging into their bodies.

Having broken out of those altars, and being nourished by the inexhaustible water power from the twelve water worlds, these old Gong Gongs body conditions were stabilized, even though dark, sticky blood had still been dripping down from their bodies. They roared towards the sky, then cursed and shouted their own names out.

In the other eight water gates behind the Kui Gate, countless water-kind creatures were thrilled. They raised giant waves and followed behind the eleven Gong Gongs closely, marching to the Kui Gate.

"Kill all human beings! Occupy Pan Gu world!" growled one old Gong Gong.

Their original plan was enslaving the humankind. However, as they were almost shredded by blood flying knives, these old Gong Gongs were infuriated to an extreme degree. They didn’t want to enslave human beings anymore. Slaves? How could slaves be easier to use than these silly water-kind creatures?

By now, they wanted to kill all human beings and have Pan Gu world all to themselves!

"Kill! Kill! Kill!" Endless waves rolled to the Kui Gate.

Chapter 1338: Aggressive Sword Move

The allied human force was now turned into a mess.

They fought each other. But before they could reach to an end of their internal conflict, a fierce old Gong Gong popped out and slaughtered tens of thousands of their warriors. Before they could gather their strengths and kill this old Gong Gong, eleven old Gong Gongs showed up, marching towards them with countless water-kind creatures. These eleven were also severely wounded, but even more dangerous and crazier.

The twelve water worlds ‘inlaid’ on Pan Gu world had been merging with the Pan Gu world, or in other words, were being devoured. The inexhaustible water power from these twelve worlds would become the strongest natural power in Pan Gu world, before Pan Gu world completely devoured and digested these twelve worlds. During this process, the power of the Gong Gong Family would reach to an unprecedented peak.

All water-kind spirit creatures, even all the ordinary water-kind creatures, would become tens of times more powerful than before. During this period of time, a little water-kind spirit creature, which could only raise three-feet-tall waves normally, would be able to easily raise hundred-meters-tall waves. And those large, enormous water-kind spirit creatures, who could already raise giant waves, would be able to stir up world-destroying waves.

At the moment, the allied human force was facing waves of overwhelming, world-destroying waves, coming from all directions.

The waves rolled over from every direction, purely dark, and looking like iron walls. Countless weird-looking water-kind spirit creatures were hidden in those waves. They roared as loudly as they could, and marched towards the allied human force under the leadership of the eleven old Gong Gongs.

At this very point in time, some elders from those powerful human families and clans still reached out their hands and strived for that thunder bomb small flag, with no efforts spared.

Surrounding them, elite warriors were slaughtered; right in front of them was a tsunami-like water-kind force. Yet, they neglected it all. They neglected all kinds of terrible consequences that the giant waves could bring, and instead, saw nothing else but the thunder bomb flag!

Taking the thunder bomb flag, weakening Chu Wu Clan, strengthening themselves!

For the thunder bomb flag, a little sacrifice was not worth mentioning.

Tens of silhouettes dashed around the flag, as fast as lightning. They bumped into each other and released thunderbolts, hurricane, raging fires, and poisonous gases. Meanwhile, the enormous Gu bug had been spraying venom randomly under the control of Chu Wu people. Blood splashed everywhere, along with body parts; even the sky seemed to fall.

The old Gong Gong with a pair of crescent-shaped blade laughed with a hissing voice. He scornfully glanced at those elders who almost fought their brains out over the thunder bomb flag. He roared hoarsely and killed surrounding human warriors with all of his power.

These elders...were hopeless. Human beings couldn’t count on them. On the contrary, some passionate and brave ones among those elite warriors from these powerful human families were the future of the humankind. And the Gong Gongs wanted to destroy this very future of the humankind.

‘Kill, kill, kill.!’ That old Gong Gong wielded his blades and slaughtered crazily. He smirked and raised sky-flooding waves around his body. Every wave had a crescent-shaped beam of blade light sparkling on it. When the waves rose to the sky, body parts

were thrown up like trash.

No blood could be seen on these body parts, as the pair of crescent-shaped blades had already drained all the spirit blood of these dead human warriors.

"Old dogs! Gong Gong is killing your people! Your children! Your descendants! Do you not care about their lives only because of a thunder bomb flag?" Ji Hao couldn’t bear watching all this anymore. The eleven Gong Gong and countless water-kind creatures were approaching, and Ji Hao was definitely their first target.

At the moment, he should disappear from the scene, because that was the safest thing to do.

Nevertheless, he couldn’t bear watching the behavior of these elders, he truly couldn’t. That old Gong Gong had been slaughtering their people as easily as chopping watermelons, while these elders were still endlessly fighting against each other over a small thunder bomb flag!

"Ji Hao, who do you think you are? What qualification do you have to talk to us like that?" An elder laughed, "Such a great treasure, it will bring us fortune. Our family will thrive with it. For a treasure like this, sacrificing a million clansmen is...acceptable!"

The old Gong Gong who was slaughtering human warriors with his crescent pair of blades suddenly burst with thunderous laughter, "Human beings, this is what human beings are like! Haha! Fuxi, Suiren, Xuanyuan, Shennong, You Chao! You old people, look at your descendants...These are human beings, and these are your descendants!"

Following his hysterical laughter, this Gong Gong wielded his blades and sent hundreds of human heads up into the sky.

Those poor elite warriors! Indeed, they could never rival this old Gong Gong, but at least they could run. Nevertheless, Gu bugs

released by Chu Wu people had still been running rampant inside their bodies, which weakened their bodies to an extreme point. Facing Gong Gong's blades, they didn't even have the strength to run!

At this moment, over one million elite human warriors were merely lambs for slaughter!

Ji Hao gave a resonant, bright roar. Seeing Shermie and large groups of shrimp warriors dive into the flood, leaving the battlefield at their highest speed, Ji Hao eas relieved. He shattered the space with one step and blocked that old Gong Gong's way.

That thousands of meters tall Gong Gong looked down at Ji Hao, twitched his mouth corners, and gave a grim smile. Then, he raised his pair of blades and hacked down violently.

Ji Hao smiled coldly too, as a Chaos power stream spurted out from the Pan Gu bell and swiftly drilled into Ji Hao's body. With muffled, thunder-like noises that could be heard from his body, Ji Hao started growing taller, meter by meter. Within a blink of an eye, he became thousands of meters tall as well.

The pair of fire snakes darted out of Ji Hao's sleeves and hissed shrilly. They expanded their bodies to tens of thousands of meters long and let Ji Hao tread on their bodies. The pair of snakes was coiled in raging flames. They carried Ji Hao up and floated in the midair. Suddenly, they opened their jaws and let out two blazing fire streams towards that Gong Gong.

During the past few years, Ji Hao had been cultivating this pair of fire snakes with no efforts spared. He had spent incalculable resources on them. By now, this pair was about to turn into flood dragons. The fire that came out of their mouths was no longer earth-core poisonous fire. Instead, it was now the glistening, bright, liquid-gold-like essence sun fire.

The essence sun fire was not too pure, but it was authentic, spreading on that Gong Gong's face.

Wielding his blades, that Gong Gong howled in pain. Surely, he recognized this pair of fire snakes, magical creatures from the earth core, found deep under Southern Wasteland volcanos. These kinds of fire snakes were indeed amazingly powerful, but at the level of this pair, they shouldn't be able to do much.

Nevertheless, the fire released by this pair of fire snake was essence sun fire!

That old Gong Gong wasn't prepared for this. Half of his face was immediately incinerated, which made him scream and deviated his blades.

A shred of shadow suddenly emerged from behind him. Silently, Yemo Shayi penetrated the heart of this Gong Gong with his sword and pierced the sword tip out of this Gong Gong's chest.

"Shameless!" Again, this Gong Gong didn't see this coming. How could a Supreme-level powerful being sneak up on him and stick a shining sword into his heart?

Ji Hao's Pan Gu Dragon Mark let out an echoing, bright dragon roar, as Ji Hao gripped the sword hilt with both hands and made the Big Dipper step. He silently launched eighty-one sword hacks at this Gong Gong in a row.

Following the series of metal clangs, the pair of crescent-shaped blades held in this Gong Gong's hands splintered. He couldn't believe this, shrieking in surprise. While his voice lingered in the air, Ji Hao cut his body into hundreds of pieces.

Chapter 1339: Snakes Become Dragons

"You!" This Gong Gong was cut into hundreds of pieces by Ji Hao, but every piece became a meters tall clone of his. They pointed at Ji Hao and screamed in rage.

"I can kill you!" Ji Hao gripped Pan Gu Dragon Mark calmly and looked at the hundreds of Gong Gong clones, then said, "Gong Gong, the Water God, as amazing as the legends indeed! The water is soft and flexible; it can merge, and can also split. Your body, your soul, is cut into hundreds of pieces, but every single piece became a clone of yours! Impressive, truly impressive!"

Gong Gong was so powerful. For this exact reason, Ji Hao couldn’t let him live!

A living Gong Gong was way too threatening to the humankind!

"How can you ever kill me?" Hundreds of Gong Gong clones roared in chorus. In both anger and confusion, they yelled at Ji Hao, "I am Gong Gong, the Water God! I am a god! But you are a human being, a mortal human being!"

"I can kill you!" Still, Ji Hao calmly looked at Gong Gong and said, "You are a god, what’s so important about that?"

This old Gong Gong returned to Pan Gu world from the far Chaos with Yu Ancestor’s great natural ability. Ji Hao refused to believe that Gong Gong didn’t suffer any power loss during the process. Added with the fact that before his return was completed, he suffered thousands of hacks from the blood flying knife in the altar, at this moment, this old Gong Gong had ten percent of his power remained, at most.

Ten percent, Yemo Shayi could easily suppress him. But still, Yemo Shayi attacked him from the back almost shamelessly!

Ji Hao wasn’t weak, and Pan Gu Dragon Mark was a top-grade, fierce treasure. Killing a severely wounded old Gong Gong, wasn’t

this reasonable? Smilingly raising Pan Gu Dragon Mark, Ji Hao looked at the eleven old Gong Gongs, who had raised giant waves and had been approaching, then smiled and said, "It’s too late! You’re too slow!"

Pan Gu Dragon Mark descended along with a splendid glow. The hundreds of clones, who were attempting to merge back together, were shredded by Ji Hao with a wild wave of sword hacks.

Pan Gu Dragon Mark let out bright dragon roars, which echoed to the clouds. Waves of dreadful, destructive power struck into this Gong Gong’s body, crushing his original soul. Dark spheres of light floated in the air as the last remains of this Gong Gong — These were his body, or his soul, or the purest divine power which generated him!

The pair of fire snakes was suddenly agitated. They raised their heads, turned around, and pitifully looked at Ji Hao.

The greediness and desire were rolling in their eyes. They couldn’t wait to swallow up the great divine power left by this Gong Gong after his body died. Ji Hao looked at them in surprise and murmured, "But he’s a Water God. He...Hm, I think I am wrong."

Ji Hao was enlightened all of a sudden. Water Gods, Fire Gods, they might have different natures, but their powers all originated from the purest power of Pan Gu world. At the moment, these dark light spheres still had features of ‘water’, but after being devoured and digested by the pair of fire snakes, the nature of the divine power contained in these light spheres would naturally switch to ‘fire’.

Powers had different natures, but eventually, all powers would go back to Chaos, to Taiji.

"All yours!" Ji Hao gently patted the heads of the pair of snakes.

"Little one, don’t you dare!" From far away, the eleven old Gong

Gongs who had been rushing over growled out loud together.

"Why wouldn’t I?" Ji Hao laughed aloud. He intentionally released the nine blood flying knives, and let them hover around him. Nine long blood-red light beams tore the air apart and wove into a giant blood-red web around him.

The eleven old Gong Gongs acted like raging bulls which saw a red cloth, when they saw the nine blood flying knives. Scorching hot stream puffed out of their nostrils, as they flew towards Ji Hao at their highest speed. Sadly, the serious wounds on their bodies were never healed. The dirty blood power from the blood pool had been ceaselessly corroding their bodies, because of which, they were only slightly faster than the giant waves they raised, even though they were flying at their current highest speed.

Reaching to Ji Hao couldn’t happen within a short while.

The pair of fire snakes happily opened their jaws and inhaled deeply towards the spheres of dark light in front of Ji Hao. Each dark light sphere was releasing a strong power vibration. Thousands of different sized dark light spheres were evenly divided into two parts, and were swallowed up by the pair of snakes.

Sideway, a boney arm thrust over and attempted to plunder those dark light spheres from the mouths of the two fire snakes. Ji Hao, saw it and acted immediately. He conveniently swung his sword down and generated a shrill howl. Following the howl, the arm of the skeleton puppet sent out by a Chu Wu Clan elder was chopped off.

"Ji Hao!" Watching Ji Hao cut off the arm of his best puppet and seriously weakening it, that Chu Wu elder pointed his finger at Ji Hao and yelled in anger, "You colluded with the water-kind, and you attacked me! You, you..."

Ji Hao didn’t even want to say one more word to these old men, who were ridiculously greedy, and knew nothing but their own

interests.

The scales of the pair of fire snakes stood up one after another, while their enormous bodies trembled intensely. Ji Hao leaped up from their backs, with his entire body shining with a dazzling golden light. The nine dragons chariot flew rumblingly out of his forehead and released sky-devouring flames, bumping into the group of elders.

The nine dragons chariot was the divine weapon of the East God Taiyi. The golden light and raging flame released from it were both extremely powerful. Those elders were all protected by top-grade magic treasures, but still, they stopped fighting and desperately fled in all directions, because they dared not to take even one strike from the chariot.

Before the chariot, Ji Hao grabbed the thunder bomb flag. The flag struggled intensely, but Ji Hao threw it directly into the Pan Gu bell.

The bell rang itself, and the thunder bomb flag, which had been quaking and sparkling, suddenly quieted down. It transformed into a stream of Chaos power and merged into the bell.

The bell rang for three times in a row. Abruptly, Ji Hao felt that he had gained a better control of the bell. He spread his spirit power on the bell, and the bell expanded. Within a blink of an eye, the bell expanded to about one hundred meters tall, and the Chaos power it released easily covered the area with a radius of hundreds of miles.

"I took this treasure, old dogs! Do you agree?" Ji Hao had already offended those elders openly, and now, he decided to push it even further!

With the Pan Gu bell floating above his head, Ji Hao trod on the nine dragons chariot, surrounded by the pair of fire snakes which had been shaking intensely, proudly looking down at the group of elders, who were stunned. Pan Gu Dragon Mark had been quaking

excitedly, with its power condensed into hazy dragon silhouettes, coiling around the sword edge.

The group of elders glared at Ji Hao. How dare he attack noble elders? How dare he take the great treasure which belonged to Chu Wu Clan? These elders hadn't met such a rude, disrespectful young man for many years! They should teach him a good lesson!

These elders ignored the giant waves roaring over from all directions and the tremendous water-kind army, which was united by the eleven Gong Gongs. They also ignored their warriors, who were killed or badly injured. They quickly glanced at each other, then decided to combine their powers and kill Ji Hao together.

All of a sudden, world-shaking dragon roars could be heard, from around Ji Hao. The pair of fire snakes abruptly sloughed. Their entire bodies burned with the essence sun fire, while a pair of beautiful deer horns grew out of their head. On both of their bellies, five claws reached out, coiled in fire!

After absorbing the power of an old Gong Gong, the pair of fire snake transformed into dragons, right in front of everyone on the scene!

Chapter 1340: Shock the Group with the Sword

The two snakes transformed into dragons and released two tremendous streams of power, swiftly spreading in all directions.

The nine dragons chariot floated in the sky, with two golden-red dragons hovering around it. As the pair of dragons released blazing flames from their mouths, boiling-hot airwaves swept across millions of miles of area, and evaporated all the rain and waves momentarily. Countless water-kind creatures hid in the flood screamed, before they were incinerated by the dazzling golden light.

Standing on the chariot, Ji Hao watched the pair of snakes transform into a pair of dragons. Sensing that power of evolution, the erupting, thriving life-force, he heard a ‘crack’ from his heart. Then somehow, he felt that an invisible barrier break inside his body.

Ji Hao laughed out loud. Gripping the Taiji Universe mirror with his left hand and the Pan Gu Dragon Mark with his right hand, he proudly looked at the group of elders and provoked, "Old dogs, in your entire lives, you are hustling to make some profits. To the humankind, to this world, you are just like wild wolves’ white poop, completely useless!"

"Except for wasting food, what else can you do?"

"Come on, come on! Fight, die! Killing you bunch of old dogs may not make the world a better place, but it will surely not make it worse! Without you old dogs, the humankind may not grow stronger, but undoubtedly, it will get better!"

Opening his mouth, Ji Hao let out a stream of essence sun fire, as a dazzling light shone from every single pore of his. Pointing at those stunned elders, he shouted, "Come on, I am Marquis Yao Ji

Hao! I am right here! I am the one who broke the Kui Gate! I am the one took the highest credit! I am Ji Hao! With my heart and soul, I will help Si Wen Ming attain the throne!"

"No colorful words, no schemes, no useless tricks! If you want your lowly kids to ascend to the throne, talk to me with your fists!"

"Kill me, kill Si Wen Ming, kill Emperor Shun, kill all human beings who know about the flood-control mission. Then, you can push whoever you want onto the throne!"

"But, old dogs, do you have the guts? Do you have the strength?"

Ji Hao laughed out wildly, sounding almost hysterical. Sensing Ji Hao's pride and his confidence, the pair of dragons roared thunderously towards the sky!

Holding the two supreme treasures, Ji Hao coldly looked at the group of elders with a strong intent of killing in his eyes.

Si Wen Ming and him, and countless brave human warriors, fought so hard against the water-kind. They disregarded their own safety for the future of the humankind. Finally, with the final step, the mission was going to be accomplished. Why would Ji Hao let these greedy old dogs have the credit?

The fierce intent of killing pierced straight into the sky, as Ji Hao growled through gritted teeth, "Come on, try kill me! Those Gong Gongs want to kill me, and you old dogs want to kill me too. Why don't you join hands with those Gong Gongs and do it together?"

"Come on, let's fight, let's kill! Either you kill me, or I will send you to hell!"

As Ji Hao said, killing these old elders might not bring the humankind into a stronger state, but the humankind would be better off without them for sure; the humankind would be cleaner, purer, more 'human-like', without them!

These elders glowered at Ji Hao, as giant waves rolled over from all directions. Except for the sky above their heads, they would see

nothing but roaring water if they looked around, and nothing else at all.

Facing such giant waves, added with the eleven maniacal Gong Gongs, the allied human force on the scene was facing a risk of complete destruction.

"Whether the humankind is good or not, as a young man, you don't get to evaluate it." said a Qiong Sang Family elder slowly, "As for whether we are bad or not...Who are you? Do you have the qualification to criticize us...?"

Before he finished, a clear light sphere glistened between Ji Hao's eyebrows. The golden bridge instantly brought Ji Hao to the Qiong Sang elder, and the Pan Gu Dragon Mark penetrated the elder's forehead. Pop! Golden fire spurted out from every pore of the elder, burning him into ashes.

Pan Gu Dragon Mark was way too powerful, and Ji Hao was so swift, that a full second after the Qiong Sang elder's body and soul were both incinerated by the essence sun fire, a horn-shaped magic treasure worn by him buzzed shrilly, releasing waves of electric bolts that swept across the entire area.

This was a top-grade magic treasure meant for both offense and defense, at the level of half-step-Supreme-Magus. Nevertheless, before it could release its great defensive power, its owner was killed right on the spot.

The Pan Gu bell buzzed and released a Chaos power stream. It locked on the horn-shaped treasure and then swallowed it up.

Raising Pan Gu Dragon Mark, Ji Hao roared towards the sky, "This old dog is dead. The other old dogs, who else wants to die?"

The group of elders was shocked for real. They stepped back, as fast as they could, for over a hundred miles. They stared at Ji Hao, and couldn't believe their eyes. Their minds went blank — Did Ji Hao truly, truly kill a Qiong Sang Family elder?

How could he?

No, they shouldn’t be thinking about how Ji Hao could kill that elder momentarily, because the real question should be — How dare he?

How dare he do it? Qiong Sang Family was the family of Emperor Shaohao. Qiong Sang Family people were direct descendants of Emperor Shaohao, the possessors of the purest Shaohao bloodline, which was one of the noblest bloodlines of the humankind. Qiong Sang Family was highly influential among human beings. Meanwhile, it was a totem worshipped by all Eastern Wasteland clans, even nobler and more sacred than the Yi Family.

How dare Ji Hao kill a Qiong Sang Family elder?

Was he insane? Perhaps, he was truly insane!

Over so many years, only Qiong Sang elders, and elders from the other legendary human families and clans, could bully the others with their powers and the social status of their families, as much as they liked! But no one ever dared to offend any of these elders, not even a little bit! Even human emperors had to maintain good relationships with these elders, as long as they wanted to stay in the position of the human emperor. For many things, important things, human emperors had to listen to these elders. Otherwise, even human emperors could fall into troubles!

Not even human emperors dared to offend these elders, but how could Ji Hao dare kill one of them?

In fact, this Qiong Sang elder was the second important elder Ji Hao killed. Before this, Wu Thunder, the Chu Wu Clan elder, was also killed under Ji Hao’s order!

"Marquis Yao Ji Hao, you’re out of your mind! You, you, you..." A You Chao Family elder stood on his flying fort, pointing at Ji Hao and cursing, "You killed Elder Wu Thunder, and now you killed Elder Qiong Sang Feather! You, you..."

"I also killed Wu Gu!" Ji Hao raised Pan Gu Dragon Mark and shouted, "Wu Gu from the Chu Wu Clan, I killed him too! He sneaked into the Kui Gate and tried to collude with Dark Water Serpent and destroy our humankind! That kind of old dog should die! You bunch of old dogs should all die!"

With the fire of anger burning in his heart, Ji Hao growled, "Who else wants the credit more than the future of the humankind? Step out if you dare to!"

Pan Gu Dragon Mark let out resounding, resonant dragon roars. The sharp intent of killing released from the sword made the looks of many elders change suddenly.

Chapter 1341: Fight the Group of Devil

"This kid...will become a disaster of our humankind!"

"We can't let him live. Otherwise, we will be facing an unexpected misfortune!"

"Kill him, peel him, destroy his soul!"

"And his treasures! All his treasures are rare, valuable pieces. That sword should belong to my family!"

...

Elders from those powerful families and clans glared at Ji Hao, hysterically cursing and criticizing him. In their eyes, Ji Hao was the greatest shame of the entire humankind, a scum of the human society and a future trouble.

Meanwhile, they righteously indicated that Ji Hao's treasures were all supreme pieces that should belong to 'orthodox' human beings instead of staying in Ji Hao's hands, serving as his talons and fangs. For sure, with the so-called 'orthodox' human beings, they meant their own families.

Ji Hao laughed, without saying a word. He laughed so loudly that it even wrinkled his face.

These people, these people...these people... After knowing about Emperor Shun, Si Xi, Si Wen Ming, Candle Dragon Gui, Wulong Yao and the other human elders like them, and witnessing the passion and love these human elders towards the humankind, Ji Hao seriously couldn't believe that so many disgusting 'human-like creatures' actually existed among all human beings. Even the word 'shameless' couldn't describe these people!

They made Ji Hao feel even sicker than Priest Hua and Priest Mu ever did.

Priest Hua and Priest Mu weren't human beings. They were

greedy and shameless, but they never reminded Ji Hao of himself. However, these old people were descendants of human emperors and ancient, powerful human beings; they represented the purest ‘humanity’. But, they were so despicable. Looking at these people, Ji Hao felt that even he himself had suddenly turned filthy.

"Your people are so unlucky...to have you as their ancestors!" As Ji Hao slowly raised Pan Gu Dragon Mark, the nine dragons chariot treading under his feet glowed with a dazzling golden light. From the golden light, Mr. Crow darted out and stood on the chariot, spreading his thousands of meters wide, golden wings.

The eleven Gong Gongs and countless water-kind creatures approached in formidable arrays. Countless water-kind creatures screamed and shrieked, bringing millions of weapons out of the water and pointing at Ji Hao and human warriors around him.

An elder suddenly burst with a hoarse scream, then pointed at Ji Hao and shouted, "Gong Gongs! This kid is a curse of our humankind, a curse of Pan Gu world! Are you willing to join hands and kill him together with us?"

The group of Gong Gongs paused for a second. They glanced at each other, then roared madly. They wanted to kill Ji Hao. These powerful human families were enemies of the Gong Gong Family too, but at this moment, Ji Hao was a common enemy of both sides.

Because of Ji Hao, the Gong Gong Family suffered a terrible loss. They should kill him first, then deal with these human elders, who seemed to have problems with their heads; this was the plan of the eleven Gong Gongs.

Gong Gongs grinned. They bared their teeth and grinned hideously. They planned to kill Ji Hao, then immediately swallow this allied human force with the great water-kind army. After that, they would raise the flood with the water power from the twelve small worlds, and overturn the entire human world!

Such a perfect plan; it just couldn't be better.

Hundreds of heavily armored, strong water-kind spirit creatures trod on waves and walked out, holding all kinds of weapons and releasing sharp power vibrations. They silently encircled Ji Hao. From thousands of miles away, they released different sized thunderbolts, which then transformed into cyan, blue, or black ripples, sweeping towards Ji Hao from all directions along with a dense watery mist in the air.

The group of Gong Gong stopped approaching. They stood on waves, expectantly watching the full attack launched by the hundreds of strong water-kind spirit creatures under their commands. Meanwhile, they had been absorbing the water power in the surroundings as quickly as they could to replenish their consumed spirit blood, trying to fight against the power of Ji Hao's blood flying knives.

Thousands of thunderbolts generated by spirit creature powers struck towards Ji Hao quietly.

Those elders laughed out loud. Leading their uninjured elite warriors, they approached Ji Hao. What reached near Ji Hao the first was that giant grasshopper-like Gu bug from Chu Wu Clan. The bug flapped its small wings and flew towards Ji Hao, leaving a black beam of light in the air.

Ji Hao chuckled, which sounded so cold.

He slightly waved the Taiji Universe mirror held in his left hand and let out a clear stream of light which illuminated the whole area. Within the clear light, the thousands of thunderbolts disappeared without a trace. In the next moment, all thunderbolts struck on the giant Gu bugs' body simultaneously and generated a series of popping noise, stirring up thousands of colorful blooms of watery light from the bug's body.

Tens of elders from Chu Wu Clan trembled slightly while the giant Gu was torn into pieces by the joint-handed strike from the

hundreds of strong water-kind spirit creatures. A dreadful counterforce swiftly reached to the tens of elders through the connection between them and the bug.

"Move!" These Chu Wu elders, who had been controlling the big, screamed shrilly. Tens of them cast a spell and transferred the counterforce to those clansmen behind them, who had been constantly providing them the power.

As these Chu Wu elder trembled slightly, over ten-thousand people detonated all of a sudden. The others were injured too, with blood spurting out from their noses, mouths, ears, and eyes. Most of them had their power flows disorganized, which made them vomit blood, falling into the flood from the midair.

"So cruel! Let's kill him together!" A You Chao Family elder yelled from inside his sturdy flying fort. That square-shaped, bronze flying fort had an exquisite building on it. The fort rose into the air and moved to above Ji Hao's head momentarily. A great magnetic force was released from the bottom of the flying fort, transforming into a colorful stream of light and pouring down towards Ji Hao's head.

The Pan Gu bell spun slightly and released a stream of Chaos power, which transformed into a giant lotus, spinning in the sky. Countless lotus petals cut the colorful light stream and shredded this stream of magnetic force.

Ji Hao laughed as the nine dragons chariot rose into the sky and started a raging fire, bumping fiercely into the flying fort. Pan Gu Dragon Mark shone with a sharp sword light and cut open over thirty-thousand layers of defensive screens around the fort, then cut the fort into two, as easily as slicing a tofu piece. Along with a dazzling light and a blazing fire, the chariot bumped onto the collapsing fort. Following a shrill howl, the You Chao Family elder and his flying fort were both incinerated by the nine dragons chariot's fire.

Human silhouettes flashed in all directions. Elders, human warriors and the hundreds of strong water-kind spirit creatures had all been growling thunderously, marching towards Ji Hao as if he was an absolutely irreconcilable enemy.

These human families and clans and those water-kind spirit creatures under the command of the Gong Gong Family were deadly enemies. But suddenly, they joined hands, combined their powers, and cooperated perfectly when marching towards Ji Hao.

"Powerful human families, legendary human families!" Ji Hao sneered and wielded the Taiji universe mirror quickly. Streams of clear light were released, which reversed all attacks and disarrayed the enemies.

Casting a Yu Yu’s sword spell, Ji Hao raised Pan Gu Dragon Mark with his right hand. Wherever his sword light reached, blood surged in streams, while body parts flew all over the sky.

Pan Gu Dragon Mark was extremely sharp, and not a single treasure or body could ever survive under its sharp edge.

Within ten breaths, three hundred strong water-kind spirit creatures, forty-eight elders, and thousands of elite human warriors were cut into pieces by Pan Gu Dragon Mark.

Chapter 1342: The Cold Sword Light

Water-tank-sized ‘raindrops’ fell from the sky, while countless hundreds of miles thick water torrents poured down. The immeasurably great water power condensed into an ocean, floating in the air.

Even the glow of the nine dragons chariot had been suppressed to an extreme point. At this very moment, under the effect of the Water God power released by the eleven Gong Gongs joint handedly, Pan Gu world became ‘Pan Gu water world."

Among the five basic natural powers, ‘water’ was now at an absolute advantage, while ‘fire’, as a natural rival of ‘water’, was subdued to the limit. Not to mention the nine dragons chariot, even the sun in the sky seemed to die.

Ji Hao gasped loudly, then laughed out loud. Just now, he burned quite some energy to slaughter those people and water-kind creatures, and by now, over ninety percent of his power was consumed up. He gasped loudly and quickly, but what he inhaled was sticky and cold ‘watery mist’, the absolute opposite of the sun power that he released.

Surrounding him, people from those powerful human families and water-kind spirit creatures smirked while approaching. They even neglected the heavy loss they suffered just now.

"His power must have run out! Rush up! Hack him to death!"

"Haha, his spirit star power…The sun? No, impossible! Except for East Emperor Taiyi, no one else can ever turn the sun into a spirit star! It must be some kind of power very similar to the power of the sun!"

"Whatever it is, as long as it’s with a nature of fire, his power can never be replenished in Pan Gu world now!"

"Not to mention the other stars, even the sun is now dim. This

kid has run out of power, he’s dead!"

"Be careful, be careful! This kid is brutal. Even if he has run out of power, we shouldn’t underestimate his physical strength. That sword of his is way too fierce, such that even if he uses the sword merely with his physical strength, we might not be able to defeat him!"

Countless greedy eyes were fixed on Ji Hao. Large groups of elite human warriors lined up in battle formations and approached from every direction. From the front, from behind, on both sides, up in the sky and down on the ground, heavy armored troops were coming closer and closer.

Tens of elders were killed by Ji Hao with Pan Gu Dragon Mark. However, hundreds of elders were still hiding in the battle formation with twisted faces, staring at Ji Hao with hatred like poisonous snakes which had their tails chopped off.

Just now, Ji Hao killed tens of elders and stirred up small disturbances in those powerful human families. Those alive elders all launched their moves to seize the spirit treasures, that belonged to the ones killed by Ji Hao. However, hearing the growls of family leaders, the small disturbances were quieted soon. The strongest elder of each family took those dead elders’ spirit treasures, then continued besieging Ji Hao.

The Pan Gu bell buzzed. Just now, Ji Hao killed a lot, but he was also attacked hundreds of thousands of times. Many of these attacks were launched with powerful magic treasures, and each of them brought Ji Hao a strong pressure. But that was all to it.

Ji Hao looked at those human warriors and water-kind spirit creatures in the surroundings, who had been approaching step by step, and suddenly burst into a resonant laughter and said, "Old dogs, what would the other human beings say if they saw this? You colluded with the water-kind and you killed human beings. You tried to ruin the flood-control mission, and you should all die!"

"Those nobodies, they won't know anything." a bright voice with a strong intent of killing said from within the battle formation. "Ji Hao, you are standing in a high position, and you should know what history is. Whatever we leaders want our people to know is history!"

"Ji Hao," Another deep, cold voice could be heard from the crowd, "Today, you will die. After you die, you will be written into the annals of history as someone who colluded with the water-kind and attempted to hurt the humankind. Your clansmen will be executed, and your Yao Mountain territory will become 'Yao Lake'. I promise you that it will be a rich, fertile, vast lake!"

"Not only that!" A shrill voice that sounded like a crying ghost shouted, "All your friends will become our targets. For example, some people in the Magi Palace, Si Wen Ming, and...Zhu Rong's daughter."

"The others will all die miserably." continued this creepy voice, "And Zhu Rong's daughter, Zhu Rong Man Man, right? She should be worth a sweet price as a slave!"

Ji Hao grinned, ever so brightly.

He was infuriated. Hearing these elders, the fire of rage burned wilder and wilder in his heart, burning out his last mercy.

"Elders, thank you. I finally know what to do!" Taking back that grin, Ji Hao showed an expressionless face. He suddenly changed and became like a lifeless being, like a dead tree, a rock...or, the 'merciless great Dao' that he had heard before.

A minute ago, Ji Hao couldn't bear to kill these elite human beings. These disgusting and despicable elders should all die indeed, but those elite warriors did nothing wrong but follow orders. Perhaps, they didn't deserve to die.

However, these elders' words killed the mercy in Ji Hao's heart, and set Ji Hao free.

There were things that one must do and people who should not live. These elite human warriors were talented and strong, but if their strengths couldn't bring benefits to the entire humankind, and if they served merely as tools for the fights between human families and clans over power and wealth, what would be different if they died?

"Perhaps, one day, a 'saint' will teach you how to use your strengths!"

"But, I am not a 'saint'. Therefore, I should better kill you all. Without you, the humankind will temporarily be weak, but I believe that a better future will be expecting us!"

As Ji Hao breathed deeply, the wind roared and clouds rolled around Ji Hao. The great water power inhaled into his body was instantly absorbed by his embryo of Dao of the extreme negative, and transformed into inexhaustible extremely negative power within a blink of an eye.

Sending the nine dragons chariot back into his body, Ji Hao's entire body shone with a bright, silver-blue light. He raised Pan Gu Dragon Mark high and sprayed a mouthful of blood on the sword. The sword let out an echoing, sharp scream, then turned blur, producing four dim and translucent sword figures.

East, west, south, north, the four thousands of meters long hazy swords darted into four different directions, stopping about three miles away from Ji Hao and floating in the air.

Ji Hao raised his head and let out a mouthful of blood, then lowered his head and let out another mouthful of blood. Countless blood drops sparkled with a cyan-colored light, looking like glistening stars in the sky while swiftly flying in all directions, as they became two small sword formation blueprints above his head and under his feet.

"How powerful will this formation be in comparison to the one of my Shifu? One thousandth? One ten-thousandth? But with Pan Gu

Dragon Mark as its core, this sword formation should not be too bad!"

Ji Hao smilingly glanced at all the enemies surrounding him and memorized the face of each one of them. Then, held in his hands, Pan Gu Dragon Mark suddenly dazzled with a sharp and cold light.

As he wielded the sword, the cold light and sharp sword power pierced straight into the sky.

Beyond the sky, Yu Yu abruptly raised his eyebrows, turned around, and glanced back at Pan Gu world.

"Ha! My disciple is marvelous!" Yu Yu laughed out loud and conveniently threw four splendidly glowing swords towards Pan Gu world while saying, "Shifu will help you!"

Chapter 1343: Accomplishment of Embryos of Dao

In his spiritual space, his red sun primordial spirit, which used to be splendid, was now dim and dull, over a hundred times smaller than before. At the moment, it looked merely like a sphere of red light that floated in the spiritual space, surrounded by the six embryos of Dao.

Sun, extreme negative, destruction, space, blood pool, evolvement...

The six embryos of Dao all looked exactly the same as Ji Hao, but with different colored skins.

The embryo of Dao of sun was golden and shining; the embryo of Dao of extreme negative was silvery and glowing; the embryo of Dao of destruction was dark and mysterious; the embryo of Dao of space was blur and colorless; the embryo of Dao of blood pool was blood-red and fierce-looking; and the color of the embryo of Dao of evolvement had been changing constantly.

The red sun primordial spirit was transformed from Ji Hao's three souls and seven spirits, and was the origin of his great Dao. Embryos of Dao were generated from Ji Hao's understanding about the great Dao and a part of his original soul power. Each embryo of Dao represented the essence of a certain part of Dao that Ji Hao understood, a part of Ji Hao's fabulous life story, and the related knowledge and the great strength he had.

When he wielded the sword and sent up the dazzling cold light, Ji Hao's red sun primordial spirit withered immediately like a balloon with its gas leaking. In the meanwhile, the six embryos of Dao simultaneously shone with blending lights. They smiled, locked their fingers together, and unreservedly released the great powers accumulated inside their bodies. Six torrents of power surged into Ji Hao's body, and were released to the world through

Pan Gu Dragon Mark.

The mysterious man silently showed up and quietly sat in the air with his legs crossed, looking down at the six dazzling embryos of Dao. The moment the six embryos of Dao released their powers, the mysterious man suddenly stood up and made the posture of sky-opening. Unhurriedly, he made the five moves that he taught Ji Hao.

Sky-Opening, the mysterious man swung his right arm down, strongly, straightforwardly, fiercely, in a natural and wild way, as if that arm was a heavy, enormous axe. Ji Hao's spiritual space quaked instantly, then a thriving life-force that seemed to be able to generate all living beings was produced.

Earth-splitting, the mysterious man's entire body suddenly blurred. Ji Hao's spiritual space began shrinking. The misty space shrunk rapidly until it became the tiniest spot, then erupted.

Everything-grow, everything-perish, all living beings reincarnate, these three moves were made in a natural row. With the force that erupted from Ji Hao's entire shrank spiritual space, overwhelming power of creation flooded across the six embryos of Dao.

The six embryos of Dao seemed to be enlightened. They raised their heads together as their eyes glowed brightly, fixed on the mysterious man.

Above the mysterious man's head, a sun and a moon were rising and falling; around him, stars were hovering; under his feet, mountains, rivers, living creatures emerged. The entire Pan Gu world appeared around his body with the Dao of creation.

Inclusive, complicated, but in the end, all images around the mysterious man transformed into misty, colorless Chaos power streams, which wrapped him up like an enormous eggshell. The Dao of sun and extreme negative were only streams of light flashing across the eggshell; the Dao of destruction and space were

a couple of inconspicuous marks on the eggshell; the Dao of the dark, evil blood pool and the constantly changing Dao of evolvement originated from the flowing blood in some veins under the mysterious man’s skin.

"The Dao is already inside you, so why should you spend so many efforts to search for it in the outside world?" murmured the mysterious man with a deep voice, "What is the ultimate pursuit regarding the great Dao? Immortality? Power? All wrong. The true nature of the great Dao of Pan Gu world is nothing else but strength!"

"Taiji, Priest Dachi’s Dao, is profound and advanced, but wrong."

"Creation, Priest Qingwei’s Dao, is mysterious and powerful, but wrong."

"Quietus, Priest Mu’s Dao, is lifeless, and wrong."

"Evolvement, Priest Hua’s Dao, is fancy and superficial, but wrong.

"Yu Yu is different. With the sword held in his hands, he can cut all barriers. His Dao tilts towards the great Dao of Pan Gu world. Unfortunately, he is guided onto the wrong path by his two brothers. Let’s see if he can return to the right direction!"

"Strength, it’s inclusive; it breaks everything, but also creates everything, and controls all powers in the world. The powers of the five basic natural elements, the stars in the sky, even the Taiji, strength supports the whole world, creates the whole world, controls the whole world, and can destroy the whole world. This is the great Dao of Pan Gu. All parts of Dao merge back together without distinctions, that is Pan Gu."

The mysterious man quickly moved his fingers and made the gestures of the nine secrets words. Smiling warmly, he continued, "The great Dao is inside me, but I didn’t know till I learned these nine secret words. Today, I finally understand the true great Dao

of Pan Gu!"

Ji Hao raised Pan Gu Dragon Mark, then smiled and swung the sword down.

In east, west, south, and north, the four hazy swords screamed shrilly, while a destructive sword power erupted. From the sky, four sharp swords descended and fell into the four hazy swords.

"Eh?" The mysterious man paused. As his deep blue eyes sparkled for a while, he finally laughed out loud, "This is your fortune!"

Laughing out loud, the mysterious man raised his arms and made the combined move of the five moves.

Ji Hao wielded Pan Gu Dragon Mark with his right hand. Looking at the four swords descending from the sky, he laughed thunderously. Confidently, he wielded the sword with all his strength.

Four streams of sword power rose from the four directions and expanded to tens of thousands of miles long. Following an earth-quaking buzzing noise, the four sword power streams exploded and became countless sharp sword light beams, dazzling across the sky.

These sword light beams broke time and space; no matter how fast one could run, even if one could reverse the time, one would not survive.

These sword light beams shattered the flood and the storm. The inexhaustible water power was turned into Chaos power and absorbed by the sword light, further strengthening it.

All armors and shields were shredded by these sword light beams. Senior Magi, Magus Kings, and Divine Magi, who were able to regrow their bodies from drops of blood, were all cut into pieces. Their life-force was completely drained, leaving them no chance to recover.

Ghosts and souls were all destroyed by these sword light beams. Even those millions of years old fierce ghosts raised by Chu Wu

Clan perished under these sword light beams.

One sword move broke it all... One sword move frightened the enemies.

Surrounding Ji Hao, a sword light beam swept across the throat of every single living being who had his or her weapon pointing at Ji Hao. Their heads flew into the sky, as their blood dyed the world red. Countless cold corpses turned into ashes and drifted away in the wind.

Puff! Ji Hao's red sun primordial spirit suddenly disappeared. Finally, he reached another level, beyond the stage of primordial spirit.

His six embryos of Dao collapsed, and became dragon-like dense streams of mist, interweaving with each other. At last, a misty, colorless figure quietly appeared in his spiritual space, sitting silently on the cloud which was woven from Chaos power streams with his legs crossed.

Following Ji Hao's thoughts, all kinds of images emerged around this figure.

The golden sunlight, the cold dark ice, the blood pool in hell, the endless void, the black hole that could devour everything in the world, and layers of constantly changing lights and shadows.

A series of bone creaking noise could be heard from Ji Hao's body. Strangely, the color of his skin seemed to change. But on looking closer, one would find nothing different at all. However, all of a sudden, his power vibration grew much stronger, yet faintly sensible, and immeasurable.

That was Ji Hao's true embryo of Dao; it belonged to him, and him alone. That was his accomplishment. At this stage, his cultivation of Dao had raised to the level of Supreme Magus.

Chapter 1344: Strength Breaks All

The four dazzling swords buzzed in the sky and released an overwhelming wave of power.

After one hundred and eight ear-piercing metal clangs, the four swords rose higher into the air and swiftly flew out of the sky, disappearing without a trace. A couple of breaths later, Yu Yu smilingly looked at the four swords hovering around him in the Chaos and nodded in satisfaction.

"Ji Hao, my good disciple, he is indeed talented. And he actually has the courage to copy my sword formation." Yu Yu smiled delightfully. Conveniently, he pointed his finger on a bone-piercing cold sword. Instantly, a subtle, indescribable trace of power drilled into Yu Yu's body from the sword, after which, Yu Yu's smile froze immediately on his face.

Pausing for a while, Yu Yu cast a complicated glance at the four swords. Waving his broad sleeve, he held the four swords in his arms, then silently sat in the midair, his legs crossed. A faint, yet sharp light sparkled in his eyes, seeming to imprint in his eyes.

"Dao...my Dao...my two brothers' Dao...The Dao of Pan Gu world...The Dao of this endless Chaos..." Yu Yu closed his eyes and fell into a deep meditation.

Above his head, three cyan-colored lotuses bloomed. An endless sword power was released from the petals, shredding thousands of Chaos monsters who had been roaring thunderously and marching towards the Pan Gu world. The power vibration released from Yu Yu's body turned more and more restrained. Gradually, no life-force could be detected from him, as if he had turned into a fossil wood which died a billion years ago.

Outside the Kui Gate, Ji Hao quietly floated in midair.

Inside his spiritual space, a colorless embryo of Dao was smiling

and sitting on the boundless clouds of Chaos power. Inside Ji Hao's body was a vast void, illuminated by the golden light sphere and the silver light sphere which represented the great Dao of sun and the extreme negative. Thriving power streams surged inside his body and caused dragon-roar like rumbling noises.

He felt dizzy and sleepy. He smiled faintly while enjoying this magical feeling, as if the world wasn't created yet. His mind wasn't clear, but he seemed to know a bit of everything. He felt that he could now control everything in the world, and that feeling was fabulous.

Pan Gu Dragon Mark dimmed its light and quietly 'lied' in Ji Hao's hand. Being gripped in Ji Hao's hands, this fierce sword was actually a bit like a lazy cat, huddled in Ji Hao's hands, deep asleep.

Clouds of gray dust drifted away along the wind. Just now, countless water-kind spirit creatures and elite human warriors were slaughtered by Ji Hao with the sword formation. They were turned into grey dust and slowly wafted away, along with a lingering trace of death power.

Tens of thousands of flying buildings that belonged to You Chao Family floated in the air, completely unmoved. After the span of three to five breaths, a breeze abruptly blew across. All of a sudden, thin beams of cold light burst from these floating buildings simultaneously. Without making even the slightest sound, tens of thousands of floating buildings, which could provide great defensive and offensive powers, collapsed.

Pure gold tiles, jade pillars, silver walls, coral floors...These buildings were built from all kinds of natural treasures. But in the past moment, they all turned into dust, being blown away by the wind as if billions of years had passed within that moment.

Ji Hao slowly raised his head. His eyes were clear, without any dazzling light. He glanced around with that pair of eyes blandly.

Thousands of miles away, the eleven old Gong Gongs luckily

survived the sword formation. But seeing Ji Hao, they instantly quivered. They screamed with high-pitched, shrill voices, like little girls who accidentally saw a large group of naked muscular men. They turned around and fled away desperately. They trod on giant waves and rushed to over ten-thousand miles away in different directions. Only then did they finally have the courage to tremblingly turn around and take another glance at Ji Hao.

Ji Hao wasn't chasing after them. These old Gong Gongs wiped the cold sweat on their foreheads and then stopped running quiveringly.

Millions of elite human warriors looked at Ji Hao expressionlessly. They looked at the empty area around Ji Hao and the drifting grey dust in this area.

One-third of all elite human warriors gathered in Kui Gate area, and ninety percent of elders on the scene, were slaughtered by Ji Hao with one sword move.

The ones who rushed up to attack Ji Hao were the best elites from these powerful human families and clans. As the top-grade elites and the noblest warriors in their families and clans, only they were so impatient to kill Ji Hao and take the credit.

They rushed up, and then all died.

They died, without leaving even a corpse to be buried in their family graves, or a trace of soul for their children to bring into their ancestral temples to worship. They perished, both their bodies and the souls. They disappeared from this world and left nothing but clouds of drifting dust.

Crack! The rolling netherworld power streams dissipated in the sky. Netherworld Hierarch walked out from dark clouds, with Dark Water Serpent's neck gripped in his hand.

Abruptly seeing the drifting grey dust in the sky and sensing the extremely fierce sword intent lingering in the air, Netherworld

Hierarch quivered and exclaimed, "Such a strong intent of killing... Hah, Yu Yu my friend, you are...really protective!"

Pausing briefly, he laughed, "It's a good habit though. One day, when I have disciples too, I will learn how to be a Shifu from my friend Yu Yu!"

Afterward, Netherworld Hierarch laughed out loud. Looking at those badly frightened human warriors in a distance away, he laughed so loudly that he almost had tears spurting out of his eyes. But in the following moment, he suddenly slapped himself loudly on the forehead, then yelled at Ji Hao, "Ji Hao, my young friend... You, you, why didn't you leave corpses? I could have purchased their corpses from you with a high price!"

Ji Hao speechlessly showed the whites of his eyes. Just now when he launched the strike, Yu Yu helped, while the mysterious man did things to his embryos of Dao.

Before, Ji Hao's six embryos of Dao were distinctively separated, and Ji Hao understood the corresponding great Dao for his six embryos of Dao more or less. Back then, he clearly knew about his powers. But after what the mysterious man did, his six embryos of Dao disappeared, and instead, a colorless figure appeared, seeming to have the powers of all the six embryos of Dao. Indeed, he had stepped into the stage of embryo of Dao from the stage of primordial spirit...

But somehow, Ji Hao felt strange to himself.

If he wanted to get familiar with the new embryo of Dao and his new powers, he would have to spend some solid efforts. Under such circumstances, it was way too difficult for Ji Hao to restrain his power and not damage those corpses!

"Next time, next time, I will leave you as many corpses as I can!" Ji Hao grinned, then took a deep breath. Abruptly raising his sword, he pointed at the floating mountain of You Chao Family and said, "You, what else do you want to say?"

From the floating mountain of You Chao Family, three-hundred and sixty pyramids suddenly flew out and formed a pyramid-shaped formation in the sky, shielding the entire mountain.

You Chao Family people stayed in the flying mountain were freaked out already. They dared not to even say a word.

Ji Hao laughed wildly. From his embryo of Dao, a tremendous power erupted. He wielded Pan Gu Dragon Mark and launched a hack towards the mountain from a long distance away.

The moves of sky-opening and earth-splitting were combined!

A beam of sword light descended, slicing the three-hundred and sixty pyramids into seven-hundred and twenty pieces.

Chapter 1345: A Hysterical Rout

These pyramids were large-scale defensive weapons developed by the You Chao Family, and were modeled on divine towers of Yu Clan. With one sword move, Ji Hao broke hundreds of these.

Being gripped in Netherworld Hierarch's hand without being able to move, Dark Water Serpent had his eyeballs bulging out of his eye sockets as he stared at Ji Hao. He couldn't believe his eyes. Not long ago, when he encountered these pyramids, he was trapped in the pyramid formation for a long while!

But Ji Hao cut three-hundred and sixty pyramids into pieces with one single sword hack! He did this as easily as cutting three-hundred and sixty pieces of tofu with a sharp knife, which made Dark Water Serpent even want to vomit blood.

A series of screams could be heard from the floating mountain. Led by a few white-haired old men, large groups of You Chao warrior rushed out of the mountain, trod on all weird kinds of tools and formed a formation in midair.

Tens of thousands of You Chao warriors formed a conservative, round-shaped defensive formation, facing Ji Hao.

With his good eyesight, Ji Hao saw the goosebumps on many of these warriors' necks, and their straightly standing fine hairs. Apparently, these warriors were so seriously frightened, that with a little bit more fear, these warriors would immediately suffer a mental breakdown!

Laughing aloud, Ji Hao straightened his five left fingers and pushed out his palm. From each of his five fingers, a bolt of thunder struck out. Gold, green, water, fire, earth, these five thunderbolts had different natures. Dazzling to hundreds of miles away, these thumb-thick thunderbolts expanded to miles thick and merged into a five-colored thunderbolt mountain, which fiercely landed on the round-shaped defensive formation.

Followed by a thunderous bang, the five thunderbolts blasted and sent tens of thousands of screaming You Chao warriors flying out.

Ji Hao didn’t spend too much effort for this thunder strike. Tens of thousands of warriors were thrown away, vomiting blood. But among them, the one who suffered the worst only had a few ribs broken. Spirit blood flushed, and these warriors healed themselves soon.

"You Chao people, don’t humiliate your ancestors!" Ji Hao said with a deep and strong voice, "Emperor You Chao had made great contributions to the humankind, but when did his descendants end up knowing nothing but seizing the credit that belongs to some other people?"

"Today, I have killed too many people, and I don’t want more blood of emperor descendants on my hands." Breathing deeply, Ji Hao continued in a harsh tone, "Aren’t you gonna leave? You’re not still thinking about taking the others’ credit with the power of your family, are you?"

Those warriors who were sent flying by the thunder strike, and had still been vomiting blood, stood back up from the ground. They looked at Ji Hao with fear and shock, then fixed their eyes on their elders. Many of these warriors were strong Divine Magi, but even they were easily thrown away by one thunder strike launched by Ji Hao. These warriors dared not to even imagine exactly how powerful Ji Hao was.

The few You Chao elder glanced at each other, then slightly moved their lips.

The power vibrations released from all surrounding warriors were restrained. None of these warriors made any sound. In the air, strange power streams had been flowing around, as those large family elders were exchanging their thoughts silently.

After a long while, as Ji Hao’s patience was almost running out, a

giant wave rose from tens of thousands of miles away. Following that, Gong Gongs' voices echoed through the clouds.

"People, this kid is so brutal! He has killed so many people. How can you let him live?"

"Let's kill him together!" growled Gong Gong, "This time, we will do it ourselves. We cannot let him live, not even for another quarter of an hour."

Netherworld Hierarch's eyes shone with a bright light. He clenched his fingers excitedly and squeezed Dark Water Serpent's neck. Because of the suffocation, Dark Water Serpent fell unconscious.

A dark mist stream rose from beside Netherworld Hierarch. Within the dark mist, a bronze gate, which was embossed with countless twisted ghost faces, emerged quietly. Netherworld Hierarch threw Dark Water Serpent into the gate, then smirked.

"Ji Hao, do you need my help? Hehe, since many years ago, I wanted to get a few gods and to see if I can turn them into zombies. But I and all gods in the world knew each other, so I felt too ashamed to do so. This time, I may do it with the Gong Gong Family, and I suppose no one will disagree, right?"

Ji Hao chuckled, then raised Pan Gu Dragon Mark and nodded as he said, "Elder, you can do anything you want."

Silent communications between those elders happened faster and faster, quicker and quicker. Suddenly, over one hundred elders rushed out of their campsites, trod on dark clouds and raging flames, and speedily approached Ji Hao.

Ji Hao frowned slightly. Held in his left hand, the Taiji universe mirror sparkled dimly. Ji Hao was well prepared.

But, these elders didn't attack Ji Hao. Instead, they rushed to the treasures left by those dead elders just like starving tigers and wolves.

Just now, Ji Hao started a massacre with the sword formation he created. Quite a number of powerful magic treasures were shattered by the storm of sword light beam. Among those remaining treasures, some were at the level of that thunder bomb flag, and the others were mostly inherited great treasures that belonged to those powerful families, passed down through generations.

For sure, the great treasures of a family should be kept by the highest elder of this family. After ninety percent of elders on the scene were killed by Ji Hao, those lower-grade elders, who stayed in their campsites happily took over those treasures.

‘Hehe’, Ji Hao even heard the laughter of quite a few elders!

They weren’t sad for their dead clansmen. On the contrary, they were thrilled about those treasures that they suddenly attained. Ji Hao couldn’t help but feel sick. These were elders of top-grade human families and clans! And these were legendary, powerful human families and clans!

"Get your treasures and piss off!" growled Ji Hao, "Old dogs, you know nothing...You are humiliations to the humankind! Piss off! Piss off! Piss off! Even seeing you make me feel sick! You are, are..."

Wielding Pan Gu Dragon Mark fiercely, Ji Hao continued harshly, "Get lost! I don’t want to kill more human beings today!"

Following a long shrill howl, a few Chu Wu Clan elders retrieved their treasures, then returned to their campsite. Flying past Ji Hao, they suddenly turned around and screamed crazily at Ji Hao. With their right hands, they held the treasures that they found just now and wielded. Next, their left arms and legs exploded into blood mist clouds as they cast the evilest ‘blood curse’ to attack Ji Hao.

The other elders made their moves together. They damaged their own bodies, and partially burned their souls and spirit blood to boost up the powers of those magic treasures, even going beyond their limits. By doing this, they cast all kinds of evil magic on Ji

Hao with all of their powers.

The eleven Gong Gongs were thrilled. They screamed and threw out countless water bombs at Ji Hao.

In the air, elite human warriors from those powerful human families and clans who survived the sword formation roared out madly as they marched towards Ji Hao. They even seemed to be hysterical and insane. Countless warriors rushed towards Ji Hao, looking like countless black ants running about wildly in the sky.

"You really want to die!"

In his spiritual space, the embryo of Dao smiled faintly, then released a torrent of power. Ji Hao dropped Pan Gu Dragon Mark, raised his right fist, and punched heavily on the Pan Gu bell.

The bell rang, and the sound waves reached a hundred miles away. Within the area hundred miles in radius, the world was turned back into Chaos.

All natural powers were disordered, while over a hundred elders shrieked in pain. Their bodies, souls, and the magic curses they cast were crushed, turning into Chaos power streams simultaneously.

"Kill, I'll kill every last one of you idiots!" With the bell floating above his head, Ji Hao wielded Pan Gu Dragon Mark and roared like a beast, flying towards the allied human force.

The allied human force was so aggressive a moment ago. But now, countless warriors dropped their weapons and shrieked, fleeing like startled rabbits. Leaving their gears, supplies, and campsites behind, they desperately ran away in all directions, at their highest speed.

Chapter 1346: Priest Mu Gives Magic Pills

The battle formation collapsed, and all people escaped, like ants which had their nest blown up.

This allied human force was so aggressive, that even Si Wen Ming was forced away by them. However, after the massacre started by Ji Hao, these people were frightened to run just by a growl Ji Hao gave. By now, these strong and sturdy human warriors dropped everything that could slow them down and fled desperately. They were screaming and crying, just like weak, vulnerable little girls who saw a ghost.

'Boom, boom, boom…' Tens of thousands of water bombs landed on the Pan Gu bell and started a long series of booms. Waves of thunderbolts spread out, that rippled the Chaos power streams released from the bell.

Ji Hao turned around and looked at the group of old Gong Gongs from a distance away.

Those Gong Gongs' bodies were covered in stinky, black blood. They stared straight at Ji Hao, their eyes filled with shock and confusion. The formidable allied human force of top-grade human families and clans had collapsed just like this, and all people were fleeing. Was that even real?

Strong Chaos power streams rose from the Pan Gu bell and violently evaporated all moisture in a radius of ten-thousand-miles. Standing in the empty, clean air, Ji Hao coldly looked at the group of Gong Gong who trod on waves, and were surrounded by water streams.

The scalps of these old Gong Gongs were even numbed. On their skins, their fine hairs stood straight up. They suddenly regretted, and wondered why on earth did they throw out those water bombs. They should have done nothing more than stirring up the allied human force and letting them risk their lives against Ji Hao.

But why did they roll up sleeves and join the battle in person?

They were covered in wounds, and had still been suffering from the dirty blood power from the blood pool. They were injured so badly, and had temporarily lost over ninety percent of their powers...They truly didn't have the confidence to defeat Ji Hao. Ji Hao was such a brutal kid, but why did they infuriate him so many times in a row, and that too at their weakest moment?

"You, hmm, I need to figure out a way to punish you!" With the Pan Gu bell floating above his head, Ji Hao trod on a cloud. The pair of fire dragons were wrapped in raging flames, hovering around Ji Hao while Mr. Crow stood on the Pan Gu bell, cawing resoundingly. Slowly, Ji Hao approached the eleven old Gong Gongs.

"Punish?" The group of old Gong Gongs burst in rage. "Ji Hao, who do you think you are? How dare you even say that?" They yelled in anger.

One old Gong Gong boosted his courage and took a few large steps towards Ji Hao. His hands gripped a purely dark long spear, which was coiled with a dragon embossment. He pointed the spearhead at Ji Hao and growled, "Marquis Yao Ji Hao, you may be proud of yourself at the moment. But when we recovered, we will raise the army and start another great battle against you! Our Gong Gong family has spent so many years on this great plan, and it will not be ruined by a kid like you!"

Hearing him, Ji Hao couldn't help but laugh out loud. 'Raise the army and start another battle when they recovered'?

"How can I ever allow you the time to recover? Elders, you really shouldn't have come back!" Ji Hao slowly raised Pan Gu Dragon Mark. Inside his body, the power was boosted up, as the space surrounding him seemed to collapse into his body. Faintly and hazily, the group of old Gong Gongs saw all the stars in the world flash across Ji Hao's face, swiftly and simultaneously.

"I had many things to say, but then I thought about it carefully, and realized that I actually have nothing to say, do I?" Ji Hao mildly looked at the group of old Gong Gong and said blandly, "We are different races, so we must have different purposes. The Gong Gong Family wants to become the ruler of the world... Standing in your position, that is absolutely right. Any ambitious living being will think and do the same!"

"But I am a human being. Standing in the position of the humankind, you should all die!" With a bright grin, Ji Hao slightly nodded to the group of old Gong Gong and said, "Therefore, even if I have to do the evilest, dirtiest, most shameless things in the world, I believe that nothing can't be done as long as I can take you out."

"When I have killed you and that restless current Gong Gong in the heaven, the dark clouds in the sky will be gone, and the good life of our humankind will begin. In fact, things are not complicated at all, because all I need to do is kill you."

Ji Hao grinned brilliantly and talked straightforwardly.

Finishing his words and without giving those old Gong Gongs a chance to respond, he launched the combined move of sky-opening, earth-splitting, everything-grow, everything-perish, and all living beings reincarnate. He injected all of his power into Pan Gu Dragon Mark, cast Yu Yu's sword spell, and created a cyan-colored, dazzling sword light beam as he made a lunge at that old Gong Gong who had a long spear.

Covered in blood and gripping the spear, that Gong Gong roared towards the sky and pushed the spear towards Ji Hao's chest without dodging.

That old Gong Gong was injured by a blood flying knife, which drained almost all his spirit blood. He had less than ten percent of his power remaining at the moment, and was extremely weak. He had no confidence in winning against Ji Hao. The only thing he

could do under the current situation was to put up a desperate fight against Ji Hao, and try his best to kill him or wound him severely.

As this Gong Gong made a move, the other ten old Gong Gongs took a step forward simultaneously.

They didn't cast any magic, and neither did they have the power to do it. All eleven old Gong Gongs stood side by side, straightened their weapons, and hacked at Ji Hao. At the moment, they looked like the lowest grade human warriors.

Following a buzzing noise, the Pan Gu bell released strong streams of Chaos power and defended against the eleven Supreme-level weapons.

As Ji Hao slightly trembled, Pan Gu Dragon Mark fiercely penetrated the chest of that old Gong Gong with a long spear. From the sword, the pair of dragon figures roared deeply and strongly as they sent the destructive power into his chest and tore his body apart.

"You..." That Gong Gong bared his teeth and gave a twisted grin while staring at Ji Hao and saying, "In my powerful days, I could kill ten kids like you with a slap!"

Ji Hao remained silent. Perhaps, in this old Gong Gong's powerful days, he could truly kill ten kids like Ji Hao will one slap, but that could only happen before Ji Hao stepped into the stage of embryo of Dao. Now, Ji Hao had attained his true embryo of Dao and reached to the stage of embryo of Dao, which equaled the level of Supreme Magus. At this stage, he had a much better control of natural powers. By now, at their best, Gong Gongs could only defeat Ji Hao, but could never kill him.

"Too many superfluous words!" Ji Hao looked at this Gong Gong calmly and said, "These years, I've been running about without taking a break. I'm tired, and I want to go rest at home. So, can you please die quietly right here? Don't bring more troubles to

anyone...I promise I will build each of you a beautiful grave, how's that?"

Wielding his long sword, Ji Hao cut this Gong Gong into pieces. The pair of fire dragons pounced and wolfed the body parts.

The rest ten old Gong Gongs looked at Ji Hao, stunned. They couldn't help but step backward tremblingly.

They wanted to boost up their courage and fight Ji Hao, but being injured by blood flying knives, they were so powerless. At the moment, they didn't even have the qualification to put up a desperate fight against Ji Hao.

Ji Hao raised the sword again and made a lunge at the group of old Gong Gong expressionless. He didn't want to waste any more time. Today, this should be the day for this flood to end. As Ji Hao said, he had been running about in storms for years. His body wasn't tired, but his heart was exhausted.

But at that moment, a green light suddenly emerged before his sword edge, delivering a thriving life-force. Pan Gu Dragon Mark cut on the green light, which generated a strong counterforce. With a series of creaking noise from Ji Hao's wrist, it was shattered into pieces.

"Who is it?" Enduring the sharp pain from his wrist, Ji Hao shouted.

"My friends, I have ten magic pills that can detoxicate all evil poisons in the world. I am willing to give these ten pills to you, my friends." Priest Mu's face hazily appeared in the green light and said to Gong Gong smilingly, "As long as you admit that you owe me one, these magic pills will be yours."

Chapter 1347: Force to Sell

The green light emerged out of nowhere. The moment Priest Mu's figure appeared in the light, Ji Hao turned around and dashed to the rest eight water gates behind the Kui Gat at his highest speed.

The golden bridge dazzled with a blinking light, which wrapped Ji Hao and flashed across space, immediately reaching the second water gate. The Pan Gu bell expanded to hundreds of meters tall. Ji Hao madly raised the bell with both hands and smashed down on the second water gate with all his strength.

Followed by a thunderous bang and despairing wails from countless water-kind creatures in the second water gate, the Pan Gu bell quaked intensively. From the bell, waves of Chaos power stream transformed into black and red flames, rising into the sky. Meanwhile, a tens of thousands of miles long section of the mountain range on both sides of the second gate disappeared all of a sudden, right in the black and red flames.

"Go away if you don't want to die!" Ji Hao raised the bell, flashed to tens of thousands of miles away, and once again smashed the bell down on a mountain, "Go away! Go! Go! Go! All of you!"

Another earth-shaking boom was generated, and another tens of thousands of miles long section of the mountain range was gone.

The mountains on both sides of the eight water gates had been nourished by the earth meridian power for years, and were already harder than diamonds. No ordinary power could ever harm these mountains, but still, these mountains failed to rival the Pan Gu bell. Not to mention the fact that the one controlling the bell at the moment was Ji Hao, whose cultivation of Dao had already stepped into the grade of embryo of Dao, which equaled the level of Supreme Magus.

With a full strike, he turned the surrounding space into a black

hole, collapsing tens of thousands of miles long sections of mountain ranges. So terrifying! Under such a destructive strike, even Divine Magi would be turned into ashes.

Ji Hao yelled ‘go away’ at all living beings in the second water gate, because he was worried about Tushan Family people and the others who had sneaked into the water gate under Si Wen Ming or Emperor Shun’ commands. He was afraid that his violent strike might kill those people too.

He had no time to break the rest eight water gates step by step with the mountain-driving whip. Therefore, Ji Hao decided to use the destructive power of the Pan Gu bell to break as many water gates as he could, as quickly as possible, with all of his strength!

He didn’t have to be so rushed. Ji Hao believed that once he killed all old Gong Gongs who returned to Pan Gu world from the Chaos, he would be able to break all water gates. He had the confidence. However, Priest Mu suddenly showed up to make a mess. Seeing Priest Mu’s face, Ji Hao realized that things were getting messy.

Ten old Gong Gongs with all of their powers regained? Thinking about this, even Ji Hao’s scalp numbed. He was still confident. He believed that even if these old Gong Gongs regained all of their powers, they wouldn’t be able to harm a hair of his. However, then, breaking the rest eight water gates wouldn’t be so easy.

Therefore, Ji Hao immediately raised the Pan Gu bell and crazily smashed on the mountains by the eight water gates, even though accidental injuries might be caused. Within a blink of an eye, he tore a small half of the second water gate down, and opened up a half of a thousand-miles-wide water channel.

Black and red mushroom clouds rose into the sky. Countless water-kind creatures, non-humankind beings, and human beings mingled in the crowd of water-kind, all shrieked, running like hell.

Black and red fierce airstreams swept across their bodies along

with overwhelming air blasts, tearing them into pieces, and eventually turning them into strands of Chaos dust.

In the green light, Priest Mu threw a complicated glance at the chaotic second water gate and sneered, "What a smart boy! Right now, I need to help my brother and have no time to deal with you! When my brother goes through the devil crisis, we will be clearing our old debts."

The ten old Gong Gongs looked at Priest Mu, also in a complicated way. "Priest Mu, we've heard about you from our ancestors. Hehe, we shouldn't be accepting Priest Mu's magic pills so easily, should we?" said the oldest Gong Gong coldly and vigilantly.

Priest Mu smiled mildly to the ten old Gong Gongs and said, "I mean well, my friends. Please don't misunderstand me."

"We won't, we won't." said another Gong Gong coldly, "If our family record is correct, back then, the greatest treasure of our family, the 'divine spirit water bead', was taken away by Priest Mu, as you claimed that treasure 'was destined to be yours'. Today, if we accept your pills, I wonder if our entire Gong Gong Family will be 'destined to be yours'?"

Priest Mu gave a strangely bright smile. He took out ten thumb-sized, linden-leaf-shaped green pills, and put them on his palm. On his palm, the ten pills rolled around quickly, emitting a refreshing aroma.

Looking at the ten old Gong Gongs, he grinned and said, "Do you have a choice, my friends? If you don't accept my pills, you will all die today! Without a doubt!"

"We are not sure about that!" said one Gong Gong through gritted teeth, "That kid is brutal and fierce indeed, but killing us would be too..."

Priest Mu laughed out loud, then suddenly raised his cyan-

colored wooden staff held in his left hand and smacked on this Gong Gong's chest. Followed by a loud boom, this Gong Gong's chest was smashed into pieces. While vomiting dark blood, he flew backward for about a thousand miles. Suffering this heavy strike, he almost lost all his spirit blood. He fell into the flood in a twisted shape, and after quite a while, he finally, tremblingly floated up to the water surface.

Priest Mu smiled again. But this time, a trace of fierceness was added to that smile of his. "I mean, if you refuse to owe me this one, I will kill you myself! You wouldn't even have a chance to be killed by Ji Hao!"

"You!" The group of old Gong Gong paused in shock. They stared at Priest Mu, not knowing what to say.

Could a living being actually be so shameless?

Priest Mu was forcing them to accept the ten pills and owe him a debt. If they refused, he would kill them by himself!

In the family records, Gong Gong Family ancestors clearly warned the younger generations not to make any contact with Priest Hua and Priest Mu. Gong Gong Family ancestors had already been seeing those two as treacherous, dangerous beings, but these ten Gong Gongs never thought that they could actually be so shameless!

" Our f-friend!" The faces of these old Gong Gongs even turned blue in anger as they glowered at Priest Mu.

"My ten friends, you are destined to join us!" Priest Mu's eyes shone with a cyan-colored light, as he stared at the ten Gong Gongs and continued, "Therefore, please, take the ten pills and join our sect, serving the sect as divine guardians! If you refuse...Hehe, you raised such a flood and threatened the world. You are all sinners, bearing the most heinous guilts. Don't blame me for wiping you out and benefiting the world with my power!"

"You!" The ten Gong Gongs pointed their fingers at Priest Mu, but suddenly, they sensed an endless despair in their hearts.

"I still have important things to do. My friends, will you accept... or not?" Priest Mu asked through gritted teeth. In the meanwhile, his wooden staff glowed with a dim light.

"We accept, we accept!" As the four men with a dragon, a tiger, a lion, and a mammoth approached from four directions, the group of old Gong Gongs accepted Priest Mu's condition bitterly, despairingly, helplessly,.

They tremblingly took over those magic pills and slowly put into their mouths, as if those pills were poisonous.

In the distance, Netherworld Hierarch, who hadn't said a word this whole time, abruptly sighed and began talking, "Priest Mu, my friend, as you did this, did you even see me standing here?"

Chapter 1348: Reasons and Causes, and the Netherworld

"My friend, what do you mean?" Glancing at the ten old Gong Gongs who had taken their pills, Priest Mu smilingly turned around and threw a glimpse at Netherworld Hierarch. Seeing the weird-looking of Priest Hierarch, and the Netherworld power eighteen circles behind his body, his smile instantly froze. Soon, he put on his usual bitterly smiling face, which was even more unpleasant to look at than his crying face.

Slowly, Netherworld Hierarch approached Priest Mu, step by step. After he made one step, a blood-red beam of sword light would emerge around his body. Gradually, thousands of blood-red sword light beams merged into a splendid light screen behind him, which looked like a spread peacock tail.

A strong blood power rolled up. Looking at Priest Mu, Netherworld Hierarch blandly smiled and said, "My friend, can your pills truly save them from the blood poison?"

Priest Mu glanced at the stunningly beautiful light screen behind Netherworld Hierarch, sensed the dark and evil vibe from it. Pondering for a while, Priest Mu nodded and asked, "My friend, was it you who hurt them?"

Netherworld Hierarch held his hands in his sleeves, narrowed his eyes and looked at Priest Mu, then said, "I didn’t do it myself. Earlier, a gifted a set of flying knives to a little friend. They were hurt by those flying knives. I forged that set of flying knives myself, and have hurt countless living beings with the blood poison on it."

While Netherworld Hierarch was talking, the wounds on the ten old Gong Gongs’ bodies had been healing speedily. From their healing wounds, strands of blood-red mist flew out, while a nourishing green light sparkled faintly around those wounds,

forcing the blood poison out of their bodies.

Priest Mu didn’t look back, but he clearly knew about the recovering states of the ten Gong Gongs’ injuries.

Squeezing an ugly smile out of his face, Priest Mu responded slowly, "My magic pills can detoxify all poisons in this world. My friend, your flying knives are indeed dangerous, but my pills are even more powerful.

Netherworld Hierarch’s face turned darker and darker. He gritted his teeth, with his mouth corners twitching slightly.

He spent tens of thousands of years to forged the set of flying knives with severe efforts. He thought this set of flying knives was powerful enough to suppress a world. But all of a sudden, he found that the fiercest function of these flying knives was already restrained by someone else!

One could easily imagine how disappointed he was!

Netherworld Hierarch felt that his face was burning. The nine blood flying knives he gifted Ji Hao were surely not as powerful as his blood flying swords. The set of flying knives was merely ten percent as powerful as the set of flying swords. However, the blood poison on the set of flying knife shared the same origin as the set of blood flying swords.

If Priest Mu’s pills could truly detoxify the blood poison from the nine flying knives, those pills would naturally be able to deal with his blood flying swords.

"My friend, you launched your moves so suddenly and showed no respect to me." Netherworld Hierarch slowly reached out his hands. A large seal was held in his left hand, and a staff in the right hand. Coldly looking at Priest Mu, he continued in a deep voice, "I do want to know what you can do, my friend!"

Sensing the strong power vibrations from the seal and the staff, Priest Mu’s face turned more and more bitter and tightened. "My

friend, you don’t look familiar to me. I think we’ve never met before. But the power I sensed from you reminded me of someone I know...Netherworld Priest, my friend, when did you start to have an interest in stepping in human world affairs?"

Netherworld Hierarch gritted his teeth and responded with a low voice, "I’ve been cultivating myself in the Netherworld, and never stepped into any mortal affairs. This time, I sent my clones here to do nothing more than collecting some ‘raw materials’. But you, Priest Mu my friend, judging by what you did, you have seriously violated the agreement we signed back then on Sky Pillar. Aren’t you...afraid?"

Priest Mu slightly frowned and then abruptly laughed, "What should I be afraid of? That agreement we signed on Sky Pillar...Sky Pillar is broken already. Is that agreement still effective? My friend, if you want to see what I can do, no excuse is needed!"

Netherworld Hierarch showed a weirdly bright grin and said, "I wasn’t trying to find an excuse. It’s just that...My friend, you have overstepped the boundary. These Gong Gongs were hurt by my treasures. My friend, why did you give them the pills?"

Priest Mu chuckled coldly, then gripped his wooden staff with both hands and smiled, but remained silent all the while.

Netherworld Hierarch laughed out loud as well. Following his resonant laughter, the eighteen circles behind him spread out. Gradually, even the smallest circle had expanded to tens of thousands of miles in radius. As the eighteen circles began spinning at different speeds and in different directions, a dreadful power was quietly generated from them.

The world changed. Suddenly, the water which was flooding the sky disappeared. A cold gust of wind rose from the ground, as blade mountains and sword forests floated in the sky. The boundless blood-pool replaced the earth, while countless enormous pillars of raging fire stood on the ground, with numerous giant pots floating

above the fire. Contained in those pots was boiling stinky oil.

Terrifying phenomenon emerged ceaselessly as Priest Mu's look turned more and more serious.

Quite a while later, when eighteen different types of supernatural phenomenon covered the world before his eyes, Priest Mu gave a long sigh and said, "The foundation of hell is attained by you...My friend, do you know that the Netherworld is an important realm for me to attain my final result of the great Dao of quietus in the future? My friend, you have taken the foundation of hell... Unacceptable! Today, we have to reason it out!"

Netherworld Hierarch sneered, then looked at Priest Mu and said, "Reason? What reason? The Netherworld is my root. My friend, if you need a place to attain your Dao, please go find another realm. If you dare to set one foot into the Netherworld, my friend, I will certainly make you regret forever, like a moon that can never be full!"

Priest Mu suddenly pointed his staff at the sky and laughed wildly, "Moon? Look at this Pan Gu world... Where is the moon?"

Netherworld Hierarch laughed brightly. While throwing out the large seal held in his left hand heavily towards Priest Mu's face, and starting a dense dark cloud, he said, "The sun, the moon, the great Dao of nature... People can't see the moon, yet the moon is in my heart! I can still remember that refreshing moonlight shining across the sky! Duo!"

Netherworld Hierarch and Priest Mu both growled out resonantly. Priest Mu swung his wooden staff down, his movement seeming to be simple. The staff landed straight in the middle of the seal. The seal was sent flying away by the wooden staff. Afterward, Netherworld Hierarch gave a resounding roar and gripped his staff with both hands, slightly bending his body as he lunged towards Priest Mu. His black staff glowed with a blinding dark light and released waves of Netherworld power, which whipped down

violently.

Behind Priest Mu, a towering linden tree was faintly visible. Holding the cyan-colored wooden staff, he defended himself. The wooden staff and the dark staff bumped into each other and caused muffled booms from time to time.

The movements made by both of them were extremely simple: Sweeping, hacking, smacking. Nevertheless, they were both indescribably fast.

Once the fight between Netherworld Hierarch and Priest Mu begun, the time, space, and other natural laws that ordinarily living beings could never go beyond all became meaningless to both of them. In their eyes, one second in the mortal world was as long as a thousand years; within one single second, they had already exchanged tens of thousands of attacks!

Any ordinary living being would have been turned into ashes by either of them before it was able to see their moves clearly.

Swift, way too swift, completely beyond description.

In fact, to both Netherworld Hierarch and Priest Mu weren’t moving too fast. In their eyes, they were simply attacking each other in an physical way. But to ordinary living beings, they were stunningly fast because they had broken the limits of time and space!

All of a sudden, a blood-red figure flashed around Netherworld Hierarch’s body, and in the following moment, thousands of hazy blood-red swords swept across Priest Mu’s waist.

Priest Mu was cut into two, immediately collapsing into a puddle of blood that splashed everywhere.

High up in the air, Priest Mu’s cold laughter could be heard, "Netherworld Priest, my friend, there will be a time for you to pay for this sword pain you gave me today!"

Chapter 1349: Being Trapped in Heaven

"At that time, if you don’t come to me, I will go find you!" Netherworld Hierarch stood in midair, looking at where Priest Mu disappeared with a pair of brightly sparkling eyes. "Impressive, impressive, a linden seed clone of his can actually hold such a long battle against me."

The four men with a tiger, a lion, a dragon, and a mammoth had already approached. Seeing Priest Mu being cut into two by Netherworld Hierarch, their faces twitched. Turning around immediately, they walked right away.

Netherworld Hierarch raised his broad left sleeve. Behind him, the eighteen circles released a fierce power which trapped the four men. With one single thought, Netherworld Hierarch could now crush the four. However, hesitating briefly, Netherworld Hierarch sneered, then watched the four leave.

Treading on a cloud and flying a long distance away, the dragon man abruptly turned around and threw a threatening glance at Netherworld Hierarch with hatred, then said, "Elder, you are truly powerful. Rivaling you is out of my reach. Today, I am forced to run, but when I attain my great Dao one day, I will set my feet in the Netherworld, and the winner will be determined between us."

Netherworld Hierarch chuckled, then roared with laughter. Looking at the dragon man’s serious face, he slightly shook his head and said, "Alright, I will not bully kids. Just go away. Otherwise, I will take you and turn you into gold-bone flying zombies!"

The dragon man growled shrilly in anger. Above his head, a scorching hot red beam of light rose to thousands of meters high. Within the red light, a golden figure with four faces and eight arms emerged, holding a lotus with every hand. Incanting a spell, the golden figure glowed with a blinding light.

The golden light emitted from the golden figure behind the dragon man bumped against the Netherworld power released from Netherworld Hierarch. Like fire and the water, the golden light and the Netherworld power were completely incompatible. A sizzling noise was generated, as the golden light and Netherworld power had been speedily consuming each other.

Netherworld Hierarch frowned, while the dragon man said loudly, "I swear that one day, I will break the Netherworld with a great power, and will release every evil soul in the Netherworld from the purgatory!"

Finishing the speech, the dragon man ran away swiftly and disappeared without a trace within a blink of an eye.

"Big talker." Netherworld Hierarch sneered, "Release every evil soul in the Netherworld? Can you release me? Well, with two shameless master Shifu, their disciples are naturally shameless. In the future, I have to be extra careful when selecting my disciples!"

Chuckling coldly, the seal and the staff held in Netherworld Hierarch's hands disappeared suddenly. Instead, a pair of blood-red swords appeared in his hands. Glancing at the group of old Gong Gongs who were wrapped in the green light and had been recovering speedily, Netherworld Hierarch swung his swords without saying a word.

The group of Gong Gong were deeply shocked by the stunning battle that happened between Netherworld Hierarch and Priest Mu just now, and they weren't prepared for Netherworld Hierarch's sudden attack. Before they could even pull out their weapons, blood flying swords landed on their bodies ceaselessly.

Followed a long-lasting puffing noise, tens of bone-deep slashes were left on the bodies of the ten Gong Gongs. The blood power from the blood pool drilled into their bodies, a hundred times stronger than the blood power from Ji Hao's blood flying knives, rising against the lingering power of Priest Mu's magic pills.

The blood-red light and the green light clashed against each other and devoured each other, generating loud sizzling noises. The skin and flesh of the ten Gong Gongs fell off piece by piece, melting into dark blood and pouring down in the flood. Stimulated by the medicine power, their skin and flesh had been regrowing ceaselessly.

They felt like being sliced by countless sharp daggers. They trembled in pain, gripped their weapons with both hands, and howled heartbreakingly. They raised giant waves and attempted to run through the water. But once they tried to move, the eighteen Netherworld circles spun slowly and trapped them, disabling them from moving.

Netherworld Hierarch carried the pair of blood-red longswords and fixed his eyes on the ten Gong Gongs. Whichever one among them had his injuries recovered slightly would immediately suffer a sword hack from Netherworld Hierarch.

"Elder!" One Gong Gong shrieked hysterically.

Netherworld Hierarch smiled faintly, then gave him another heavy sword strike mercilessly and said, "I have always been a good-tempered man. I’m just a bit proud. Can Priest Mu’s pills save you? I don’t think so!"

An excited smile spread on Netherworld Hierarch’s face, as he delightfully looked at the ten Gong Gongs and continued, "We have only ten of you. I can’t make twelve or eighteen of you, but this will still be nice. Ten pure-blood gods for me to do anything I want... Wonderful, how wonderful!"

"With ten of you, I can’t build a ‘twelve capitals natural killing great formation’, nor an ‘eighteen hells reincarnation great formation’. But I can create a ‘ten directions destructive Netherworld great formation’...As long as I turn you into Netherworld devil gods... Haha, how many years it has been since I found good raw materials like you?"

Netherworld Hierarch grinned happily, even baring his shiny teeth. Purely dark Netherworld power spread behind his body. In the dense dark mist behind him, an enormous bronze gate opened slowly. From the gate, a strong suction force locked on the ten Gong Gongs, slowly dragging them into the gate."

"No! No!"

"Elder! Please don’t!"

"We will follow every word you say, we will be under your command! Please, Elder, don’t do this!"

These old Gong Gongs were freaking out. They returned to Pan Gu world to suppress the humankind and conquer this world, but how on earth did they end up like this?

Netherworld Priest, Netherworld Priest, that scary, weird being who liked collecting corpses and souls, and make those into all strange kind of things... How could they end up in his hands? These old Gong Gong didn’t know Netherworld Hierarch, but seeing the dark mist behind him and the bronze gate in the mist, how could they still not recognize him?

They cried, screamed, and begged, but nothing changed.

Netherworld Hierarch delightfully sent the ten Gong Gongs into the Netherworld world, then quickly looked around. Dropping his swords, he rolled up sleeves and got busy running about in the vast flood. Many enormous water-kind spirit creatures were scattered in the flood, and those were also good raw materials!

...

In a great hall in heaven, Gong Gong’s raging roars even quaked the entire hall.

Wearing a dark armor and holding a trident embossed with a pair of coiling dragons, Gong Gong glared at Dishi Cha and growled, "Dishi Cha! Get out of my way right now! If you do what I said, our Gong Gong family will still appreciate you, and our agreement can

still work. If you dare to hinder me saving my ancestors, don't blame me for having no mercy!"

Dishi Cha looked at Gong Gong calmly and stood perfectly still in front of him, without making even a slight move.

Behind Dishi Cha, led by Yemo Tian, countless divine warriors and gods lined up perfectly in square arrays, sealing off the entire heaven.

These divine gods and warriors were from the Divine Origin Pool. Their eyes sparkled with a blood-red light. They stopped following Gong Gong's order, and instead, they were now under Dishi Cha's lead.

Dishi Cha burst into laughter, then slapped on Gong Gong's face heavily

"You, can you even bear to turn against me right now? How stupid you are. You actually dared to control these new divine beings with the secret blood-offering magic I provided. Didn't you just give these new divine beings to me for nothing?"

Chapter 1350: The Plan and the Despair

In the great hall in Heaven, Gong Gong stared at Dishi Cha with a pair of red eyes. However, the atmosphere in the hall wasn't even tense.

Gong Gong was all alone, facing Dishi Cha and the divine army led by Yemo Tian. The divine army was supposed to belong to him, but at the moment, those divine gods and warriors stood determinedly behind Yemo Tian, their eyes sparkling with a blood-red light.

Gong Gong gritted his teeth so tight that it even caused a creaking noise. But Dishi Cha and Yemo Tian were laughing, loudly, widely, triumphantly, and delightfully. One might hear the same laughter from an experienced hunter who saw a wild boar fall into his trap.

Hearing their laughter, Gong Gong's face blushed, and blood boiled. All of a sudden, Gong Gong let out a mouthful of blood which spread on the shiny floor.

"Dishi Cha, you sought cooperation with me. Is this a scheme from the beginning?" Gong Gong tremblingly pointed at Dishi Cha and growled.

"Don't describe this with the lowly word 'scheme'. This is a tiny part of a great plan." Dishi Cha took out an exquisite nail file and started carefully polishing his nails. In the meanwhile, he continued carelessly, "I am also an insignificant character of this great plan, while you, you were meant to be sacrificed from the start."

Shrugging, Dishi Cha smilingly looked at Gong Gong and continued in a gentle tone, "We will be needing a puppet in the end, that is the reason why you can still stay alive."

Puckering his lips, Dishi Cha blew away the dust ground off from

his fingernails, then continued blandly, "In fact, this puppet is not difficult to find. Many scums exist among human beings. These people are powerful and influential, standing at high positions, but are greedy and afraid of death. They can serve as our puppets. But, you are the most convenient one, and you have a satisfying background. Therefore, I decided to not kill you, and use you as a puppet instead."

Sighing slightly, he chuckled, "Because we need you to be the puppet, I brought the army here to protect you. Otherwise...Saving your ancestors? Do you think that you can defeat Ji Hao?"

In the hall, a divine mirror floated in the air. In the mirror, Ji Hao was wielding the gigantic Pan Gu bell like an ancient devil god. Each time he launched a strike, a tens of thousands of miles long section of a mountain range would collapse. Black and red mushroom clouds had been rising into the sky, and the earth-shaking booms could be heard from the mirror, echoing through the entire heaven.

"That bell is really nice." Floating inside the diamond-shaped crystal between the eyebrows of the destructive weapon, Yemo Tian laughed, "When I chop Ji Hao’s head off, I will take this bell."

"As you wish. This bell will certainly become your trophy." Dishi Cha politely bowed to Yemo Tian, then smilingly turned around, nodded to Gong Gong and said, "Do you know why I chose you to be the puppet?"

Gong Gong remained silent with a gloomy face.

Seeing Gong Gong’s unfriendly attitude, Dishi Cha smiled and started explaining solicitously.

"After we have conquered Pan Gu world, human beings will be enslaved. They will all become slaves, and they will be mining for us, growing all kinds of valuable crops for us. Or, we will arm them and turn them into slave warriors."

"But based on our experiences that we gained from the countless worlds that we have conquered in the past, human beings will need a leader who can manage them. We need to select this leader carefully. An influential, capable human being? No, it surely can't be a man like that. That kind of leader will certainly bring us troubles."

"What about a greedy, villainous one, who is afraid of death? Still, there will be troubles. This kind of leader will grow selfishness, desires, and the selfishness and desires will eventually turn into ambitions, which will cause inconveniences for us to govern the world."

"How about an enemy? Someone who owes all human beings a huge debt of blood, someone hated by all human beings? How perfect!"

"Because of the hatred, human beings will never be used by him. Because of the hatred, he will only be able to rule the humankind by relying on our strength. Also, because of the hatred, he will be as loyal as a dog, watching every move made by human beings, and graze those capable slaves for us!"

Yemo Tian laughed in a weird tone. Lying in the diamond-shaped crystal, he looked at Gong Gong and laughed so loudly, that he even had saliva spurting out of his mouth corners. Dishi Cha laughed as well.

"So, you see, except you, who else can serve so perfectly as this leader?" said Dishi Cha gently, "You raised the flood, and your armies killed countless human beings. After we conquer the humankind, you will become our mouthpiece to manage human beings for us.

"You will never be able to make use of human beings. For your own benefits, even for your life, you have to fix your eyes on the humankind constantly! Any sign of disturbance or trouble, you will snuff it yourself. You have to strife all possible revolt."

Sighing in satisfaction, Dishi Cha continued, "So perfect! You are such a perfect puppet. We have to ensure your safety. Therefore, you cannot go save your ancestors, because we don't need them!"

Gong Gong looked at Dishi Cha with a pale face. Slightly trembling, he screamed shrilly, "This flood, it's only for turning me into a deadly enemy of the humankind, isn't it?"

Dishi Cha showed the whites of his eyes. Hesitating for a while, he slightly nodded and said, "If you put it this way, you will be thinking too much about yourself. We need a clear navigational light. According to our calculation, when the twelve water worlds bump into Pan Gu world, a tremendous wave of power vibration will be released, and that power vibration will be strong enough to serve as a striking navigational light."

"This navigational light will guide the people that we have been expecting to Pan Gu world. And the real purpose of this flood is to confuse some people, to let them focus on the flood and neglect the truth underneath it."

"Are you saying that the power vibration generated by the bumps between Pan Gu world and the twelve world will guide some other people to Pan Gu world?" Gong Gong looked at Dishi Cha and asked. He was confused. Somehow, he also caught a sense of fear. Tremblingly, he looked at Dishi Cha and stuttered, "Who, who are they? Who...are coming to Pan Gu world?"

"My father!" Yemo Tian burst into laughter. In a dramatic tone, he said, "My incomparably noble and powerful father. Of course, it's not that nominal father of mine who gave me this lowly forename, 'Yemo'... I mean... my biological father! My real father!"

Smilingly raising his head, Yemo Tian murmured to himself, "My father, my noble father, my powerful father, he is coming to Pan Gu world. When he descends from the sky, when his invincible army sweeps across Pan Gu world, when Pan Gu world becomes a staging base of his army, all tens of thousands of worlds around

Pan Gu world will become his territories!"

"With the resources and fortune from those worlds, my father will definitely become the strongest being...Perhaps, he will be able to make the final breakthrough..."

Dishi Cha slightly coughed.

Yemo Tian chuckled, loudly and madly.

Gong Gong’s heart sank into a bottomless despair. He couldn’t accept his fate as an insignificant chess piece.

Chapter 1351: Wuzhi Qi's Hair

In a corner of the great hall, Wuzhi Qi carried his large club and abruptly took a step forward.

Stepping forward, Wuzhi Qi's body suddenly expanded to about thirty-meter-tall. As his long hair dazzled with a silver, cold light, torrents of water raised behind him, roaring in all directions, as heavy as mountains.

Xiang Liu and Kun Peng each burst with a loud roar, along with strong, fierce spirit creature power vibrations that were no weaker than Wuzhi Qi's. They blocked Wuzhi Qi's way like two sturdy metal walls. Three power streams bumped fiercely into each other, and caused a thunderous bang in the great hall, which generated frigid, rapidly flowing airstreams. They then condensed into countless fist-sized, sharp ice pieces, and scattered all over the floor.

Centered on Wuzhi Qi, Xiang Liu and Kun Peng, three enormous swirls emerged, roaring rumblingly. Xiang Liu and Kun Peng's powers generated a dark swirl and a blue swirl, violently clashing against the swirl around Wuzhi Qi's body. The three swiftly struck against each other, causing ear-piercing noises.

Wuzhi Qi trembled slightly. From his pair of eyes, two beams of cold light shone to tens of meters away. He stared straight at Kun Peng and Xiang Liu who blocked his way, especially the slowly spinning, hazy lotus on each of their foreheads.

"Did you throw yourselves into the laps of someone else?" murmured Wuzhi Qi.

"Following Gong Gong, our bloodlines might even be annihilated." said Xiang Liu loudly, "Anyhow, we need to figure out a way to save our bloodlines!"

"Under the guidance of our two master Shifu, our descendants

will live happily and safely, without any worries. Apart from that, we may truly attain immortal lives." Kun Peng's eyes sparkled brightly as he said, "Wuzhi Qi, you have to understand that it was never easy for us to survive until present times!"

Xiang Liu gasped and pushed out his palms, releasing a strong stream of power that transformed into a giant wave, smashing down at Wuzhi Qi. "In fact, our old lives were not bad. Back in the North Sea, no one dared to offend us. We were dominators. We could do anything we liked to those people, those living beings." Kun Peng continued with a high-pitched voice, "But, Gong Gong wants to be the new divine emperor, the owner of Pan Gu world... Even if he succeeded, we would still be his ministers, his followers. Would we earn any extra benefits? If he failed, as an eye for an eye, you know what human beings can do! Therefore, we have to find someone reliable to lean on!"

Wuzhi Qi's eyes glowed with that frosty light as he slowly raised his club.

Xiang Liu and Kun Peng' faces turned dark, as Kun Peng said slowly, "Wuzhi Qi, don't pretend to be loyal. You secretly visited Marquis Yao Ji Hao that night. You think we don't know that? You were also trying to save your own kids. What are you doing now? Are you crazy?"

Seeing Wuzhi Qi abruptly make a move, a faint pinkness appeared on Gong Gong's pale face. He felt relieved. It seemed that no matter what, he still had a loyal minister. This meant that the Gong Gong Family was not entirely a failure, because in the end, someone was still willing to follow this family!

But hearing Kun Peng, Gong Gong temporarily lost his eyesight and even vomited blood. "Wuzhi Qi! You, you, you, visited Ji Hao... You sneaky wild monkey!" Gong Gong screamed hysterically.

Wuzhi Qi curved his mouth cornered down and gave a twisted grin, then sneered, "Ah, Kun Peng, impressive! Except for that old

flood dragon, you're the strongest, most powerful one among the eight of us. I thought no one knew that I visited Ji Hao. After all, it was a secret!"

Kun Peng smiled and said blandly, "I even know what you said to him. You told him about the secret in the nine water eyes, didn't you? Otherwise, why would those former human emperors destroy the nine water eyes in one stroke?"

Wuzhi Qi gripped his club and caused a creaking noise. With a strange tone, he said, "Well, now that we have spoken everything out. I have nothing more to say. Kun Peng, Xiang Liu, get out the way. After all, we are still his ministers, and he is our master. This time, even if the Gong Gong Family will truly fall, I want him to have no regrets. I want to bring him to the nine water gates..."

Gong Gong's eyes shone dimly. Gasping loudly, he looked at Wuzhi Qi and didn't say a word.

Dishi Cha smiled mildly. While carefully polishing his nails, he said slowly, "Without my permission, Lord Gong Gong can't go anywhere. He should stay right here. When we conquer Pan Gu world, he will be ruling the humankind for us!"

Dishi Cha chuckled and continued, "After all, we've signed an agreement. According to it, we will help him to rule the humankind. We have to fulfill our promise. The result might not be so satisfying, but at least we are keeping our promise, aren't we?

The two hazy lotuses spinning on Xiang Liu and Kun Peng's foreheads glowed brighter and brighter as they continued with deep voices, "Wuzhi Qi, you can't leave either. Our master Shifu told us that you are destined to be one of us. You shall stay right here and worry about nothing. Master Shift will send his people here to welcome you."

Controlled by Yemo Tian, the destruction weapon's arm suddenly moved. An overwhelming power erupted, which made everyone in the hall shake. Dishi Cha wasn't prepared for this.

Consequently, he was put down to the ground, rolling on the floor.

"Oi, Kun Peng, Xiang Liu, I don’t know what you are doing, or what you want. But I have to warn you that you both are my captives now. In the future, you will both become my slaves. No matter how many tricks you want to play, keep them to yourselves. Otherwise...My destructive weapon is already thirsty!"

Yemo Tian roared with laughter. Under his control, the destructive weapon madly waved its arm and started fierce gusts of wind.

Wuzhi Qi narrowed his eyes, then looked at Gong Gong and said, "Lord Gong Gong, if I can send you to the nine water gates safely, all relationships I have with the Gong Gong family will end. Can you accept it?"

With a deep voice, Wuzhi Qi continued, "If I manage to do that, I, Wuzhi Qi, will no longer serve the Gong Gong family as a minister. I, Wuzhi Qi, and all my descendants, will live freely as creatures of this world, out of your control!"

"Wuzhi Qi!" Kun Peng and Xiang Liu growled together, "You can’t leave! Where can you go?"

Gong Gong remained silent for a while, then slowly nodded and said, "Alright. As long as you send me to the nine water gates and set me free, the relationship between you, Wuzhi Qi, and Gong Gong Family, will end!"

Kun Peng and Xiang Liu roared brightly. Their raised their palms and released a blinding golden light, shining on Wuzhi Qi’s body. In the meanwhile, Yemo Tian burst with a raging growl, following which, the destructive weapon spread its enormous hands and lunged to catch Wuzhi Qi.

Wuzhi Qi raised his head and roared to the sky. His silver, glistening long hair darted out from his skin. Every single hair suddenly became a Wuzhi Qi, thirty meters tall and wielding a

dark ice club, violently smacking everything that crossed his eyes.

Hundreds of thousands of Wuzhi Qi flew out of the hall and disarrayed the divine army around the great hall. Hundreds of thousands of dark ice clubs swung down, as those divine gods and warriors scattered right away.

While countless Wuzhi Qi attacked rampantly, Gong Gong silently disappeared from the hall.

Chapter 1352: A Sword in the Heart

The Taiji cloak transformed into a short skirt which shielded Ji Hao's crotch area. Baring his arms and chest, Ji Hao's muscles had been twitching, while scorching hot airstreams surged out from his pores. His long hair fluttered in the air as he raised the Pan Gu bell, roared like a beast, and violently smashed on the mountains on both sides of the third water gate.

Behind the Kui Gate, the second water gate was already broken by Ji Hao. In a thousand-mile-wide water channel, a turbid torrent was rushing, which looked like countless raging dragons roaring across. The inexhaustible water power was forcibly drawn into this water channel by the 'All Streams to the Final Land' great formation.

The flood surged in this water channel, striking on the mountains and causing muffled, thunderous noises. Fierce airstreams twisted and screamed in the water channel as they scraped layers of fine powder from the mountains, even raising fire sparkles.

Neither the surging flood nor the roaring gale could be louder than the rings of the Pan Gu bell.

Following the first bell ring, a long section of mountain range was turned into ashes. Along with the second bell ring, a black and red mushroom cloud rose into the sky.

Countless water-kind spirit creatures blocked Ji Hao's way overconfidently, shouting, yelling, and wielding their weapons as they attempted to stop Ji Hao from moving forward. The Pan Gu bell descended and generated a storm of Chaos power, as all water-kind spirit creatures perished.

The third water gate was halfway broken. With sweat streaming down from his back, Ji Hao laughed out wildly. Gradually, his body expanded to thousands of meters tall, and so did the bell. The

heavy bell smashed down, over and over again, and along with the bell rings, the mountains were flattened, one after another.

"You can never stop me!" While smashing with all strength, Ji Hao looked at the sky and shouted. No one knew who was he talking to. "Look, you can’t stop me. The nine water gates can’t stop me, and neither can you!"

Tens of strong and fierce enormous water-kind spirit creatures raised giant waves and pounced on Ji Hao. Their weapons landed on Ji Hao’s body, on his vital body parts. But all weapons shattered. Not even one weapon managed to leave a single mark on his smooth skin.

That was a severely cultivated Pan Gu body, which was strengthened by the cultivation method with nine turns. These water-kind spirit creatures were at the level of ordinary Divine Magi, and their weapons were no supreme pieces. How could they ever hurt even a hair of Ji Hao?

The tens of water-kind spirit creatures chased after Ji Hao while he laughed thunderously. The Pan Gu bell hovered around his body and turned those water-kind spirit creatures into meat paste. He swung his arm backward and grabbed a full moon golden shell crab, who was freaked out. Ji Hao widely opened his mouth and bit on the crab’s body.

Crack! The crab’s meters thick, especially hard shell was crushed by Ji Hao’s transparent teeth. A strong destructive power spread out on the crab’s broken shell and blew up all its shells, exposing its tender meat.

"Sorry, I’m hungry!" Ji Hao flicked his wrist. Followed his move, golden crab meat flew out of the crab’s body in a large stream, looking like a golden dragon as it fell into Ji Hao’s mouth.

"Ji Hao, you do have a good appetite!" Followed by a resonant shout, Si Wen Ming mounted on a muscular winged dragon and flew over from a long distance away. "You, you, why did you kill all

those elders? They, their leaders have already told Emperor Shun!" Si Wen Ming growled, even louder than the roaring flood.

Ji Hao raised his eyebrows and laughed out loud.

They had told Emperor Shun already?

Even if they filed a lawsuit against him, what should Ji Hao be afraid of?

"They can sue me, but what is here to be afraid of? Those were a bunch of incapable old dogs who knew nothing but seizing food from the others' bowls. I killed them, I surely did! If they don't stop messing with us, we should kill their leaders too!" Ji Hao raised the Pan Gu bell and smashed down smilingly, flattening another tens of thousands of miles long section of mountain range. Dragon-like dense earth power streams rose from the mountains, being swallowed by the bell.

"There will be great troubles!" Si Wen Ming leaped down from the dragon's back and walked to Ji Hao with big steps. He looked at Ji Hao and said in a deep voice, "Are you truly...not afraid?"

"I did no wrong, so why should I be afraid?" Looking at Si Wen Ming, Ji Hao grinned, "Uncle Wen Ming, did you come here to talk these nonsenses to me? You saw how tired I am. Come help me!"

Laughing loudly, Ji Hao untied the mountain-driving whip from his waist and threw it to Si Wen Ming, then said, "Work, uncle! We have work to do! We do what we should be doing. As for those nasty people, dirty things...I have a sword in my heart, and that sword can kill everyone in the world who deserves to die! What should I be afraid of?"

Si Wen Ming paused briefly, then grabbed the whip, slashed on Ji Hao's butt, and said, "Good boy! You have no fear, so why should I? Haha, those powerful ancient families, haha, haha, as you said, a bunch of old dogs!"

With his thunderous laugh, Si Wen Ming's every single pore

glowed with a dazzling yellow light. Thin strands of purple mist were faintly visible in the yellow light. As Si Wen Ming burst into thunderous roars, his coarse shirt shattered, and his muscles began swelling. His body expanded rapidly, and within a blink of an eye, he reached tens of thousands of meters in height.

Roaring again, the pure earth power condensed into a translucent armor and covered Si Wen Ming's body. This armor was shaped like an enormous bear with a strong pair of wings. The gigantic bear raised the mountain-driving whip and lashed at the mountains on both sides of the third water gate with all its strength.

Boom! The whip was far less powerful than the Pan Gu bell. However, it was also a supreme treasure, especially for gathering the earth power and controlling all mountains in the world. Once the whip moved, all mountains in an area of over one hundred thousand miles radius began shaking. On both sides of the water channel, all the mountains collapsed and disappeared all of a sudden.

Under Si Wen Ming's control, the mountain-driving whip worked three times more efficiently than Ji Hao with the Pan Gu bell!

That fierce winged dragon roared rumblingly towards the sky. It leaped into the air, expanded its body to tens of thousands of miles long, and boosted up its strength. It struck on the mountains down below with its claws, fangs, horns, and tail. Every single strike it launched could tear apart a mountain.

From a long distance away, strong and resonant roars could be heard. Large groups of human warriors trod on the flood and galloped over. Tens of thousands of winged dragons hovered above their heads, releasing dense yellow-colored earth power streams from their mouths.

"Brothers! This is the final battle!" Wielding the whip, Si Wen

Ming roared, "Break the nine water gates and unchoke the water channel. Then, Pan Gu world will have no more flood!"

"When the flood is gone, we can go home, grow crops, build houses, hug our wives, and have kids!" Si Wen Ming laughed, "I miss my wife and son!"

"When the flood is gone, we can go home, grow crops, build houses with our wives and kids!" Countless human warriors laughed out wildly and broke into the third water gate with a thriving passion.

Ji Hao laughed out loud too. These were true human warriors, unlike those coward, greedy so-called ‘elites’!"

Chapter 1353: Make it Personal

Without those large family ‘elites’, without all kinds of internal conflicts about power and benefits, and those elders who were as annoying as flies, with nothing in their brains but their own interests, the nine water gates had now been breaking rapidly!

Both Ji Hao and Si Wen Ming fully released their powers, expanding their bodies to tens of thousands of meters tall. Any strike they launched could tear down an entire mountain. Tens of thousands of strong and brave winged dragons and countless tired, yet passionate human warriors followed closely behind Si Wen Ming and Ji Hao. They were roaring and laughing while creating a broad water channel from those collapsed mountains.

Giant waves were crushed by the sharp claws of those winged dragons, as fierce gales were calmed down by their strong wings.

Countless water-kind spirit creatures rushed over, but as Ji Hao’s Pan Gu bell rang, all of them were turned into ashes. A few lucky ones survived, but before they recovered from the great shock brought by the death of their comrades, muscular human warriors rushed up, raised heavy weapons, and minced them before throwing them into the water.

On the water surface, Shermie, Heng Xing and more and more shrimp warriors under their lead raised giant waves while shouting and yelling at the other water-kind spirit creatures. They were continuously recruiting more shrimp and crab warriors, and other low-grade water-kind spirit creatures.

The number of low-grade water-kind warriors under Ji Hao’s command grew larger and larger. They were not so strong, but when they arrayed orderly on top of the giant waves, roaring with bright and strong voices, they frightened many other water-kind spirit creatures. A great number of water-kind spirit creatures under Gong Gong’s command sneakily dropped their weapons and

fled.

Gong Gong didn’t show up, neither did his eight senior ministers. The nine water gates were flattening, just like the morale of these water-kind spirit creatures.

"Brothers! Let’s do it!" Raising the bell, Ji Hao smashed tens of mountains in front of him, along with a large group of blood sharks who were bearing their teeth towards him. Swinging his gigantic arms, Ji Hao turned his head around and shouted, "When the flood is gone, come to Yao Mountain territory! You can have as much booze and meat in there!"

Drumming his chest, Ji Hao narrowed his eyes, curved his lips upward, and continued, "If your villages are damaged, if you and your families have nowhere to stay and nothing to eat, come to my Yao Mountain territory. I will take care of your entire families!"

Covered in wounds, countless exhausted human warriors raised their weapons and hailed Ji Hao.

As Ji Hao said, the homes of many of these warriors had been damaged completely, leaving their families destitute and homeless. As Ji Hao said that they could go to Yao Mountain territory when the flood was gone, these warriors decided to go!

With all his muscles tightened, Ji Hao raised the Pan Gu bell. In Ji Hao, these warriors saw strength, an unstoppable strength, that made their blood boil. With such a leader, the clan would certainly thrive!

Si Wen Ming chuckled, while gently lashing on Ji Hao’s butt with the mountain-driving whip again. The flood was not yet gone, but Ji Hao had already started inviting people to his territory!

It was good though. Si Wen Ming looked at those thrilled warriors delightfully. These exhausted but passionate warriors were all decent human beings! In the past few years, these warriors fought so hard. It would be wonderful for the warriors to join Yao

Mountain territory with their families!

Si Wen Ming's clan was large in population. As a new marquis, Ji Hao had a broad territory, but not enough people.

"Ji Hao, when the flood is gone, I will help you to invite more people to your place." Si Wen Ming said smilingly. "Many clans are devastated. I think those people will be happy to join your Yao Mountain territory!"

The flood did not only damage the territories of human clans, it had also taken away the people who lived in those territories.

For some human clans, most of their people were swallowed by the flood, and the remaining ones were not strong enough to rebuild their homelands. Their best choice would be moving to the territories of powerful marquises or earls like Ji Hao, or joining large clans; this was the only way for them to continue their bloodlines.

Ji Hao laughed out loud. He and Si Wen Ming roared resoundingly, then broke the waves and pushed the frontline a giant step further.

In front of them, the water-kind army was completely routed. High-grade water-kind spirit creatures were slaughtered by Ji Hao or frightened away, while shrimp and crab warriors and other low-grade spirit creatures were gathering towards Shermie, becoming Ji Hao's warriors.

The third water gate, broken.

The fourth water gate, broken.

The fifth, sixth, seventh, eighth were all broken by Ji Hao, Si Wen Ming, and the army under their commands in the next three months.

Very soon, the 'All Streams to the Final Land' great formation was going to be completed. In front of them was the ninth water gate, named 'Huai Gate'.

Carrying the bell, Ji Hao trod on the water and approached the Huai Gate with giant steps.

All of sudden, a war drum echoed through the clouds. Before the Huai Gate, countless different sized whirlpool emerged on the water surface. From each whirlpool, a flood dragon darted into the sky and released a strong cold power which froze the rain into water-tank-sized ice blocks, falling from the sky.

Loud thuds could be heard without an end as countless different sized ice blocks fell into the water from the sky. Within a blink of an eye, the water surface was filled with ice. The flood dragon king slowly showed up from a frigid gust of wind, wearing a long blue robe, his hands held behind his body.

"Flood Dragon King, you can’t stop me!" Looking at the flood dragon king, Ji Hao slapped heavily on the bell carried on his shoulder.

"I’m not here to stop you!" The flood dragon king looked at Ji Hao and said. As a slight trace of helplessness flashed across his eyes, he continued, "I’m here to kill you, under an order!"

A straight water column rose from the water surface before the Huai Gate. On top of it, a dark jade throne released a fierce cold power. Gong Gong sat straight on the throne, with a hazy lotus slowly spinning between his eyebrows. Clear water streams coiled around his body, and within the water, countless faintly visible white lotuses were sparkling.

"Marquis Yao Ji Hao!" Gong Gong rested his hands on his knees, looked at Ji Hao expressionlessly, and said, "You are strong. My twenty-seven ancestors all died in your hands! Good, very good! You owe our Gong Gong Family a debt of blood!"

Si Wen Ming carried the mountain-driving whip and rushed over from behind. Tens of thousands of winged dragons hovered in the sky, roaring thunderously. Wielding the whip, Si Wen Ming pointed at Gong Gong and growled, "Gong Gong, your scheme..."

Gong Gong waved his hand and interrupted Si Wen Ming, "Si Wen Ming, this has nothing to do with you. I came here only for what happened between Ji Hao and my Gong Gong Family."

Gong Gong sneered and continued harshly, "Ji Hao, come on, fight me to death. Winning or losing, I will stay out of the way and let you break the ninth gate! Otherwise, no one can go anywhere forward!"

Ji Hao was surprised. Pausing briefly, he laughed aloud and said, "Gong Gong, are you making this personal? Are you possessed by a ghost? Or...did someone tell you to do so?"

Gong Gong sneered without responding. Kun Peng, Xiang Liu, Yu Ancestor, and Wuzhi Qi showed up one after another, each with a hazy lotus spinning between their eyebrows, and a twisted or despairing smile on their faces.

Chapter 1354: No Choice

Beyond the sky, in an indescribable, immeasurable place...

An endless, dense purple mist had been rising, forming a platform that carried two cottages. Standing before the left cottage was a linden tree, and before the right cottage was a clear pond. Blooming in the pond was a colorful lotus, surrounded by three to five broad leaves.

Under the linden tree, Priest Hua and Priest Mu sat, facing each other.

Priest Hua had been trembling slightly. On his skin, tiny spell symbols were twisting and moving, like thousands of ants crawling quickly under his skin. Weirdly, his face was transparent. Through his face, one could see another face, an incomparably beautiful face, without any features of gender.

As the lips of that beautiful face slightly opened, a strange voice echoed through the entire cloud platform.

"Give up, Hua, my friend... Open your heart, feel my power. I am Great Freedom. Feel my power, and merge with me. Your body will serve as our foundation. Merge with me, and we will become the strongest being in this world."

"We will be invincible... We will be able to do anything we want. You can have all you ever wanted."

"We will build a new sect, recruit countless adherents. All living creatures in this world will become our followers! Merge with me, and your dream will become like a tiny wish that we can easily make it come true!"

"Why are you still fighting back? You have already sensed my power, my greatness. Why are you still fighting?"

Seven-colored flame spurted out from Priest Hua’s pores. Priest Hua smiled bitterly to Priest Mu and said, "This is difficult.

Brother, thank you for helping."

Priest Mu looked at Priest Hua, also with a bitterness on his face, and responded gently, "We are almost connected, so no need to thank me. This is indeed difficult and dangerous, but if you survive, you will improve largely."

Priest Hua nodded slowly. Same as Priest Mu, he completely ignored what that beautiful face inside him said. He waved his hand worryingly. Followed his move, the Huai Gate area appeared in a sphere of light, in the air.

"Brother, our plan..." Once Priest Hua began talking, his face twisted suddenly, and sweat dripped down his forehead in large drops. The cold and colorful sweat drops immediately became five-colored beads once they made contact with the air, then tinkled on the ground.

Great Freedom laughed, then pulled a face inside Priest Hua's body and said, "Your plans are all ruined! Hehe, twenty-seven old Gong Gongs, all died, and you failed to get any of them alive. The eight senior ministers under Gong Gong's command, how many of them have you managed to control by trying so hard?"

"Not to mention the fact that those strong water-kind spirit creatures, the ones you recruited earlier, who were supposed to serve your sect as guardians, were mostly killed. I'm afraid, the number of water-kind spirit creature that will end up in your hands will be less than ten percent of the number you estimated!"

"You also planned to seize this flood as an opportunity to protect human beings and preach your religion, but you failed in this too! You failed, completely! Your plans are all ruined by that boy named Ji Hao!"

"Ahyaya, Priest Hua, you are in an unstable condition right now, so you can't lose your temper. Otherwise, well, just like this..."

Great Freedom burst into a high-pitched series of laughter as

Priest Hua quivered intensely, spraying a mouthful of blood on Priest Mu's chest, which turned into thumb-sized, colorful diamonds and scattered all over the ground.

Priest Mu reached out his hands, his fingers coiled in a bright green light. With a serious look, he pressed his fingers on Priest Hua's temples.

Great Freedom's face twitched instantly. He screamed shrilly, then that beautiful face inside Priest Hua's body gradually faded. Priest Mu continued sending the green light into Priest Hua's body. Together, the green light and strands of five-colored light inside Priest Hua's body gradually suppressed Great Freedom.

"You can only suppress me, but can never kill me!" Great Freedom's voice came from deep inside Priest Hua's body, "I am no longer a sky devil. Hua, my friend, I am the obsession in your heart. I am your desire, and I am your evilness. I am generated from all evil intentions you have!"

"You can never get rid of me! One day, I will devour you!"

"Haha, when we finally merge, I will kill Priest Mu, and I will devour him too! I will become the only dominator of Pan Gu world!"

Great Freedom's wild laughter faded. A few drops of cold sweat oozed out of Priest Mu's forehead as he slowly took back his hands, straightened his body, and looked at Priest Hua with face wrinkled and eyebrows knitted. He said, "Brother, you should never lose your temper while fighting against this devil. Perhaps, you can try my great Dao of quietus."

Priest Hua gave a bitter grin, then helplessly shook his head and said, "Brother, if I tried your great Dao of quietus, my own Dao of evolvement would be broken. I would lose at least a half of my cultivation that I gained through countless centuries of effort. How could I?"

Sitting under the tree while facing each other, neither of them knew what else to say.

A long while later, Priest Mu said in a bland tone, "In this case, I will create a new, powerful magic, especially for restraining all kinds of sky devils. Hmm, evil things... Do they really believe that we can do nothing to them? It's just that we have too many things to do, and no time to waste on them. But right now, I am enraged."

Priest Hua slowly nodded, his eyes filled with a faint intent of killing.

Together, they glanced at that light sphere in the air, which was showing the images of the Huai Gate area. "Then brother, what Gong Gong did this time is such a good opportunity. Are we really letting it go?" Abruptly, Priest Hua said aloud.

Priest Mu narrowed his eyes and responded blandly, "All our plans are ruined by Ji hao...That Great Freedom is a sky devil, but he was right. This time, our harvest will be even smaller than ten percent of our estimation. And the cause of all this... is Ji Hao."

Priest Mu sneered and continued, "Three months ago, Gong Gong escaped from the heaven with Wuzhi Qi's help. I captured them myself and forced them to join our sect. I even consumed my own life-force for Gong Gong. I strengthened his body with the divine light emitted from my tree heart, and gave him an 'invincible linden body'. So easily, he attained the result that is supposed to cost him hundreds of centuries of severe cultivation."

"I forced Gong Gong to give up on the flood, and make the whole thing personal. I ordered him to kill Ji Hao in the name of vengeance...Thus, not even Yu Yu can say a word about Ji Hao's death when he returns." Curving down his lip corners, Priest Mu said in a low voice, with that bitterness remaining on his face.

Priest Hua smiled, then nodded slowly and said, "Brother, you can always solve a problem in a perfect way. Ji Hao, he has to die!"

Priest Mu nodded and responded coldly, "If he survives, he will attain immeasurable natural reward power and fortune when the flood is gone. The natural reward and fortune he earns will also land on Yu Yu and his sect. If that does happen, would our disciples still have a future?"

Chapter 1355: Slaughter A God Like Killing A Dog

Before the Huai Gate, Gong Gong stood up from the throne.

A pair of North Sea dark dragons guarded on both his sides. As Gong Gong picked up a trident, which was embossed with two coiled dragons, an anciently styled and undecorated dark armor rose from under his feet and quickly covered his entire body.

His face was pale. On his chin, three wisps of beard fluttered without being blown by any wind. Treading on a wave, Gong Gong approached Ji Hao step by step.

"Ji Hao, Marquis Yao Ji Hao! Come on, come on... Today, one of us has to die right here. You, or me, one of us will die!" Looking at Ji Hao in the eyes, the lotus spinning between Gong Gong's eyebrows turned clearer and clearer. Sneering in a bitter, despairing way, Gong Gong gritted his teeth and said, "Come on. As long as you accept my challenge, I will order my people to clear the way right now to let you dredge the water channel."

"Ji Hao, stay calm!" Si Wen Ming grabbed Ji Hao's hand.

"I am calm. My mind is very clear right now. And... I will kill him!" Ji Hao twisted his wrist and easily freed himself from Si Wen Ming's hand. Dropping the Pan Gu bell, he pulled out Pan Gu Dragon Mark. Baring his upper body and thighs, with the short Taiji cloak shirt wrapped around his waist and his long hair fluttering in the air, he lunged towards Gong Gong with giant steps.

"Alright, tell your dogs to get out of the way. We will fight now. Conveniently, Uncle Wen Ming can continue dredging the water channel with his people!" Ji Hao pointed at Gong Gong and shouted, "Now, tell your dogs to leave!"

The word 'dogs' infuriated Xiang Liu, Kun Peng, and Yu

Ancestor. They burst into thunderous, raging roars, and so did their large groups of descendants standing behind them. Some heavily armored young descendants of Xiang Liu, Kun Peng, and Yu Ancestor gripped their weapons and looked at Ji Hao and Si Wen Ming, seeming to be excited.

"Clear the way, let them dredge the water channel. We've lost on this one. But one day, we will..." Gong Gong waved his hand and growled.

Ji Hao didn't let him finish his speech. "One day? You have no future! This flood you raised, how many human beings has it killed? You have no future... There is no more 'one day' for you."

Two giant waves bumped violently into each other, while Ji Hao and Gong Gong faced off against each other, hundreds of miles from each other. They both trod on enormous waves, with fierce water torrents surging around them and bumping against each other. By Gong Gong's sides, the pair of North Sea dark dragons roared towards the sky, and around Ji Hao, the two fire dragons released raging fires, showing no sign of weakness.

Mr. Crow stood on Ji Hao's head, cawing shrilly along with the pair of young fire dragons. With his help, the pair of fire dragons seemed to be even stronger and fiercer.

Before Ji Hao and Gong Gong moved, the pair of dark dragons pounced impatiently, as they failed to restrain the wildness in their hearts. Roaring thunderously, they leaped up. The flood and the raging fire clashed, and the four, tens of thousands of meters long dragons started battling.

Mr. Crow spread his wings and cawed resonantly, rising into the sky. Next, he swiftly dove, with his claws swishing towards the eyes of a dark dragon. The dark dragon nimbly turned around its head and bumped Mr. Crow's claws away with its horn.

From under Mr. Crow's stomach, his third claw reached out at lightning speed and penetrated an eye of the dark dragon, digging

that black, crystal-like eye out of its socket.

The dark dragon howled in pain. It raised its head and attempted to attack Mr. Crow with cold mist. But a fire dragon widely opened its jaws and bit into the dark dragon's neck with its sharp, shiny fangs. Crack! The bone creaking noise was so loud. Sparing no effort, the fire dragon shook its head and almost tore the dark dragon's head off.

Xiang Liu, Kun Peng, and the others didn't clear the way. Instead, they stood right before the Huai Gate, silently looking at Gong Gong and the four intensely fighting dragons.

Si Wen Ming didn't send his people to continue dredging the water channel. He trod on the flood, gripped the mountain-driving whip with his left hand, and pulled out the Xuanyuan sword with his right hand!

The golden Xuanyuan sword looked like a small sun, shining with a golden light in Si Wen Ming's hands, which was strong but not dazzling. Seeing Si Wen Ming's sword, Xiang Liu and Kun Peng instantly had their faces twitching, as if they couldn't believe their own eyes.

"Emperor Shun hasn't abdicated yet, but Si Wen Ming already has the Xuanyuan sword in his hands?"

If Si Wen Ming ascended to the throne, all non-human creatures would suffer! Emperor Shun was generous, but Si Wen Ming was not like him. Si Wen Ming was as warm as a spring breeze to human beings, but to non-human creatures, he was much more violent and brutal than Emperor Shun.

Gong Gong saw the Xuanyuan sword held in Si Wen Ming's hands and cursed with a low voice. Then, he raised the trident, pointed at Ji Hao, and said, "Marquis Yao Ji Hao, how many plans of mine have you ruined? You have everything to do with my son's death. If I knew all this would happen, I would have killed you long ago."

"Kill me?" Ji Hao smiled. He raised his head and recalled all the conflicts that happened between him and Northern Wasteland people ever since he came to Midland. Pondering carefully, Ji Hao shook his head, then sighed and said, "Gong Gong, ruled by you, human beings in Northern Wasteland have all become scums! In fact, old dogs like you who are completely useless to the humankind should have been killed long ago!"

Gong Gong's eyes turned glowing red. He wanted to say something for himself, but Ji Hao didn't give him the chance.

What else could he say?

Huai Gate was the last water gate. Breaking this gate, the flood-control mission would be accomplished. Even though the twelve water worlds had still been merging with Pan Gu world, the excessive water power could no longer cause any harm.

'Kill Gong Gong, dredge the water channel, then go back to Yao Mountain City for my own life!' That was what Ji Hao thought.

In the past few years, he was running about restlessly, fighting in the flood. He was really tired.

Without worry, fear, or hesitation, with a calm and clear mind, Ji Hao wielded Pan Gu Dragon Mark and made a sword move. For the first time, his spirit power, strength and spirit star power combined so perfectly in this move. The moves of sky-opening, earth-splitting, everything-grow, everything-perish and all living beings reincarnate were combined, while the seventh turn of the cultivation method with nine turns was triggered. All of Ji Hao's strength, spirit star power, and spirit power exploded through this sword move!

Making the Big Dipper step, Ji Hao merged Yu Yu sword intent with this sword move. All of a sudden, the intent of killing Gong Gong sensed from this strike launched by Ji Hao grew thousands of times stronger.

A beam of sword light flashed across the sky and split Gong Gong's trident into two. His armor glowed with a dim black light, then was sliced into two as well. Gong Gong's lips twitched. Countless leaf-like green spell symbols emerged on his skin, but immediately exploded into green light spots, drifting away in the wind.

Gong Gong was split into two by Ji Hao!

Xiang Liu, Kun Peng, Yu Ancestor, Wuzhi Qi and the flood dragon king exclaimed out loud. Gong Gong was much more powerful than before, so how could he be killed by Ji Hao so easily? Ji Hao, the human being, killed Gong Gong with one single sword move. Exactly how powerful was he now?

"Gong Gong? Hehe! The Water God? Hehe! Killing you, a so-called god, is as simple as slaughtering a dog!"

Ji Hao raised Pan Gu Dragon Mark, then coldly looked at Xiang Liu and the others, and said, "Kneel and surrender... or die!"

Chapter 1356: Spirit Creatures Attack

Outside the Huai Gate, the flood was surging, and the gale was roaring. Countless human warriors looked at where Gong Gong died, stunned, without making even the slightest sound.

The current Gong Gong, who raised this blood, died just like this. He didn't even have a chance to fight back as Ji Hao swung his sword down and killed him right on the spot.

A long while later, Xiang Liu murmured to himself with a hideous look, "Prince Wuyou is dead too. The Gong Gong Family has no successor. Those old Gong Gongs who returned from the Chaos are all gone. Gong Gong...The Gong Gong Family was destroyed... just like this?"

Kun Peng's eyes sparkled brightly. In surprise, he said in a low voice thrillingly, "Dead, all dead. Gong Gong Family men are all dead, which means I no longer need to keep the vow I made back then,"

A spirit creature power was released from Kun Peng's body, which grew stronger and stronger. Gradually, the strong power stream rose straight to the sky and looked like an enormous Kun Peng bird. Within a blink of an eye, the overwhelming power stream had expanded to a terrifying degree. The blue spirit creature power stream transformed into dense clouds, spreading out and releasing a mighty power vibration, that even forced back Xiang Liu, Yu Ancestor, Wuzhi Qi, and the others around Kun Peng.

"Great, today, I am free again! Haha! From now on, I can go anywhere in the world!"

Before his voice faded, Kun Peng howled shrilly in pain. With a twisted face, he looked at the blood-red sword piercing out of his chest. No one noticed when Yemo Shayi showed up behind Kun Peng and pierced his sword into Kun Peng's chest, seriously

wounding him at his proudest moment!

From behind, Yemo Shayi gripped Kun Peng's neck with his ice-cold, soft fingers. As he put forth his strength through his five fingers, he squeezed Kun Peng's neck like five strong serpents. Kun Peng boosted his power up as much as possible, barely managing to protect himself from having his neck broken by Yemo Shayi.

"You...Shameless!" Kun Peng stuttered.

"Hehe, haha!" Yemo Shayi laughed expressionlessly. His laughter changed tens of times within a single moment. Gripping the sword hilt with his right hand, Yemo Shayi suddenly twisted the sword, and mercilessly crushed Kun Peng's heart with the sword edge.

"If I still had He Tu and Luo Shu, you, you could never hurt me!" murmured Kun Peng stutteringly while his eyes sparkled. At the moment, he missed nothing more than He Tu and Luo Shu. The pair of treasures ran away from him because of Ji Hao.

"Noisy!" Yemo Shayi responded blandly. He opened his erect eye and triggered his Dark Sun power. Through the sword in his hand, a dreadful devouring power drilled into Kun Peng's body and began absorbing Kun Peng's spirit blood.

"Kill him!" Behind Kun Peng, his descendants burst into raging roars. Nearly a hundred Kun Peng birds opened their mouths together and inhaled deeply towards Yemo Shayi.

Bang! The space around Yemo Shayi collapsed. This was called 'Kun Peng inhaling', a natural ability of Kun Peng birds. Under its effect, even the space of Pan Gu world was shattered.

Yemo Shayi disappeared like a ghost the moment before the sky collapsed. He easily pierced his sword into Kun Peng's chest and devoured thirty percent of Kun Peng's power and spirit blood, then disappeared without a trace.

"People!" Xiang Liu screamed, "Lord Gong Gong raised the flood, but we never agreed! So, if human beings want to control the

flood, let them be! When the flood is gone, we can all live good lives!"

"But..." Xiang Liu changed his tone and shouted, "No matter how many mistakes Lord Gong Gong had made, he was still our master! For countless years, we served the Gong Gong Family. But now, our Master's bloodline is sniffed! We have to take revenge for our master!"

"Our enemy is not the humankind, not Si Wen Ming, not Emperor Shun! Our enemy, our only enemy, is Ji Hao!" Yu Ancestor leaped up and yelled while spraying poisonous gas and sands. Pointing at Ji Hao, he shouted hysterically, "All my boys, listen to my order. Do not hurt even a hair of any other human being! With all your powers, kill Ji Hao!"

Kun Peng, Xiang Liu, Wuzhi Qi, Yu Ancestor, the flood dragon king, and many of their descendants now had a clearly visible lotus spinning quickly between their eyebrows. The same lotuses could be seen in their pupils as well. Vividly, green stripes emerged under their skins, as their body conditions, physical strength and defensive powers had all been rising rapidly.

'Linden bodies' was a body strengthening method that only elite disciples under Priest Mu's guide could learn. Clearly, Kun Peng and all the others had mastered it, as if they had been cultivating themselves in this way for tens of thousands of years.

Under the effect of their 'linden bodies', their spirit creature powers turned much purer than before, even turning sacred.

They simply neglected the flood, and instead, made the whole thing personal, completely against Ji Hao. They 'simply' wanted to take revenge for Gong Gong. Therefore, they attempted to kill Ji Hao!

Except for Wuzhi Qi, these powerful ancient creatures who had betrayed Gong Gong long ago, each showed such a loyal face. Leading their descendants, they roared thunderously and marched

towards Ji Hao.

In order to make this look reasonable, they only put their own descendants into the battle, and left the water-kind army aside. They clearly understood that since they shouted out ‘avenging Gong Gong’, they couldn’t put even one shrimp warrior into this battle. After all, if they did that, the whole thing would become different.

They didn’t know why Priest Mu forced them to make this whole thing personal, then kill Ji Hao with an excuse like that. But somehow, Kun Peng and the others felt that Priest Mu was very afraid and worried. He wanted to kill Ji Hao, but this could only be done for a personal cause, and could not have anything to do with the flood.

Excitedly, Kun Peng, Xiang Liu, and Yu Ancestor rushed at the front, especially Kun Peng, who suffered a sword strike just now. With a pair of red eyes, he was ahead of everyone else.

The flood dragon king followed behind Kun Peng, Xiang Liu and Yu Ancestor expressionlessly, with an army of flood dragons. A frosty power had been releasing from his body as he fixed his eyes on Ji Hao and murmured to himself, "You can’t blame me, Marquis Yao Ji Hao...I, have to do this with no efforts spared."

Kun Peng and the others roared loudly, but when they were still over ten miles away from Ji Hao, a strong cold power stream surged out of the flood dragon king’s mouth, transformed into a three-hundred-meters-long ice dragon, and surpassed Kun Peng and the others, diving straight down to Ji Hao.

Watching those crazily roaring spirit creatures approach, Ji Hao waved his hand with a faint smile on his face. The Taiji universe mirror transformed into a dim silver light and suddenly appeared before his face. The ice dragon released by the flood dragon king darted into the light, then flew out between Kun Peng’s descendants and exploded rumblingly. Countless sharp ice thorns

burst and tore over ten little Kun Peng birds apart.

"Flood Dragon King, you are old but vigorous. So strong!" Ji Hao laughed out wildly, then gave a shout to Si Wen Ming. Pulling out Pan Gu Dragon Mark, he rushed into the crowd of spirit creatures.

Chapter 1357: Yao Mountain People Kill Spirit Creatures

Without protecting himself with the Pan Gu bell, Ji Hao straightened his neck and bumped towards Kun Peng when the latter smashed a giant hammer down towards his head.

A thunderous bang was generated, while dazzling fire sparkles rose. Tens of cracks appeared on the dark, water-tank-sized hammer held in Kun Peng's hands, but the skin on Ji Hao's forehead didn't even turn red.

"Such a strong head!" Kun Peng screamed. A cloud rose from under his feet and brought him backward. Saw the cracks on his hammer left by Ji Hao's head, Kun Peng was nearly freaked out. He even forgot about those descendants of his who were killed by the ice dragon just now.

"And strong knees!" Kun Peng drew back fast, but not as fast as the golden bridge.

Ji Hao's body shone with a clear light as he suddenly appeared in Kun Peng's arms like a ghost. Lifting his left thigh, Ji Hao gave Kun Peng a heavy knee strike on the lower belly. Kun Peng's eyeballs bulged from his eye sockets for about three inches. Opening his mouth, he gasped for air and caused a hissing noise. He felt as if countless glowing-red iron sticks had poked into his stomach, burning his internal organs.

It was painful. He had never suffered such a great pain. It hurt even more than the sword strike from Yemo Shayi. The pain almost drove Kun Peng crazy, and made him despair.

Kun Peng widely opened his mouth and let out a large mouthful of blood. Floating in midair, he was stiff, and couldn't move for a long while.

Seeing Kun Peng fall into a dangerous situation, Yu Ancestor

hurriedly opened his mouth and sprayed a puff of purple colored poisonous sand towards Ji Hao. The sand rubbed against each other and started dazzling electric bolts, along with deep, rumbling thunders.

Gong Gong purified and strengthened Yu Ancestor's body with the essence water in the heaven. After that, Yu Ancestor's powers had been improved largely. The sand he sprayed out was not only poisonous, it could also generate dark thunders flame, and was hundreds of times more powerful than before.

Ji Hao chuckled, then grabbed Kun Peng's neck and clenched his fingers.

Crack! Yemo Shayi failed to break Kun Peng's neck, but Ji Hao didn't. Kun Peng's body couldn't stand Ji Hao's strength. Ji Hao almost tore his head off. Kun Peng's broken neck bones pierced out of his skin, looking like thorns of a hedgehog.

Throwing Kun Peng away, Ji Hao turned around, facing Yu Ancestor's poisonous sand and dark thunder-flame.

The puff of sand struck on Ji Hao's chest. Every grain of sand had been spinning speedily, trying to drill into Ji Hao's skin. Ji Hao's jade-white, smooth skin glowed with a dim Chaos light as fire sparkles were sent up against that skin. But, not even a single grain of sand managed to drill into his skin.

Spinning for a while, the sands exploded. Each grain of sand blasted into a dark thunderbolt and exploded on Ji Hao's chest. Around Ji Hao, the dark clouds, the storm, and the flood were all dispelled, and the fire and air blasts caused by the series of explosions swept across the area with a radius of thousand miles, forcing many descendants of Xiang Liu and Kun Peng to flee desperately.

Neither fire nor thunderbolts could leave even a scratch on Ji Hao's skin!

He had basically attained a ‘Pan Gu body’. At the moment, the defensive power provided by Ji Hao’s body was as great as that of a top-grade defensive treasure.

The golden bridge quaked,then Ji Hao dashed to Yu Ancestor instantly, swinging Pan Gu Dragon Mark down mercilessly. Yu Ancestor shrieked. The moment the sword landed, Yu Ancestor’s body turned blur, and next, a silly Yu appeared under Ji Hao’s sword, as Yu Ancestor showed up hundreds of miles away!

"Hah, old thing!" That silly Yu didn’t even know what was happening. Hacking it into two, Ji Hao turned around and looked at the flood dragon king, who had bent his body and lunged towards Ji Hao.

The flood dragon king was holding a long spear with both his hands, and the spear was coiling in a frosty air stream, piercing towards Ji Hao’s face at lightning speed. The spear was still about ten miles away from Ji Hao, but a frictional noise was already caused by the strong gust of wind the spear started against Ji Hao’s skin.

"Old dragon king, Yuan Li is a brother of mine, and he likes your daughter...You better think about it. Don’t make things go out of control!" The spear reached Ji Hao’s face in the following moment. Ji Hao talked quickly, then opened his mouth,

The spear lunged to between Ji Hao’s upper teeth and lower teeth. Before the flood dragon king could push the spear further into Ji Hao’s mouth, countless spell symbols sparkled on Ji Hao’s transparent teeth. As Ji Hao bit down, a loud ‘crack’ could be heard, and the flood dragon king began vomiting blood.

The spear was the flood dragon king’s spirit weapon, and had been nourished by his spirit blood for countless years. But, it was broken by Ji Hao’s teeth!

Sharp pieces of the spear darted all over the sky. While vomiting blood, the flood dragon kings staggered back quickly. He stared at

Ji Hao in shock, as if Ji Hao was a ghost from hell.

"You, you, you!" The flood dragon king was even driving crazy!

That was his spirit weapon; it could even leave a hole in the sky! But, it was actually broken, by Ji Hao's teeth!

What was more frustrating was that when the spear made contact with Ji Hao's teeth, the flood dragon king clearly sensed a dreadful power vibration from them. That was a destructive power which could shred everything, destroy the whole world, and was unstoppable!

As Ji Hao made the bite, the flood dragon king felt that he was watching a Chaos devil god who stood on the ground, his head touching the sky, and had been laughing rumblingly, exposing his white, shiny teeth. Thunderbolts and fire streams struck on his body, while lightning coiled between his teeth. He grabbed a millions of miles long Chaos monster, put it into his mouth, and took an easy bite. Instantly, the Chaos monster was crushed; its skin, muscles, and bones were all minced into a thousand pieces.

Shaking his head, the flood dragon king cast away the strange thought in his head, then tremblingly pulled out a pair of swords which were releasing a sharp, cold power vibration. He looked at Ji Hao, paused for a while, but eventually failed to boost up his courage and rush up.

Even his spirit weapon was broken by Ji Hao's teeth, so what could these swords possibly do, even though both of these swords were good pieces.

"What kind of a monster are you?" The flood dragon king helplessly sighed towards the sky.

Xiang Liu showed his true face. With nine giant snakeheads, he pounced on Ji Hao, piercing his sharp fangs towards Ji Hao's vital body parts and spurting venom from every head of his.

Shrill swishing noises could suddenly be heard from the sky.

Xiang Liu quivered, because all his eighteen eyeballs were penetrated by arrows simultaneously. Glistening liquid erupted from his eyeballs. He stopped attacking Ji Hao, twisted his body, and howled in pain.

A distance away, Feng Xing trod on a giant fire crow, holding his bow and calmly observing the battlefield.

The flood dragon king immediately turned around. But before he figured out how many people had suddenly joined the fight, he dropped his swords, buried his head in his arms, and coughed out a sticky stream of blood. With his entire body twitching, the flood dragon king fell from the sky, into the flood.

Far away, an altar floated in the sky. With his arms raised high, Taisi was performing a weird dance around the altar and casting a spell. Behind Taisi, thousands of Maguspreists in long dark robes had been slaughtering all kinds of enormous water-kind spirit creatures, offering to the altar, and enhancing the power of Taisi's curse.

Shaosi, Man Man, and Yu Mu flashed into the battlefield, followed by a hurricane and streaks of raging fire. Countless locusts flew out and covered the sky, like a fire rising. Behind Shaosi, a hazy figure appeared suddenly and gave a deep roar. In the next moment, Xiang Liu, Kun Peng, and their descendants who had been attacking Ji Hao, all started vomiting blood, and were sent flying backward.

Chapter 1358: Wuzhi Qi Surrenders

Kun Peng's head was broken by Ji Hao. Lying aside, he burst into a shrill howl. His chest blasted, and from within, a hazy Kun Peng bird flew out. The giant Kin Peng bird instantly expanded to a length of millions of miles, with its pair of wings reaching down from the sky and covering the entire sky like two dense, tremendous dark clouds.

The bird flapped its wings and generated fierce gusts of wind, sharp as blades, blowing across the bodies of Ji Hao and his friends. Countless locusts were swirled into the wind and shredded within the span of a couple of breaths.

Yu Mu grinned. His locusts never meant to hurt the enemies with their mouthparts and thorns, because their true weapon were the toxins and viruses they carried.

Once those locusts were shredded, the viruses and toxins would spread even faster and wider. As colorful dust drifted all over the sky, Xiang Liu, Kun Peng and their descendants fell one after another.

Man Man wielded her pair of hammers and crushed every swirl wind coming at her. She giggled at Ji Hao happily and shouted, "Ji Hao! You're having so much fun alone! You didn't even tell us! Hm, fortunately, we still have a water gate left! Let me help you tear it down!"

While laughing, Man Man threw the pair of hammers up. The two hammers instantly expanded to a hundred miles long, surrounded by strong gales and raging fires as they descended violently towards the group of flood dragons behind the flood dragon king like two pieces of falling sky.

Those flood dragons raised their heads and sent out their long silver spears.

Followed by a thunderous bang, the two hammers were bumped to hundreds of miles away, while the thousands of flood dragons trembled slightly. Tens of flood dragons in the front had blood spurting out of their mouths, eyes, ears, and noses. From their mouths, thin flakes of fire puffed out as well.

" Fight!" Following a bright growl, large troops of shrimp warriors trod on the flood and approached in ordered arrays. They were wearing shiny armors and holding sharp weapons. Their battle formation was based on the positions of stars in the sky; their bodies were covered with a dense layer of starlight, that had been pushing the water forward.

Shermie raised his long arms and led thousands of sturdy Jia Clan warriors, walking at the front of the army with large steps.

Inside this star formation formed by shrimp and crab warriors were countless disciples from Yao Mountain Palace of Dao. They were wearing long shirts, waving long streamers as they drew pure and strong streams of star power into the formation. Nourished by the star power, the bodies of all shrimp and crab warriors in the formation had expanded by three times, and their strengths were boosted up by at least two hundred percent.

Before the thousands of flood dragons recovered from the shock brought by Man Man’s full-strength strike, shrimp and crab warriors in tens of square arrays under Shermie’s command had already raised their bows.

Starlight gathered on those bows. Standing above the star formation, Feng Xing raised his divine bow and gave an earth-shaking roar. His divine bow emitted countless extremely thin, dazzling beams of arrow light, which buzzed along with the bows held in those shrimp and crab warriors’ hands.

Shrimp and crab warriors were not powerful. Their powers were not even worth mentioning. Even if they were holding top-grade strong bows, they wouldn’t be able to cause too much damage to

their enemies. Not to mention their physical weakness; they couldn't even pull open any top-grade strong bow.

Nevertheless, nourished by the star power, they pulled open the strong bows in their hands with solid efforts that they could never pull normally. Bright arrow light emitted from their bows. Guided by Feng Xing, they formed a tremendous 'Eastern Wasteland arrow formation', and Feng Xing was the strongest arrow of this formation.

Countless beams of arrow light dazzled from their bows and merged with Feng Xing's bow.

Feng Xing gave a resounding shout and locked the arrowhead on the thousands of flood dragons. He pulled open the bow and released the arrow. All of a sudden, the entire world seemed to be illuminated, as a, thousands of meters long, splendid arrow light dove down from the sky, raising rolling clouds, roaring gales, and a fierce power vibration that even brought some people a piercing pain in their souls.

"No!" The flood dragon king was tortured by Taisi with the Nailhead Seven Arrow Book. He struggled to reach his head out of the flood and saw Feng Xing and the hundreds of thousands of shrimp and crab warriors shoot the dazzling arrow, then growled with a hoarse voice.

The arrow would not turn back. The dazzling arrow landed in the crowd of flood dragons and suddenly split into thousands of thin beams, striking on the chest of those flood dragons. Dragon armors worn by those flood dragons shattered one after another, and so did their scales and skin. Screaming in pain, they were sent flying backward.

"Yuan Li appealed for my mercy, so I will hurt you, but not kill you." Flicking the bowstring with his fingers, Feng Xing looked at those flood dragons, who each had a fist-sized hole on the chest, and murmured in a deep voice, "Hurting people without killing

them, I'm so not used to this!"

Ji hao chuckled, as the golden bridge shone. With one single step, he reached to Kun Peng.

Kun Peng did have a strong life-force. With his neck cracked by Ji Hao, he could still find a way to heal himself. Ji Hao decided to not give Kun Peng another chance to cause more troubles. He released the Pan Gu bell and carried it with both his arms, smashing heavily on Kun Peng's head.

Followed by a thunderous bang, a black and red mushroom cloud rose to thousands of meters high. Kun Peng's head was badly mutilated. His body sank and almost fell from the sky. Before Kun Peng fought back, Yemo Shayi showed up on his back like a ghost. Following the screams of his descendants, Yemo Shayi cut open Kun Peng's enormous body and drilled straight in.

Kun Peng burst into an especially shrill shriek. Yemo Shayi drilled into his body, and only heaven knew what Yemo Shayi did inside him.

Giant wounds began appearing on Kun Peng's body as blood poured down like waterfalls.

Once again, Kun Peng shrieked in pain and despair, as a large part of his body fell off. A blood-red light wrapped up his body part, then transformed into countless blood-red tentacles. They reached down and rolled up his descendants. The blood-red light then flashed across the sky and disappeared.

That was a blood-escaping magic cast by Kun Peng. As he fled away, Kun Peng's high-pitched voice still echoed through the clouds, "Marquis Yao Ji Hao! You wait, wait for me! When I learn the supreme magic from my Master Shifu, I will make you pay for what you did today!"

Ji Hao lowered his head. Earlier, Xiang Liu had his eighteen eyes were punctured, and by now, he had disappeared long ago, leaving

a silly group of his descendants in their original shapes, confronting Shermie’s army.

Yu Ancestor had run away without a trace even before Xiang Liu. His countless descendants stood in a daze in the flood. Without Yu Ancestor’s orders, these muddleheaded Yu seemed to be able to do and know nothing.

Yuan Li stood in front of the flood dragon king, talking in a low voice. The flood dragon king’s face was dark, especially dark. But after a long while, he helplessly nodded. Giving a bright growl, he stepped aside with the thousands of badly wounded flood dragons.

At last, Wuzhi Qi carried his club and walked to Ji Hao. Conveniently throwing that club away, he sat straight on the ground.

"I’m done fighting. I surrender!"

"Hah, I know I am steeped in crime, and you human beings will never let me go. So, just find a place to imprison me!" Wuzhi Qi led his descendants and surrendered straightforwardly.

Chapter 1359: Breaking The Last Gate

"I’m done fighting. I'm not in the mood. If this fight goes on, my kids would be slaughtered." Sitting on a small wave, Wuzhi Qi carelessly stretched out his neck, tilted his head, and looked at Ji Hao. "I am...so unlucky."

Ji Hao looked back at him, at the hazy lotus between his eyebrows.

Indeed, he was so unlucky, as Priest Hua and Priest Mu had their eyes on him.

"But, you can always follow them to the end." Ji Hao smilingly looked at Wuzhi Qi and said, "Follow them with your descendants, just like Kun Peng. Perhaps, you will have a much better result than this, eh?"

Wuzhi Qi narrowed his eyes, scornfully snorted, and said, "I am used to be a king, a ruler. Serving them? Back then, I became a minister of Gong Gong Family because I had no other choice, and that was already bad enough. You want me to continue serving other people? I’d rather be imprisoned forever!"

With his eyes sparkling with a cold light, Wuzhi Qi abruptly raised his head, looked at Ji Hao, and said, "I can give you all my descendants. I have great genes, my boys are all strong, with talent for cultivation. I can also plead guilty in front of Emperor Shun. For all the crimes I should bear, I will not deny."

"I give you my descendants, and in return, you gave me the great Dao of extreme negative that you taught Yuan Li, how about that?" Wuzhi Qi asked straightforwardly, without any hesitation.

Ji Hao was slightly surprised. Wuzhi Qi, this old monkey was indeed especially sharp-sighted and smart. He was clearly aware of the fact that because what he was, he could only serve Priest Hua and Priest Mu as cannon fodder. Therefore, he’d rather surrender

to the humankind. Anyhow, being imprisoned forever was better than death.

By trading his descendants for the great Dao of extreme negative, he could not only find his descendants someone reliable to depend on, but also would have plenty of time to study the great Dao of extreme negative while he was imprisoned.

If he attained the great Dao of extreme negative one day, if he truly achieved the result of the great Dao, he would become one of the most powerful beings in the world. And then, could the magic seal created by human beings still stop him?

Over a hundred thousands water apes lined up orderly in the distance away, looking at Ji Hao and Wuzhi Qi. These water apes were all tall and muscular, releasing amazingly strong power vibrations. Among them, hundreds were as powerful as Divine Magi. These were all Wuzhi Qi's descendants, and as Wuzhi Qi said, they were all talented for cultivation.

"Deal!" Ji Hao reached out his hand to Wuzhi Qi and said, "I can teach you about the great Dao of extreme negative, but I am by no means a master. Hmm, from now on, your descendants are all under my command. Are you really willing to do that?"

Wuzhi Qi's face twisted slightly, then bared his teeth and gave Ji Hao a large grin while saying, "I will always have sons, won't I?"

As his muscles began squirming, Wuzhi Qi turned into a handsome young man, wearing a long black robe. Reached out his hand, he slapped loudly on Ji Hao's palm and said, "Deal then! Hmm, break the Huai Gate now, then send me to Emperor Shun and imprison me in a nice place. As soon as you can...I have a little...headache!"

Wuzhi Qi pointed at the hazy lotus between his eyebrows while slightly trembling.

Ji Hao nodded heavily and glanced at the flood dragon king, who

stood in the distance away, remaining silent. Afterward, he raised his head and gave a bright shout at the sky.

"Uncle Wen Ming! This is the last gate! Together, break the Huai Gate! This goddamned flood is finally going away!"

Laughing out loud, Si Wen Ming threw a glance at the flood dragon king, then at Wuzhi Qi. Next, he raised the mountain driving whip and rushed towards the Huai Gate in big steps.

Ji Hao's body started expanding. He quickly expanded to tens of thousands of meters tall, carried the Pan Gu bell, and marched to the Huai Gate.

Man Man happily screamed and wielded her pair of hammers while leaping up high. After a few rises and falls, she passed Ji Hao and Si Wen Ming and rushed into the Huai Gate. As her pair of hammer smashed down and a dense fiery cloud rose into the sky, a ten-miles-tall mountain was flattened by her.

Countless human warriors shouted and growled in excitement, raising all kinds of weapons as they marched into the Huai Gate. An army of Yao Mountain warriors burst into thunderous roars, following closely behind Ji Hao, Man Man, Shaosi and the others into the Huai Gate.

Countless water-kind creatures who were gathered by Gong Gong to awe human beings had now been shrieking, fleeing, or directly kneeling on the waves, begging Si Wen Ming and Ji Hao for mercy.

As for the powerful ones like Xiang Liu, Kun Peng, and Wuzhi Qi, they either surrendered or escaped. Gong Gong, their emperor, was killed by Ji Hao with a single sword move, which obliterated their morale. The water-kind army was disordered. No one had any courage to fight back.

Dense clouds rose into the sky, and the mountains on both sides of the Huai Gate were crushed section by section. The rain surged into the Huai Gate, along with a fierce gale.

Seven days later, Ji Hao and the others reached the end of Huai Gate. In the front were two towering mountains, reaching to the clouds, standing on both sides of the water channel like an enormous gate. Between these two mountains, the water channel was only about three miles wide. These two mountains were the last obstacles in the Huai Gate area.

On breaking these two mountains, the water channel would lead straight to the Final Land.

According to the legends, the Final Land was Saint Pan Gu's stomach, and was a bottomless blackhole which could devour anything in the world. The flood, the excessive water power, nothing could ever fill the Final Land up. Falling into the Final Land, everything would eventually be devoured and digested, becoming a nourishment of Pan Gu world.

"Uncle Wen Ming!" Standing in front of the two mountains, Ji Hao smilingly cupped his hands towards Si Wen Ming and said, "Let's do it!"

Si Wen Ming looked at the two mountains with a serious face. Glancing at Ji Hao, he slowly nodded and said, "For this day, how many sacrifices we human beings have made? But, things have come to a close. From this day on, we human beings will live safely and happily, generation after generation."

Roaring thunderously, yellow-colored power streams rose from Si Wen Ming's body as he transformed into a winged, gigantic bear, raised the mountain-driving whip, and lashed violently at the two mountains.

"Break!" growled Si Wen Ming.

The two tens of thousands of miles tall mountains collapsed all of a sudden. Before some rocks landed on the ground, the bright yellow light emitted from the whip turned them into strands of yellow mist, dissipating in the air.

The Pan Gu world quaked. The water, which was blocked by the nine water gates, flooded out earsplittingly, surging towards the Final Land, through the broad water channel behind the Huai Gate

The flood gushed into the misty Final Land and disappeared.

The water power in Pan Gu world started declining rapidly. In the sky, the dark clouds were thinning. In many areas, the storm suddenly turned into a gentle drizzle, and in some other areas, the rain stopped, while the dark clouds were gone. The sun, which had been absent for years, poured down its warm golden light.

On the mountains, in the forests, countless surviving human beings walked out of their shelters.

On rafts, ships, many human beings grinned brilliantly.

Gradually, the defensive magic screens around strong cities were dimmed. People hiding in those cities climbed up city walls, stunned, with their eyes fixed on the world outside those colorful defensive screens, which had been recovering.

Chapter 1360: Supreme Treasures Choose Their Owner

Standing on the tallest mountain in the Huai Gate area, Ji Hao looked around.

The sky was still covered by dark clouds, but through the cracks between these clouds, warm sunlight had already poured down in streams, illuminating the dark world.

Magically, not only a large number of human beings wearing ragged clothes quietly emerged on the surrounding mountains, standing high, dancing, and shouting thrillingly, some small creatures, which seemed to be insignificant and fragile, also popped out from everywhere.

A large group of marmots with moist furs stood right beside Ji Hao. The leader of this group straightened its body as much as possible, popped out its beady eyes, and looked around in surprise.

These marmots were scrawny and exhausted. They gasped quickly for air, seeming to die at any time. However, an indescribably strong life-force could be sensed from their bodies. ‘Squeak, squeak’, a few fist-sized baby marmots reached their heads out of the crowd. Apparently, these few were still newborns.

"Eh!" Man Man found them and stopped moving in surprise. She crossed her fingers over her chest, looking at these marmots with admiration.

They were not even spirit creatures. Instead, they were just a group of small, ordinary marmots. But in Man Man’s eyes, they were explaining the meanings of life, the greatness and strangeness of nature. For an unknown reason, warm tears flowed down from Man Man’s eyes. She carefully took out a large bag of sweetcorn cake and put it before these marmots.

Determinedly, the leader of these marmots looked at Man Man,

then fell heavily to the ground.

The coldness and starvation had drained its life-force long ago. But only after its family was away from the danger, this leader could finally leave in peace, without any worries.

Ji Hao looked at this marmot and sensed the greatness of this small creature.

A slight noise caused by flapping wings could be heard. A few tiny dragonflies flew out from an unknown place, happily hovering around a fist-thick stream of sunlight before Ji Hao's face. Their cyan-blue bodies reflected the sunshine beautifully.

'Qua,' a vividly green toad, covered in golden stripes, leaped onto Ji Hao's foot. The toad thought that Ji Hao's foot was a stone warmed by the sunshine. Comfortably, the toad lied down, without making any other move.

Three baby toads lied quietly on the toad's back, with their scrawny bellies rising and falling, as they let out 'qua, qua' sounds from time to time.

"Hah, you're all alive, good job!" Ji Hao looked at these four beautiful little creatures and giggled.

Wherever the sunlight reached and the flood ebbed, a soft greenery quietly emerged on the soil. It had only been a couple of hours since the Huai Gate was broken, but the earth had started healing itself already. As the first layer of juicy moss was growing on the moist soil, one could soon see the charming greenery everywhere.

The boundless, turbid water was gone. The mountains were exposed again in the air. In no time, mountains were covered in greenery too. From the rich soil, a thriving life-force began spreading. Moss for today, grass for tomorrow, and before long, the earth would be covered by healthy plants once again.

More surprisingly, many trees were still standing on these

mountains, which had been slowly coming out of the water!

Soaked in the water for years, the leaves and branches of these threes were soft and broken; even their tree barks were flushed away by the water, exposing their mottled trunks. However, a strong life-force still lingered inside these trees. The moment these trees sensed the sunlight, they began absorbing nourishment from the soil, and the first tender sprout popped out from their soft branches instantly!

Unspeakably magical! Not far away from Ji Hao, a few skinny bears stumbled out and stood within a wisp of sunshine that poured straight down from the sky, pausing for a while. Afterward, perhaps their skins got a little bit itchy because of the sunlight, they found the largest tree in the area and rubbed their backs against the tree.

The few bears snorted slightly. Obviously, rubbing against the tree was a very comfortable, nice thing to do.

Standing aside, Shaosi chuckled. Holding her hands in her sleeves, she looked at these few bears and began calculating. "We need to organize people in our territory and grow a batch of crops as soon as we can. Even though the food stored in Pu Ban City is abundant by now, we have so many people that need help. More or less, we can have some harvests if we sow the seeds now."

"The flood is gone. People from many small clans must have no home to return and nothing to eat. They can only go to large clans for shelter."

"If we can store more food and invite more people to our territory, our Yao Mountain territory will grow stronger."

Shaosi carefully calculated about how many crops to grow, how much food could be harvested, and how many homeless people could be invited to the Yao Mountain territory. She was thinking about how many new farmlands could be opened up by these new residents, and how many new villages and towns could be built till

the next spring.

Ji Hao smilingly looked at the sky. ‘It’s so nice to have Shaosi help managing the territory.’ thought Ji Hao.

The sky was suddenly illuminated, as two enormous swirls quietly emerged in the sky, one yellow and one black in color.

The black and yellow mist descended from the sky, and slowly, yet stably merged into the bodies of all warriors who contributed to the flood-control mission. This was the natural reward given by the great Dao of Pan Gu world. Anyone who took part in the flood-control mission attained their natural reward. The more one gave, the more one earned.

The great Dao of nature was the fairest. The black and white mist that descended from the sky was neither more or less than it should be.

Shaosi, Man Man, Feng Ling, Yu Mu, Taisi, Heng Xing, Shermie, Yuan Li, and all the others raised their heads. Streams of black and yellow mist, which were thicker and larger than the other human warriors had been receiving, poured down and surged into their bodies.

Next, the sky suddenly brightened up. Two, thousand-miles-wide black and yellow mist streams descended from the sky, one landing on Ji Hao’s body and one on Si Wen Ming, who stood on another side of the Huai Gate, and was smilingly looking around.

Ji Hao felt his embryo of Dao begin shaking, as if it touched a high tension electric wire. Countless strange thoughts crossed his mind. Secrets of the world revealed themselves in Ji Hao’s head, even though he wasn’t spending any effort for it.

His embryo of Dao glowed with a bright Chaos light. Around the embryo of Dao, mountains, stars, and rivers were faintly visible, gradually filling up the inner space of Ji Hao’s body, as if he were a universe that could contain the whole world.

Following a water clattering noise, two beams of light darted out from the flood surging through the Huai Gate, one white and one black.

Those were a dark turtle and a dragon horse. They walked to Si Wen Ming, nodded to him nine times, then roared resoundingly towards the sky. After that, they transformed back into two beams of light and suddenly merged into Si Wen Ming’s body.

Those were He Tu and Luo Shu, two pre-world supreme treasures, which had souls. They sensed the great natural reward power descending from the sky. Therefore, they came over here to follow Si Wen Ming’s lead!

"Oi, I have that much natural reward too. Why don’t you follow me? He Tu, Luo Shu, I can take one of you!" Watching He Tu and Luo Shu choose Si Wen Ming as their owner, Ji Hao mumbled.

Chapter 1361: The Order of Killing

Pu Ban City...

The strong defensive screen gradually opened. Ji Hao's Taiji creation cauldron emitted a soft light as the Pan Jia sun slowly drifted in. The light of Pan Jia sun dimmed, as warm and golden sunshine poured down through the dark clouds in the sky, leaving golden light spots on Pan Gu world.

Human beings who took shelter in Pu Ban City looked at the sky, stunned. Someone burst with the first happy shout, and all of a sudden, everyone began shouting and cheering, throwing tools, weapons, and their ragged clothes into the sky.

Some impatient Magus Kings and Divine Magi flew straight up into the sky and spread their hands, showering under the golden sunshine.

The sunshine was warm, and might even make one's skin a little bit itchy. The warmth of the sunlight could drill straight into one's bones. The Pan Jia sun had been keeping Pu Ban City warm for the past few years, but in comparison, the light of the Pan Gu sun made these people feel more comfortable!

People shouted in happiness. Their voices spread in all directions. From houses, caves, and tree holes, countless human beings rushed out excitedly. They raised their heads and looked at the golden sunshine hiding behind the dark clouds in the sky, thinking about the storm that ceased suddenly. They were all stunned.

The rain stopped, and the sun came out. The dark clouds hadn't disappeared yet, but the sun already illuminated the world, and the heart of every survivor.

"Here is the sun!"

This was such a normal word to say, but after years of fighting

against the flood, this sounded so precious. Many people shed tears. With tears flowing down their faces, they laughed out loud, then began crying heartbreakingly.

The homes of so many people were destroyed by the flood. Many clans had lost countless people. The ones who luckily survived in Pu Ban City thought about their families and friends, who were already gone.

The cries and laughter mixed together. Suddenly, Pu Ban City turned so noisy.

In the core area of Pu Ban City, surrounded by beautiful mountains, a magnificent hall stood on the ground. Around the hall, countless heavily armored warriors were on patrol. Important areas were guarded by large numbers of Maguspreists, and in some other areas, well-trained spirit beasts quietly lied on the ground. Under the eaves, amidst the flowers, highly sensitive Gu bugs were hiding.

In the sky, under the ground, this place was heavily guarded like an unbreakable city. It seemed that not even a fly could easily break in.

Inside the hall was a temple hall, entirely cast from bronze, thickly embossed with countless spell symbols. Under this temple hall, nine-hundred-meters underground was another secret temple hall, cast from red bronze, gold-plating, and inlaid with countless magic crystals, coiling in thunderbolts. A dark mist had been rising from this secret hall, as over ten hazy figures were silently sitting in the mist.

Every one of them had a wine pot placed beside them, and a wine bowl held in their hands. They poured the wine for themselves, emptied their bowls, then poured again.

The strong aroma of wine suffused the secret hall, which meant they had been sitting like this for a long time.

After a long while, an old yet especially strong voice burst like a thunder, "A bunch of useless things! That was such a small thing, yet they failed. Every generation is worse than the older one, worse than the older one! If I knew all this, I should have better... strangled them and fed them to the wolves once they were born."

Another old and dry, but softer voice sneered weakly and said, "At this point in time, what can you do to help by talking like this? Strangling your newborns and feeding to wolves? Do you have such a tradition in your family? We've been friends for so many years, but I truly didn't know about this...How many of your children and grandchildren have you strangled?"

"You!" The first voice burst up, and the dark mist in the secret hall quaked instantly.

"Enough!" A strong voice snuffed the potential conflict between those two and said, "Don't waste my cauldron-full of 'dark sweat aroma', that can nourish your hearts and minds. And don't just drink. If you want to drink, go back to your wine cellars. You can drink as much as you like there. Use your brains and think about solutions!"

People in the secret hall fell into stillness. A long while later, a hoarse, deep voice started talking, "Marquis Yao Ji Hao, that kid... Hasn't Emperor Shun said something? He killed so many of our elders. Does Emperor Shun think that he can protect that kid?"

That strong voice sneered and responded coldly, "Emperor Shun surely knows that he can't protect Ji Hao. How can he? Ji Hao killed so many of our elders. He is the emperor, indeed, but is the human emperor a big deal? Without our support, what can he do as an emperor?"

"Emperor Shun hasn't said anything yet because he clearly knows that he can't protect Ji Hao this time...Therefore, Ji Hao has to die!"

"The only problem now is that the flood-control mission is

accomplished, but we have no credit for that!"

After another while of silence, the group of people began blaming the others.

Someone complained loudly and said that people should have listened to him in the beginning of the flood-control mission, and more or less, each one of these powerful human families and clans should have sent out some elites. If they did that, they could always earn some credits.

Some other people shouted loudly that before the Kui Gate battle, people should have listened to them to violently imprison Ji Hao and Si Wen Ming. Thus, the credit of breaking the nine water gates would naturally belong to them.

One man yelled that even though Si Wen Ming had earned the highest credit for the flood-control mission, as for whether he could ascend to the throne or not would still depend on these powerful families and clans! Indeed, Si Wen Ming had the reputation. He made his contribution to the flood-control mission, and all people in the world appreciated him. But, what was so important about that? Without the support of these powerful human families and clans, all of this was nothing!

"We cannot let Si Wen Ming become the next human emperor!" said the strong voice abruptly, interrupting all the others, "He is not like Emperor Shun. Emperor Shun is kind and generous...But Si Wen Ming, hm, you have all seen how difficult the Magi Palace has become in his hands. Clearly, Si Wen Ming is not easy to deal with! Not to mention the fact that he was friends with so many princes...His hands have been reaching far."

Silence reigned again. Later, this strong voice continued, "We can’t let Si Wen Ming return to Pu Ban City. The world knows that Si Wen Ming beat the flood. Once he returns, he would certainly become the new emperor!"

"No one can stop him, not even us. It’s useless, all useless. He has

made a major contribution this time, which brought him a great reputation. So...We can’t let him return!"

"The hero who beat the flood died of illness on his way back home... This will be the best end! What do you all think?"

Once again, the secret hall fell into an embarrassed silence. A while later, an old voice carried the conversation on, "After all, Si Wen Ming is a descendant of Emperor Xuanyuan..."

Hearing a cold laughter, another old voice responded harshly, "A half of us are descendants of Emperor Xuanyuan. What’s so special about Si Wen Ming?"

"But, Si Wen Ming is a Divine Magus. Dying of illness...What kind of a disease can kill him?" said another voice with hesitation. Divine Magi could not be killed by any poison, and could regrow their bodies from drops of blood. Died of illness? No such disease existed in the world!

"As long as he dies... As for what kind of disease caused his death, we can take out time to find that out!" said the strong voice, "Now, let’s discuss on how to make Si Wen Ming die as soon as possible! And, this can never have anything to do with us!"

Chapter 1362: Organize the Army, Prepare for the War

Bonfires burned, brightening the night sky and warming countless human warriors.

The water surged through the water channel in the nine water gates area, rumbling earsplittingly into the Final Land. The turbid waves rolled, and the whirlpools roared. Within the watery mist, countless shrimp warriors had been shouting and yelling, holding all kinds of weapons while darting around.

In both shock and fear, large groups of enormous whale were driven to the sides of the water channel by these shrimp warriors, gathering in a large bay. This bay Area was almost filled up by the dark backs of these giant whales. A few whales which were startled by those shrimp warriors leaped up into the sky while screaming, splashing the water everywhere.

Following shrill roars, a heavy and large harpoon swished across the air. This nearly hundred meters long harpoon pierced into the bodies of these whales, puncturing those enormous bodies.

Many miles tall Longbo Country people stood in the bay, laughing while wielding their harpoons, penetrating those whales one after another, then carrying those struggling whales up as they walked to the bank with big steps.

Kuafu Family people built giant wooden shelves by the water channel. They put those captured whales on shelves, peeled then and dug out all internal organs, then cut them into large pieces. Large groups of human warriors walked over, happily picking up those large meat pieces and walking away. Treading on winds and clouds, these warriors rushed to those bonfires.

Whale meats were put on fire, grilling till sizzling. A nice aroma spread out; oil oozed out of the grilling meat, dripping on the

ground.

Warriors surrounded bonfires, laughing and dancing. Some already had their stomach stuffed, as they stretched their arms and legs, comfortably lying on the ground and falling asleep.

The great formation was completed, and the flood was ebbing. Gong Gong, who started all this, was already killed by Ji Hao. The few senior ministers under Gong Gong's command either surrendered or escaped, and the water-kind army under Gong Gong's lead was destroyed. The remaining force of the enemy could no longer cause a threat.

These warriors were unburdened, and their tightened nerves could ease. They now filled their stomachs and prepared to sleep. Finally, they could have a good sleep without worry. Human warriors lied on the ground and spread their limbs; their thunderous snores even made the earth shake slightly.

Surrounded by these human warriors was a series of tents standing in a straight line. In a simple leather tent, Ji Hao and Si Wen Ming sat facing each other, without saying a word. They each held a bowl of wine, hearing the happy shouts, laughter, and snores from the warriors in the outside.

"Finally, we can rest." Si Wen Ming smilingly nodded and emptied his bowl.

It wasn't a fine wine. It was the cheapest glutinous rice wine that was stored for too long, and tasted a bit sour. Si Wen Ming gulped the wine, then licked his lips in satisfaction, as if he had just tasted the best wine in the world.

"How can we rest?" Ji Hao dropped his bowl, looked at Si Wen Ming seriously, and said, "Uncle Wen Ming, do you really think that we can rest? The others can, but not us."

Si Wen Ming's eye corners slightly twitched. Remaining silent for a while, he dropped the bowl heavily, gave a slight sigh, and

said, "Yeah, the others can rest, but we still have work to do. First, we need to find out if any remaining force of Gong Gong still exists in the heaven. Second, we suffered the flood, but the non-humankind has made no moves so far. Will they launch a new offensive?"

Undoubtedly, Gong Gong's remaining force still existed in the heaven.

By now, the Gong Gong Family was nothing to worry about. The important ones were those new divine gods from the Divine Origin Pool. Those were true divine gods. Back in the Huai Gate, even Gong Gong showed up to put up a desperate fight, but those divine gods never showed, which was not reasonable.

Human beings had to watch the heaven closely, and always prepare for their offensive.

But of course, perhaps those divine gods didn't show because of some trouble that Gong Gong caused for himself. In the best case, those divine gods wouldn't cause any threat to the humankind, and the humankind would have enough time to prepare for the potential conflict that may burst between the heaven and the human world.

But, the most important and urgent problem was the Yu Dynasty!

Because of the flood, the humankind suffered great losses. At this stage, human beings were badly in need of post-disaster reconstruction. However, those non-humankind beings were protected by divine towers, and had lost nothing. Not even the most positive human being dared to say that those non-humankind beings would stay quietly behind their walls and watch the humankind recover.

Human beings could be facing an all-out attack from the entire Yu Dynasty.

"Third, the 'All Streams to Final Land' great formation is

completed. Drawn by the rapidly moving water power, the four wastelands will merge with Midland in three months tops. That army of ours stationed in the north, will we use it to defend against Yu Dynasty or break into Northern Wasteland to destroy Gong Gong's forces for good?" Pondering briefly, Si Wen Ming finally pointed this out.

Earlier, Ji Hao led an elite army to the north and stalled the water-kind armors from the twelve water worlds. That was an allied human force, strong and well equipped, completely under Ji Hao's control. According to the original plan, when the flood was gone, this army would march straight into Northern Wasteland and wipe out all clans under Gong Gong's control.

But if Yu Dynasty suddenly launched an offensive, that army would be the only well prepared human force that could directly go into the battle to defend.

The only problem was that after years of intensive fighting, would those warriors in the north still have the strength and morale to continue fighting? Even if they were still full of energy and passion, would they be able to defend against an all-out offensive from Yu Dynasty?

"People are all tired!" Si Wen Ming helplessly glanced out of the tent.

"Better than dead!" Ji Hao frowned, then took a complicated glance at Si Wen Ming and said, "Uncle Wen Ming, you only mentioned three possibilities. Why don't you mention the last one?"

"What can that be?" Si Wen Ming poured himself a bowl of wind and started sipping.

"You've already thought about that, but you are not willing to, or you dare not to believe it!" Looking at Si Wen Ming, Ji Hao said in a deep voice, "But whether you want to do it or not, this army under your command right now is the largest army of the

humankind."

"Most importantly, this army follows your words only. This is your army, and it belongs to you alone."

"This army cannot be disbanded just like this...Uncle Wen Ming, organize the army, prepare for the war!" Looking at Si Wen Ming, Ji Hao continued seriously, "Not only this army, I will also join you with Shermie, Heng Ling, and Yuan Li. Later on, I will ask Wuzhi Qi to recruit more water-kind warriors for us, as many as possible."

"Other than recruiting water-kind warriors, I will organize all Yao Mountain people who are capable of fighting, and they will join this army too. All armaments stored in Yao Mountain territories these years will be put to use!"

Si Wen Ming knitted his eyebrows into a tiny hill.

Chapter 1363: Attack At Night

Late at night, a thousand miles away from the campsite of Si Wen Ming’s army...

In a valley within some woods, tens of fierce-looking men with ragged clothes faced each other. The bodies of these men were covered in tattoos of wold beasts and dangerous poisonous bugs. Some of them had poisonous snakes coiled around their necks and waists, some had serpents or wild beasts under their feet, and some had blood-thirsty birds standing on their shoulders.

Surrounding the valley were countless strong and sturdy men. The beast-like power vibration had been releasing from their bodies, and their eyes sparkled with a turbid light of fierceness and wildness.

"What? You scums are here too?" In the valley, among a group of leaders, one started talking provocatively.

"Even a stupid thing like you can come, so why can’t we?" Immediately, someone responded harshly.

"Stop with the verbal fighting and do your job first. Capture enough slaves and close the deal, then you can take your vengeance. As long as you want, you can kill every living being crossing your eyes and leave a mountain of corpses." A Xiu Clan old man in a luxurious long robe slowly walked out of the darkness.

This old man sneered and continued in a harsh tone, "But, if you ruin the deal for personal reasons...B*stards, even if you have no fear, your families will all die!"

The group of fierce-looking men glanced at each other and snorted heavily.

"Get ready. You will make a full strike in half an hour!" The Xiu Clan old man satisfyingly nodded and said, "I’ve told you about the price. Whether you will still live a homeless life with your people

like ghosts, or attain a fertile territory, build a homeland, and live happily ever after, will be depending on your performances tonight."

Some dark-kind slave warriors walked out of the darkness, carrying shiny spell symbol armors and glowing weapons. The group of men laughed viciously, walked up with big steps, and grabbed those armors over, putting on themselves. Then, they seized the weapons they liked, gripped them in their hands, and began wielding them.

A man who had five tattoos of poisonous scorpions on his face held a large machete, wielded for a few times, then abruptly yelled out in a cold voice, "Old Yan...That was the flood-control army under Marquis Chong Si Wen Ming's lead. Many of them are strong, like, thousands of Divine Magi...You're not tricking us to die, are you?"

As his eyes dazzled, the Xiu Clan man responded blandly, "Don't worry. We will send other people to deal with the powerful ones under Si Wen Ming's command. You will do nothing but capture ordinary slaves."

Pausing briefly, Old Yan continued in a mild tone, "You shall worry about nothing. Those people are now in deep sleep like dead dogs. Their stomachs are filled, and they are all drunk. You can simply rush up. I believe the most of them can't even struggle up from the ground and fight back. You will tie them up and leave right away. Whoever dares to fight back, just kill him. There's no other thing for you to worry about."

The group of men glanced at each other again and smirked, then gripped their weapons.

These men were leaders of homeless clans. They had no territories. All year around, they moved in wild lands with their livestock, pitched a camp wherever they wanted to rest in. Occasionally, they plundered things from villages and small towns.

The flood took away their livestock. Now, these poor people had nothing left. For their clansmen, for their wives and children, they had to make some serious income.

Tens of homeless clans were gathered up, given with a mission of attacking Si Wen Ming's army. From any angle, this sounded like a suicidal mission. These people would be killing themselves like moths darting into the fire by carrying out this mission. However, desperate people could do anything. As long as Old Yan wasn't lying to them, and some powerful beings were truly sent to deal with those Divine Magi under Si Wen Ming's command...

They were willing to risk trying. What was the worst could happen? Looting human villages, kidnapping young human beings and selling them to the non-humankind as slaves, they had done a lot of these things! They were all desperate, all their clansmen were desperate. Therefore, they dared to do anything. Si Wen Ming, was he a big deal? Didn't he have one head and two shoulders, one p*nis and two balls like any other man? It would be nothing more than a life-risking battle. Why would they be scared of him?

Those dark-kind slave warriors carried over large piles of armors and weapons.

Those armors were heavy and thick, thickly covered in sparkling spell symbols. Clearly, these were all top-grade pieces. These poor homeless people had never seen good things like these. And those especially sharp machetes, one of those could definitely break the bodies of three to five strong men at one time. With those spears, which could even puncture iron boards, even a flood dragon would be penetrated.

Not to mention all kinds of ingeniously designed, highly lethal crossbows and ballistae, and those amazingly powerful battle puppets, including metal spiders, scorpions, giant bears, leopards, wild wolves, which were produced by Xiu Clan masters, for flexible purposes.

They even saw ten miles squared flying forts, each with a thirty-meters-thick fence wall!

"Oh my, with such a flying fort, you can buy all tens of our clans out, can’t you?" A leader hopped onto a flying fort and excitedly patted on the faintly glowing divine tower standing on the fence wall, then said, "Oi, Old Yan, are these things all for us?"

The Xiu Clan old man smilingly nodded. Raising his head and looking at the sky, he said in a bland tone, "Seven minutes, get ready to attack! A thousand miles, four hours will be enough for you to cover this distance, right?"

The tens of fierce-looking leaders smirked and bared their black, rotten teeth, then roared towards the sky in excitement.

Ten flying forts lined up at the front. Following behind those forts were hundreds of thousands of metal puppets. Countless homeless clans people climbed onto these metal puppets, heading towards Si Wen Ming’s campsite. Behind these metal puppets were tens of millions of people from these tens of homeless clans. Some of them had just grown a slight trace of internal power. They gasped loudly and quickly, rushing behind those swiftly moving metal puppets.

Even elderly people and women could be found in this army, also wearing armors and holding all kinds of weapons. Disorderedly, this army marched towards the campsite of Si Wen Ming’s army in a thousand miles away.

A dark mist quickly spread out among these homeless people, covering the entire army within a blink of an eye. The mist silenced their footsteps, breathing sounds, and the clangs of their weapons and armors. Silently, these fierce and violent homeless people moved across the mountain, speedily approaching the campsite.

In the darkness, high up in the sky, Mr. Crow spread his wings and floated in the midair, with his pair of eyes dazzling with a

golden light. At the first glance, he saw the dark mist approaching from a distance away.

Caw! Mr. Crow's shrill caw tore apart the quietness of the night sky. As he flicked his wings, countless golden feathers darted towards the dark mist along with a raging fire.

From the sky, a sharp arrow swished over and reached Mr. Crow's neck within a blink of an eye.

Chapter 1364: The Sun Shining In the Sky

Ji Hao was looking at a large magic sandbox in the tent with Si Wen Ming. Under a dim light, all mountains and rivers around the campsite were displayed in the sandbox. When countless tiny light spots approached the campsite on the sandbox, Ji Hao clapped his hands and laughed to Si Wen Ming, "Uncle Wen Ming, we want to rest, but some people won't let us...Many things are not for you to decide!"

Si Wen Ming narrowed his eyes. A trace of helplessness could be found on his square, bearded face.

Within a blink of an eye, the trace of helplessness was gone, crushed by the stateliness on his face. Si Wen Ming straightened his waist and said in a deep voice, "Whoever they are, anyone daring to assault our flood-control army at night is challenging the alliance of human clans. They should be executed for their crime!"

Mr. Crow's shrill caws could be heard timely. Through the cracks between the door curtain and the tent, Ji Hao and Si Wen Ming saw a golden light dazzling outside. Golden feathers darted out from Mr. Crow's wings, along with strong swishing noises, and the sound of the gale blowing the fire.

Suddenly, Ji Hao heard a high-pitched swishing noise, following which, an arrow darted to Mr. Crow. Ji Hao frowned and flashed out of the tent.

At the moment, the arrow was only less than three-feet away from Mr. Crow's neck. Mr. Crow's wingspan was thousands of meters at the time, and with that enormous body, he had no time to dodge at all. As the half-foot-long, wolf-fang-shaped arrowhead was about to drill into Mr. Crow's neck, Ji Hao popped out from a clear light sphere.

With both hands, Ji Hao gripped the arrow tightly. Even against Ji Hao's great strength, the arrow staff managed to slip for three

feet between Ji Ha’s palms.

Ji Hao sensed a burning pain from his palms. On the arrow staff, countless spell symbols blasted, raising dazzling fire sparkles. The arrowhead quaked intensely, as a terrifying force seemed to erupt from the arrowhead. Ji Hao immediately gripped the half-foot-long, thumb-thick arrowhead and crumbled it, along with all explosive spell symbols.

Mr. Crow’s feathers stood straight up one after another. He popped out his eyes and stared at the arrow staff in Ji Hao’s hands, which had smoke rising from it, with a lingering fear.

"B*stard! Who are you? Get the hell out!" Ji Hao opened his erect eye and emitted a clear light, which illuminated the whole area and scanned around the campsite. Abruptly, he fixed his eyes on a hill three hundred miles away in front of them. Being gazed by his erect eye, a large pine with withered leaves and branches released a cloud of dark mist.

"Die!" Ji Hao gave a deep growl and launched a punch towards the pine.

Buzz! A meters wide power stream surged out from Ji Hao’s fist along with a raging fire and landed on the pine, as a three-hundred-miles-long streak of fire flashed across the sky.

Twelve millstone-sized dark jade talisman flew into the sky, transformed into a thick turtle shell, and shielded against the fire. Following a thunderous bang, the twelve dark jade talismans were shattered, and a man wrapped in golden fire darted down from the pine, which was incinerated instantly, roaring with a hoarse voice.

Mr. Crow stared at this man. Just now, if Ji Hao hadn’t saved him, his neck would have been punctured. Perhaps, he would be dead already. Seeing this man was forced by out by Ji Hao’s heavy punch, Mr. Crow gave a resonant caw, shrank to three-feet long, and started a strong gust of wind while diving to that man.

Gold Crows flew at lightning speed, with three-hundred miles taking Mr. Crow no more than a second. With one lunge, he darted to that man and reached out his three sharp claws, which could penetrate iron boards and were coiled in Gold Crow fire, towards that man's head.

That man was holding a brightly glowing longbow with his left hand, as his right hand pulled out a two-foot-long sword and swung towards Mr. Crow's claws.

Shaosi had already walked out of her tent with Man Man. Seeing Mr. Crow attacking that man, she crooked her finger. Following her move, translucent strands of mist flew speedily towards Shaosi from that man's body.

"Ah!" The rock treading under that man's feet suddenly broke. That man missed his step, and his sword almost brushed across Mr. Crow's claw, while the latter's claws sank deeply into his skull. As Mr. Crow lifted all three of his claws, that man's skull was sent flying a hundred meter away.

He howled in pain and boosted up his spirit blood, even causing a loud sound of waves. The wound on his head started healing quickly. Within a twinkling of an eye, that scary wound had already halfway recovered. However, Mr. Crow hated this man too much. After all, this man almost killed him. Mr. Crow opened his beaks and let out a raging stream of Gold Crow flame onto that man's skull.

The flame covered this man's head and drilled into his brain through his eyes, nose, mouth, and ears. Howling shrilly, this man leaped up and fled away, leaving shreds of afterimages in the sky. But before he could run for three-hundred meters, a sharp arrow swished across the air. Feng Xing released an arrow coiled in thunderbolts, silently penetrating that man's tailbone. The man shrieked in pain, fell to the ground, and couldn't move anymore.

Hundreds of meters long locusts flew up and surrounded that

man, widely opened their mouthparts and let out a dense cloud of grey mist that enveloped that man. All of a sudden, that man's body was all covered in pustules. Meanwhile, he started vomiting heavily. This man was now completely disabled from running.

Feng Xing walked to that man with quick steps and picked up that man's bow.

"Hah...This is..." Walking back to Ji Hao, Feng Xing handed him this longbow, which was covered in mysterious spell symbols and marks, and said, "Sky-shaking divine bow, one of the most famous ten bows in the world. Judging by the explosive force of arrows, not even my Yi bow is as good as this one."

"Sky-shaking divine bow!" Ji Hao took over the bow, crooked his finger, and plucked the bowstring. A deep dragon roar could be heard faintly from the bow. "Indeed a good bow! But, I'm not good at archery." Clicking his tongue, Ji Hao said, "Keep it, maybe you can give it away as a gift."

Giving the bow back to Feng Xing, Ji Hao raised his head and looked at the sky.

From a distance away, a dense dark mist had been approaching. Nothing could be heard from the mist, but as Ji Hao released his strong spirit power, he saw everything inside it. Countless fierce-looking muscular men were rushing over, and before them were ten flying forts of the non-humankind!

"They underestimated us too much, didn't they?" Ji Hao smiled scornfully. As his pointed out his finger, the nine dragons chariot rushed out along with a dazzling golden light. Standing on the chariot, he rose to above the dark mist, leaving a blinding golden beam in the sky.

Ji Hao roared, which echoed to the clouds. The power of the chariot was released like a sun shining in the sky. As the bright golden light illuminated the night sky, the dark mist on the ground was dispelled immediately, exposing those homeless people.

Standing on the chariot, Ji Hao locked his fingers together and cast a spell. Countless extremely thin golden light beams dazzled in the sky, and down below, the armors worn by millions of homeless people abruptly burst into a bright red light. All of a sudden, their armors and weapons were all burned glowing red.

Following sizzling noises, all of them dropped their weapons and hurriedly took off their armors.

Chapter 1365: Assassinate Si Wen Ming

"You should set a limit for your stupidity." Standing on the chariot and looking at those people from tens of homeless clans, Ji Hao helplessly shook his head.

These homeless people lived an unsettled life, with nothing to eat or wear, neither did they have a mature cultivation system. If a homeless clan had three to five senior-level warriors, it would be considered as a strong clan.

Ji Hao searched among these homeless people for a long while by using his spirit power. He found thirteen Magus Kings and about three-hundred Senior Magi. And yet, these weak people were actually daring enough to gather together and attempt to kill Si Wen Ming, the chief commander of the flood-control army!

In the army under Si Wen Ming's command were thousands of Divine Magi, along with countless Magus Kings and Senior Magi. Relatively weaker Senior Magi could only serve as logistics. As the weakest part in this army, even the group of cooks could easily wipe out these homeless people.

Ji Hao didn't do anything at all. He simply burned the armors and weapons of these people with essence sun fire from the nine dragons chariot. As a result, these people cried and howled, dropped all weapons and took off all armors, giving up on fighting.

Were these people here to die or to amuse the others?

"So weak, not even I want to beat them!" Man Man carried her pair of hammers while looking at these homeless people who had their skins burned by those glowing-red armors. Man Man then yawned lazily.

"Eh, are they hungry? Maybe they came to get some food." Taisi was suddenly woken up from his dream, curiously popped out his eyes, and looked at these homeless people. Taisi shook his head

kindly and sighed, "Being starved never feels good. We have so much meat that they didn’t finish last night. Why don’t we give them some?"

Before Taisi’s voice faded, tens of millions of homeless people twitched instantly. With twisted faced, they raised their heads. The thirteen Magus-king-level leaders burst into heartbreaking howls simultaneously. In a panic, they reached out their hands to seek help from Ji Hao.

Once they burst with the first shout, these homeless people stopped breathing and fell to the ground. Even the thirteen Magus Kings only managed to let out the second howl before they thudded on the ground and died. Dark, sticky blood flew out from their eyes, noses, mouths, and ears, spurting ink fountains and releasing an evil power. Meanwhile, their bodies withered quickly.

Within a couple of breath, all of these homeless people became sticky puddles of poisonous, dark blood.

Puffing noises could be heard without an end as those blood puddles detonated. Dark blood splashed everywhere, melting the rocks and the soils and generating sharp sizzling noises. Soon, meters deep holes were left on the ground.

Ji Hao looked at the ground in shock, which looked like the blood pool in hell. So cruel! If Ji Hao didn’t discover these homeless people and let them break into the campsite, how many warriors would be killed by this massive poisonous blood explosion?

Along with a buzzing noise, the ten floating forts dazzled blindingly, diving down to the campsite while leaving long streams of light in the air. A destructive power was brewing in those flying forts. Obviously, once the ten flying forts broke into the campsite, another massive explosion would start.

Ji Hao gave a raging shout and let out the Pan Gu bell, releasing streams of Chaos power that wrapped up the ten flying forts. Countless metal puppets dazzled as well, marching towards the

campsite, with stains of dark blood on their bodies. The dark blood had still been exploding. Once these metal puppets rushed into the campsite, a severe damage would definitely be caused.

Ji Hao cursed out loud in anger. These suicidal metal puppets could truly cause headaches.

The nine dragons chariot shone with a golden light. Fist-thick streams of fiery light were released from the chariot, accurately penetrating the heads of these metal puppets and damaging their cores under the control of Ji Hao's spirit power.

These metal puppets fell on the ground one after another, turned scorching hot. Some of them even exploded, quaking the earth slightly and sending the dark blood on their bodies in all directions.

People in the campsite were woken up. Those warriors who were lying on the ground in a deep sleep suddenly leaped up. In the past few years, these warriors had been fighting so hard without a rest, and now, following countless commanders' thunderous voices, they formed battle formations in the timespan of merely one breath.

Battle formations lined up, releasing strong power vibrations. Countless human warriors gripped their weapons, growling rumblingly and waiting for any possible enemy.

Countless green, purple, and blue fires rose into the sky, illuminating the area a hundred miles in radius around the campsite like stars. Tens of thousands of winged dragons flew up and angrily glanced around with their large eyes, which were covered in blood streaks. Their deep roars echoed through the sky.

"Found the enemy, tear them into pieces!" A deep voice resounded across the entire campsite. That was the king of these winged dragon.

Winged dragons roared thunderously, slapped their enormous

wings and tore the dark clouds in the sky. Stars sparkled, as bright starlight streams poured down like a splendid waterfall, giving the campsite a multicolored glow.

Si Wen Ming heard the explosive sounds from the outside and the heartbreaking howls from those homeless people before they died. He wanted to walk out of the tent to see what was happening, but suddenly, he heard ghost cries and screams, while a dense dark shadow surrounded him.

From the shadow, he saw the twisted faces of countless human beings covered in blood, shrieking in sadness and hatred. These were the souls of those homeless people who died just now. They died so miserably, as their souls were turned into evil ghosts by a dark magic. At this point in time, their evil power had reached the peak.

The strong evil power released by ten of millions of evil ghosts, which suffered unwanted, sudden death, was nearly tangible. Si Wen Ming was a powerful human being, but he still was almost suffocated by this evil power. He felt like being stuck in a nightmare, unable to move while dreadfully cold strands of power had been drilling into his body, freezing his internal organs and even his mind.

A Yu Clan man walked out of the darkness slowly. This man was wearing a long dark robe. A half of his face was that of a good-looking young man, while the other half was a pale skull. Ordinary people would be terrified by the sight of this Yu Clan man.

Which his broken face, he chuckled towards Si Wen Ming in a high-pitched voice, then slowly pulled out a black dagger from his sleeve. The dagger was shaped like scorpion tail, and was covered in thorns.

"I am Fan Gui...Some people said that I am too ugly, and I look like a ghost. The great Nether Moon, in order to pursue the eternal power of death, is appearance really so important?" Fan Gui

laughed with a hissing voice. His entire body was shaking because of the excitement. Slowly putting the dagger against Si Wen Ming’s chest, he continued with a gentle voice, "The hero who beat the flood, hehe, I will pull out your entire soul, then turn your body into the most beautiful zombie!"

With a shrill sword buzz, the Xuanyuan sword rose beside Si Wen Ming’s magic sandbox and released dragon-like golden sword power streams as it lunged towards Fan Gui.

Chapter 1366: All His Treasures?

The Xuanyuan sword shone with a blinding golden light and released a mighty sense of power, which forced back countless evil ghosts.

Seeing the golden sword power streams descend, Fan Gui laughed and twisted his wrist. A blood-red jade talisman flashed across his fingertips, then a strange power vibration could be sensed from his entire body.

Powers streams released from the Xuanyuan sword paused instantly, then slantingly brushed across Fan Gui's body. Not a single stream of sword power landed on his body.

Fan Gui curved up his lip corners, then grinned and said, "Eh, they didn't lie. The soul of this Xuanyuan sword belonged to Emperor Xuanyuan, and went along with Emperor Xuanyuan. Now, this sword has its power, but no soul to control it!"

He chuckled and continued, "Marquis Chong, do you know what this jade talisman is?"

Si Wen Ming looked at Fan Gui and paused in shock. He wanted to talk, but failed to say a word. He clearly saw the weird behavior of the Xuanyuan sword. The Xuanyuan sword attempted to protect its owner, but somehow, it gave up on attacking Fan Gui!

"I don't know what this jade talisman is either. But according to the man who gave it to me, it's made from the spirit blood of pure-blood descendants of Emperor Xuanyuan. Under the protection of this magic talisman, the Xuanyaun sword won't hurt even a hair of mine!"

Fan Gui bared his teeth and gave a large grin. The skull-half of his face quaked intensely, and his bones knocked against each other as he continued, "I didn't believe it. I thought this was a risky mission. But surprisingly, the Xuanyuan sword is truly stupid

enough to not attack me!"

Si Wen Ming tried his best to struggle, but the strong evil power from the ghosts surrounding him disabled him from moving. Even his soul was freezing, and the mere idea of ‘struggling’, had started to fade from his mind.

He watched the Xuanyuan sword float in the air, seeming to be confused. It was still glowing with the bright golden light, but never attacked Fan Gui again. The strange blood-red jade talisman turned the Xuanyuan sword into a useless piece.

The soul of the Xuanyuan sword had left the humankind along with Emperor Xuanyuan, which was a top secret. With his last strength, Si Wen Ming screamed inside his mind, ‘Who leaked out the secret? Disabling the Xuanyuan sword with a talisman made from the spirit blood of Emperor Xuanyuan’s descendants? Not even Si Wen had ever heard about this. Who on earth knew how to make a talisman like this?’

The scorpion-tail-shaped dagger easily broke Si Wen Ming’s shirt. Buzz! A dark-yellow-colored seal flew out of Si Wen Ming’s chest and released a thick, dark-yellow light screen, which shielded Si Wen Ming.

The dagger held in Fan Gui’s hand vibrated due to the light screen released from the seal. As he flicked his wrist, he swiftly took tens of steps backward, with blood veins bulging from his ten fingers. Clearly, the counterforce he suffered from the light screen was fairly strong.

"Hm, the divine earth seal, an after-world top-grade supreme treasure, generated from the purest earth power in Pan Gu world, and the greatest treasure of Marquis Chong’s family, passed down through generations!" Fan Gui looked at this dark-yellow seal in a great surprise, as he sensed the strong power vibration from it and yelled, "Aha! I made such a right choice to accept this mission. The one who hired me said I can have all your treasures, after I kill

you!"

Chuckling again, Fan Gui, took out a fist-sized magic talisman, which was carved out of a transparent green tree heart, and said, "The green power naturally suppresses the earth power according to the natural power system believed by you barbarians... Hopefully, this wooden talisman can work. I only need a bit of time!"

As he carefully triggered the wooden talisman, countless thin, cyan-colored light streams fell like a firework and landed on the dark-yellow light screen released from the seal. A strangely strong green power erupted. Countless tiny and complicated green spell symbols sank into the light screen and tore it apart in no time The divine earth seal was wrapped in a faint green light and lost its defensive power temporarily.

Fan Gui carefully approached Si Wen Ming, then smiled and said, "Look, the people who want you dead know about everything you have. Your power is taken away by those evil ghosts. You can't control your treasures now, and you can only watch me break them, one after another."

Carefully pushing the divine earth seal aside, Fan Gui smilingly lunged the dagger towards Si Wen Ming's chest while saying, "So, let's find out what other defensive treasures you have, shall we? Let's see if the things they gave me can..."

Buzz! Following a thunderous bang and a deep, resonant dragon roar, a hexagon shield flew out of Si Wen Ming's body. The shield dazzled with a yellow light and was covered in dragon scales. In the middle of the shield, a lifelike dragon had been roaring resoundingly, letting out dense yellow mists while covering Si Wen Ming's entire body.

"Good treasure! A shield made of thirty-six-thousand scales from a dragon king. I heard that Marquis Chong's family had always been close to the dragon king. It turns out to be true. How can any

ordinary human being ever collect so many scales fallen off the bodies of dragon kings?" Fan Gui grinned happily while easily suppressing the power of the dragon scale shield with three especially powerful magic talismans.

Within the span of around ten breaths, nine powerful treasures flew out of Si Wen Ming's body to protect him. But apparently, the ones who hired Fan Gui knew about all defensive treasures that belonged to Si Wen Ming and his family. Without being controlled by Si Wen Ming, the nine powerful treasures were all temporarily suppressed by Fan Gui with a series of magic talismans.

"Anything else?" Fan Gui greedily looked at the nine treasures floating around Si Wen Ming and said, "Marquis Chong Family, so wealthy! You even have divine supreme treasures which belonged to ancient divine emperors! Ah, I'm getting rich, I'm seriously getting rich. What a lucky mission!"

Delightfully whistling, Fan Gui slowly put the dagger near Si Wen Ming's heart.

"So, based on the information I have, you have no other treasures left for your own protection. You may have some magic talismans that can be triggered automatically, but what can those do? Those things can't even stop this 'soul-hooking dagger' of mine!"

"Trust me, you are such a marvelous hero! So, I will extract your soul in a perfect way, then put it into a metal puppet. You will become my slave, and you will cry in the metal puppet for ten-thousand years!"

Fan Gui trembled excitedly, "Enslaving a hero like you, this is my...Whoa! Damn it!"

Two streams of light swirled out from Si Wen Ming's body, one white and one black. When the dagger almost touched Si Wen Ming's scalp, the two light streams wove into a Taiji diagram which wrapped Si Wen Ming up.

A scarily strong adsorption force stopped the dagger. Followed Fan Gui's shrill screams, the two light streams slightly rotated and ground the dagger into fine ashes.

The black and white light quickly expanded in all directions and filled up the entire tent within a blink of an eye. Tens of millions of evil ghost shrieked and cried, while they were rolled into the black and white lights.

Chapter 1367: What Happened in Pu Ban City

When the black and white lights of He Tu and Luo Shu shone from the tent, Ji Hao had already sensed something.

As the lights flashed, Ji Hao clenched his fingers towards the tent. Essence sun fire condensed into an enormous hand and slapped on the leather tent. Instantly, the tens of layers of defensive spell symbol on the tent exploded like popcorns, and the thick leather pieces were instantly incinerated by the fire, exposing things inside the tent.

Tens of ministers of You Chong Family shouted out loud and rushed towards Si Wen Ming.

Si Wen Ming frowned slightly, waved his hands, and said in a deep voice, "I'm alright, don't fuss! That assassin didn't..."

But before he finished, three high-pitched swishing noises could be heard from a mountain hundreds of miles away. Three dimly glowing arrows flashed across the sky, diving towards Si Wen Ming in an unstoppable way.

One arrow aimed at the spot between his eyebrows and one aimed at his throat.

The black and white lights wove again together and immediately ground the two strong arrows into ashes. But meanwhile, followed by a howl, the archer who attacked Mr. Crow earlier and was put down by Ji Hao and his friends, had his head penetrated by an arrow. The arrow exploded and blew up this archer's head, crushing his soul.

Ji Hao shouted in anger. The golden bridge flew out of his forehead and flashed to where the three arrows came from, leaving a clear streak of light in the air.

He flashed across the air and came to where the three arrows

were released. But he found nothing more than a dimly shining, three-meters-wide teleporting formation. The archer who shot out the three arrows had disappeared without a trace. Ji Hao prepared to step into the teleporting formation. But before he moved, he heard a clear ‘crack’. All spell symbols in the teleporting formation fell apart simultaneously, which meant someone had already destroyed the formation from the other side.

"B*stard!" Ji Hao stomped his foot against the ground. The golden bridge suddenly dazzled with countless thin beams of clear light, then went through space, chasing after the space vibration left by the teleporting formation. In his spiritual space, his embryo of Dao stood up, his eyes releasing waves of Chaos space vibration. At this moment, Ji Hao boosted up his power of the great Dao of space to his current limit!

Within a single moment, Ji Hao saw a tiny light spot across hundreds of thousands of miles. That was where the enemy fled to through the teleporting formation.

As Ji Hao’s body gradually turned blue, attempting to continue tracing the faint space vibration left by the teleporting formation, a strong space power flow struck sideway, shredding the last grasp of the space vibration left by the enemy. Even the golden bridge couldn’t keep tracing the enemy anymore.

Ji Hao fell into silence. The enemies were experienced and extremely cautious, and a master of the great Dao of space definitely existed among them. They erased the last trace and completely disabled Ji Hao from following.

"But we captured the first archer so easily!" Ji Hao helplessly shook his head.

Apparently, the first archer wasn’t lucky enough. He shot an arrow at Mr. Crow, but was discovered by Ji Hao the first time, and suffered a punch from him. He didn’t have the time to trigger his teleporting formation before Ji Hao hurt him. The other three

archers hiding in the darkness were obviously more experienced than Ji Hao. They didn't recklessly attack Mr. Crow. Instead, they seized the opportunity and launched a lethal attack on Si Wen Ming, then conveniently silenced the first archer.

Fortunately, Si Wen Ming was protected by powerful supreme treasures, and the arrows failed to harm him. As for that silenced archer, he was killed, and his head was blown up. No one could recognize him like this for sure. But, Feng Xing still had the sky-shaking divine bow. With the bow, he could be easily identified.

Ji Hao returned to the campsite in a hurry as Si Wen Ming moved to another tent. Fan Gui was nailed on an iron shelf by a group of angry You Chong Family ministers, and had already suffered all kinds of cruel tortures. Covered in wounds and blood, he howled in pain, but never gave any useful information.

Warriors in the campsite were all enraged. They growled thunderously, shouting that they would defiantly dig out the people who wanted Si Wen Ming dead.

Things were clear now. People from the tens of homeless clans were tricked to here to attack the campsite, but apparently, they were used as cannon fodder. They carried strong poisons inside their bodies. If Ji Hao didn't handle that so well, and if those people had managed to break into the campsite, a severe casualty would have been caused.

Turning people into poisonous puddles of blood that exploded ceaselessly, this was obviously a magic created by human beings. Non-humankind beings never used such a bloody and brutal magic. In other words, the ones who wanted Si Wen Ming dead were definitely from the humankind.

Warriors growled in rage, and their rumbling voices even quaked the ground.

They finally beat the flood, and had a chance to go home, repair their houses, plow their farmlands, living happily and safely with

their wives, maybe even having their own kids. But some people actually pointed their weapons at them, who made so many contributions to the flood-control mission. Anyone would be infuriated by this!

Ji Hao, Si Wen Ming and a group of trusted human leaders ran a secret discussion in the tent. About half an hour later, Ji Hao led a large group of warriors with a dark face and drove the nine dragons chariot, flying to Pu Ban City.

In the meanwhile, people in the campsite began spreading the news that Si Wen Ming was badly injured by an assassin and wounded severely by a highly poisonous arrow, as a result of which was now in a coma. The news spread fast, including all details about the fact that the assassin named Fan Gui nearly killed Si Wen Ming and Ji Hao rescued him timely.

Ji Hao unhurriedly drove the nine dragons chariot and flew back to Pu Ban City at the speed slightly faster than a Divine Magi, but not too fast. Over a hundred different sized teleporting magic formations were built between the nine dragon areas and Pu Ban City. With the help of these formations, Ji Hao finally arrived in Pu Ban City seven days after he left the campsite.

Standing in midair in the suburbs of Pu Ban City, Ji Hao bared his teeth, bit his tongue broken, and squeezed two lines of tears out of his eyes. He prepared to shout ‘Minister Si Wen Ming is severely injured by an assassin’ with a heartbreaking voice, but as he scanned across the entire Pu Ban City with his spirit power, this fake cry of his got choked in his throat.

In the center of Pu Ban City, outside the Town Hall, thousands of Maguspreists with all kinds of flags, streamers, magic talismans held in their hands, had been waving their arms, performing an offering dance and incanting a spell around Ji Hao’s Taiji creation cauldron which floated in the air.

Streams of light reached to the Taiji creation cauldron. The

round cauldron had been shaking slightly, letting out deep, muffled buzzes.

These Maguspreists were sealing and suppressing the cauldron!

If Ji Hao came back later, the cauldron might have fallen into the hands of some other people!

From his heart, the anger rose straight into his head. Ji Hao lost the interest to gave a fake cry and tell everyone that Si Wen Ming was injured badly. Instead, he gave a growl with a strong, resounding voice.

"Who dares to touch my treasure? Piss off!"

Following his voice, the cauldron vibrated suddenly. A red light rose from the cauldron, and standing on the light was the Pan Jia sun. The blinding red light swept across the entire area along with a destructive heat.

Thousands of Maguspriests around the cauldron burst into cries and howls as their eyeballs exploded simultaneously. They were all blinded by the heat of Pan Jia sun.

Chapter 1368: Levying With A Good Reason

The light shone as the heatwaves reached the sky. At first, the eyeballs of the thousands of Maguspreists were burned. As the fire burned in their eye sockets, their clothes and hair were set embalmed too. They shrieked, howled, buried their heads in their arms, and rolled on the ground.

The Pan Jia sun released a scorching heat that dried the earth, and melted the soil and sands into lava. The heat struck on the Town Hall, immediately triggering the defensive screens. Layers of light screens were released, covering the Town Hall.

That was a sun. The Pan Jia sun was far weaker than the Pan Gu sun, but still, it was a sun. Besides, the Pan Jia sun was right in front of these people. Therefore, its heat was destructive.

Beams of red light landed on the defensive screens of the Town Hall like countless sharp swords and blades, piercing into the Town Hall. With a series of muffled popping noise, the layers of strong defensive screens were shattered inch by inch. On the wall, the pillars, and the eaves of the Town Hall, dazzling fiery light began bursting, and from the underground, a rumbling noise could be heard, because the defensive formation buried under the Town Hall started to break under a strong counterforce as well.

Those Maguspreists struggled in the lava, which grew deeper and deeper. Their defensive talismans exploded one after another, releasing thin layers of light screens that wrapped their bodies. The lava boiled, as glowing red bubbles blasted, and so did their light screens.

Soon, some Maguspriests had their skin directly burned by the lava. Along with a sizzling noise, the smell of burnt meat started spreading in the air.

Everything happened so fast. Human warriors who were on patrol around the Town Hall, remained stunned for a long while,

then finally burst into shouts and growls. Some nimble warriors trod on the air and rushed into the lava area to save people, while some others raised dragon horns and attempted to give an alarm.

"Useless things!" An old, strong voice came from a distance away. Following the voice, an old man suddenly showed up beside the Taiji creation cauldron. The old man was wearing a silver colored long robe, with his shiny black hair tied up perfectly with a hair band. In the middle of the hair band, an egg-sized ruby was glistening.

"Suppress!" The old man gave a resonant shout. Behind him, a dense red mist rolled up like an ocean, and within the mist, a few long flood dragon silhouettes were faintly visible. He was holding an oddly shaped, six-feet wide square cauldron, releasing rapidly flowing red light streams that poured on the Pan Jia sun, looking like a rain of stars.

The red light exploded, caused lingering, thunderous booms. The Pan Jia sun slightly quaked, while being pressed back into the Taiji creation cauldron inch by inch. The old man smiled, showing obvious pride in his eyes.

Far away, Ji Hao sneered. The Pan Jia sun was so ‘soft and docile’ because Ji Hao restrained its power. In addition to that, ninety percent of its power was sealed by the Taiji creation cauldron. Therefore, in the past few years, the Pan Jia sun had been very easy to control, while it provided Pu Ban City with warmth and light, and helped growling so many crops.

Nevertheless, no matter how gentle and easy to control it was, it was still a sun. An old, dying dragon, even with its horns fallen off, could still shake the sky with its anger when it was truly infuriated. And its claws, which were no longer sharp but still strong, could tear apart all enemies.

"Idiots!" Ji Hao chuckled and snapped his finger, freeing the Pan Jia sun from the Taiji creation cauldron.

From the cauldron, clear streams of mist were released and spread on the Pan Jia sun. The restraining spell Ji Hao cast on the Pan Jia sun was immediately deactivated. The Pan Jia sun started shaking slightly. The Pan Jia sun seemed to be dim and lifeless before this, but it dazzled now, all of a sudden.

Buzz! Stronger heatwaves erupted from the Pan Jia sun, and the temperature was a hundred times higher than before. Golden sunshine surged into every corner like the flood. The old man in a silver robe howled shrilly when the six-feet square cauldron held in his hands melted into liquid under the sunshine. In the next moment, it was gone, turning into a strand of ash within a blink of an eye.

The luxurious silver robe worn by the old man burst with a bright silver light and transformed into glowing snowflakes, hovering around the old man. The robe was a precious treasure. At first glance, Ji Hao knew that the technique of this robe had reached the current limit of the humankind, and its defensive power was even greater than the sum of ten Divine-Magus-level defensive treasures.

But still, it was useless.

The heatwave swirled around those silver snowflakes, easily igniting the silver robe along with a sizzling noise. Within the span of one single breath, the robe was burned into a strand of smoke. That beautiful ruby inlaid in the middle of the old man's hairband released beams of blinding fiery light which condensed into a circle of flame and shielded the old man. Nevertheless, as the light of the Pan Jia sun swept across, the ruby blasted into tiny pieces.

A fist-sized wound was left between the old man's eyebrows. With his face covered in blood, the old man screamed in pain. But by the time his voice was raised, the essence sun fire from the Pan Jia sun already started burning his body.

Followed the sizzling noise, the old man's skin and muscles were

incinerated in an instant. Within a second, his silver, nearly transparent, shining bones were exposed. Those bones were covered in snowflake-shaped symbols, which were especially beautiful under the golden-red sunshine.

"Save him! Save the leader of Cloud Sun Family!" Tens of old Maguspreists darted straight out of the air. They were wearing long black robes, tall hats, and releasing strong power vibrations. With all kinds of powerful treasures and tools, they tried to put out the fire on the old man's body in a great bustle, while casting magic seals to the Pan Jia sun.

Ji Hao laughed out loud. Treading on the nine dragons chariot and wrapped in dense, rolling fiery clouds, he led tens of thousands of trusted warriors and directly showed up beside the Taiji creation cauldron.

He launched a punch without hesitation and crushed the magic seals cast by those Maguspreists. He widely opened his mouth and swallowed the Taiji creation cauldron, then clenched his left fingers towards the Pan Jia sun. The Pan Jia sun immediately shrank into a three-feet-wide golden fireball, quietly floating above Ji Hao's palm.

"What are you doing?" Looking at those Maguspriests, Ji Hao said in a cold voice, "Are you trying to take my treasure?"

After a long while of silence, an old man walked out of the crowd. He had a stately look, wearing a long black robe which was sparkling with faint starlight spots. Apparently, that black robe was also a powerful treasure. The old man held his hands behind his body and had a faint smile on his square, stately face. That smile made Ji Hao feel slightly uncomfortable.

"Marquis Yao Ji Hao, as long as you're back... This sun means a lot to our humankind. From the flood we have suffered, you can easily tell that when our humankind is facing an immeasurable danger. This sun is our last hope."

"Therefore, through our deliberation, the alliance and human clans decided to levy this sun. From now on, this sun is public-owned by the alliance of human clan."

"As this sun must be restrained by this cauldron, to be stored in a safe way, this cauldron of yours is also levied by the humankind."

Chapter 1369: The Leader of Suiren Family

Upon dense fiery clouds, the nine dragons chariot was glowing intensely. Tens of thousands of heavily armored Yao Mountain warriors stared at the old man in anger.

Ji Hao smiled and didn't say a word, but only looked at this old man in a black robe, who seemed to have 'justice' in every pore of his, from head to toe. But from behind him, Man Man had already rushed out, pointed at the old man and yelled angrily, "Why? Those are Ji Hao's treasures! Why can you take them like this?"

The old man smiled 'mildly', then 'amiably' nodded at Man Man and said, "Man Man, I have been friends with your father for years. Back then when I was young, I used to fish dragon-head crocodile flood dragons in Southern Wasteland Dark Wind Beach with Zhu Rong, the Great Libation."

The old man tried to cotton up with Man Man, but she never played such games. She popped out her large bright eyes, curved down her lip corners, and raised her head. Pointing at the old man, she sneered and said, "Ah, you know my father, so what? You want to steal Ji Hao's treasures! Ji Hao's treasures are my treasures! If you dare to steal my treasures, my Abba will beat you to death!"

Ji Hao smiled, while Shaosi chuckled. What a strong logic!

The old man paused briefly, then narrowed his eyes and looked at Man Man with a serious face, "Man Man, you're young, and you don't understand many things yet. I can forgive you, but this is about the future of the humankind. You don't understand these things. So, stay out of this. Otherwise, I will certainly teach you a lesson for your father!"

Before he finished, a raging fire rose into the sky, as Man Man let out the sixty-four fire beads. Releasing a strong heat, those beads swished towards the old man's vital body parts like sixty-four tiny suns.

Because of a slight disagreement, Man Man started the fight. She did have the spirit of wild Southern Wasteland warriors. She was like a human-shaped, violent dragon. Anyone who dared to offend her would be facing her crazy counterstrike at any time.

The old man was shocked. Those fire beads were pre-world treasures too, and were greatly powerful. Once Man Man let out those beads, the old man's hair was burned, and smoke puffed up from his head. He gave a bright shout, then starlight burst from his black robe, weaving into a small stellar map and surrounding him. Fist-sized starlight flashed in the air against the sixty-four fire beads, like countless nimble butterflies.

Boom! Man Man threw out her pair of hammers. From the two hammers, the powerful offensive formation created by Yu Yu himself burst out suddenly, and an explosive force momentarily crushed the starlight released from the old man's robe. Man Man laughed, while the two hammers struck directly on the old man's chest and lower abdomen.

With a muffled thud, water-like ripples were stirred up on the old man's dark robe. He was forced back for tens of steps by Man Man's hammers. With great efforts, he finally steadied his body in the midair.

"Such a great strength!" The old man's 'justice' was immediately gone. Instead, a dark power vibration could be sensed from his entire body as he stared at Man Man, then sneered and said, "Zhu Rong Man Man, how dare you attack me? Do you know who I am?"

All these years, Man Man had been traveling all over Midland with Ji Hao, fighting the flood, the storm, and the enemies. Warriors showered in blood on battlefields used foul languages every day, all of them. Man Man was a hot-tempered girl. Letting her learn how to embroider or draw? Never! But learning how to swear...She was so gifted!

Showing the whites of her eyes, Man Man smiled coldly and said,

"You’re an old b*stard who has outlived his usefulness. I don’t care who you are! Eh? You’re pretty strong! Take another strike!"

Swinging up the pair of hammers, Man Man shouted. Stomping her feet against the air, she caused thunderous air blast while marching rumblingly towards the old man.

The old man’s eyes turned red in anger. He clenched his fists, looked at Man Man, and growled, "I am Suiren Ming, the current leader of the Suiren Family!"

"Does your name have anything to do with the fact that you’re an old b*stard? Whatever your name is, you are an old b*stard!" The sixty-four fire beads hovered around Man Man while dragon-like fire streams pounced on Suiren Ming. Meanwhile, the pair of hammers smashed down from the sky, leaving two long streams of fiery light in the air.

Suiren Ming gave a shrill roar. Abruptly, his body glowed, from the inside to the outside. He looked like burning coal, releasing an inexhaustible light and heat. Long steaks of fire burst from his hands and condensed into a pair of three-hundred-meters long fire swords, clanging against Man Man’s hammers.

Followed by a loud noise, Man Man’s hammers struck on the pair of sword. The offensive formation in the hammers burst out. The pair of fire swords, which were condensed from Suiren Ming’s spirit fire, were crushed. Suiren Ming took a glance at Man Man before he was shrouded by the raging flame of the sixty-four fire beads. He couldn’t believe all this.

Dragon-like fire streams blasted and vibrated Suiren Ming’s body. His long black robe ceaselessly released starlight to cover his body, strenuously defending against Man Man’s natural-disaster-like violent attack.

Everyone who witnessed this exclaimed out loud.

That was Suiren Ming, the current leader of the Suiren Family.

Ever since he was young, he had been nourished by all kinds of precious resources, while Suiren Family elders consumed their own spirit blood to strengthen his body and boost up his power. Before he was thirty years old, he had already reached to the level of Divine Magi, and by now, he was a top-grade powerful human being, only a breath away from the level of Supreme Magus.

However, at the moment, he was actually being beaten by a little girl who was hundreds of years younger than him!

Man Man's pair of hammers smashed down violently, over and over again. The starlight released from Suiren Ming's long black robe had been dimming under every strike from Man Man. Evidently, Man Man's hammers, which seemed to be nothing special, actually possessed a secret, super strong power!

Hundreds of miles away, an old Maguspreist with a black robe and a tall hat smirked coldly. He flicked his fingers and let out three green colored bone needles. Quietly, the three needles were shot to the back of Man Man's neck, her heart, and tailbone, leaving three hundreds of meters long stream of smoke in the air. Once the three bone needles were shot out, dense green mist immediately puffed out. Within the smoke, countless hazy silhouettes of centipedes, scorpions, and poisonous snakes were faintly visible. Clearly, those needles were not beneficial to anyone's health.

Ji Hao roared in anger. He flashed to behind Man Man and wielded his broad sleeve, casting Yu Yu divine thunder. A thunderbolt, which seemed to cut the sky, dazzled across the air and crushed the three bone needles. Conveniently, Ji Hao turned around and slapped on Suiren Ming's face with all of his strength.

"Suiren Ming, what the f*ck are you? How dare you steal my treasure?" Ji Hao had been on the edge all this time. The full-strength slap he launched easily shattered Suiren Ming's long robe and his tens of defensive jade talismans which activated themselves to protect Suiren Ming. Then, his palm landed on

Suiren Ming's face heavily.

Followed a thunderous boom, a half of Suiren Ming's head was blown up, and right after that, his body exploded like an egg that suffered a heavy strike.

Hearing the series of shouts and screams, tens of thousands of people darted out of the Town Hall.

Chapter 1370: The Leader of Gong Sun Family

One strike, one simple slap. Without using any spirit star power, casting any magic, or using any other secret power of his, Ji Hao broke all of Suiren Ming's defenses with pure physical strength and crushed his well-cultivated, strong body.

Flesh and blood squirmed quickly. A strong suction force emerged in the air, gathering Suiren Ming's blood and flesh. Within a second, Suiren Ming's body was rebuilt.

He was naked now. In both shock and anger, he gave a high-pitched scream while pointing out his finger. A new black robe appeared and wrapped his body tightly. Gasping loudly for air, with cold sweat streaming down his back, Suiren Ming drew back with big steps, moving away from Ji Hao.

Smart people could tell that the slap launched by Ji Hao had frightened Suiren Ming. He was freaked out already, and he dared not even to approach Ji Hao and confront him now. At this moment, Suiren Ming still managed to force himself to act calmly, to not scream and cry; this was already not easy for him.

If he weren't a peak-level Divine Magus, and if hadn't touched the secrets of Supreme Magus, Suiren Ming would have died already.

Divine Magi could regrow their bodies from drops of blood. Siren Ming's body exploded, but soon recovered. However, he must have consumed a large amount of spirit blood. Instantly, his spirit blood was weakened by thirty percent. Added with the fact that he was freaked out by Ji Hao, the power vibration released from his body declined to an extreme point.

Holding the Pan Jia sun with one hand and with another hand behind his body, Ji Hao turned away from Suiren Ming, then

glanced at every one of the tens of thousands of people that rushed out of the Town Hall.

Ji Hao knew most of those people. They were Emperor Shun's ministers, the leaders of large human clans, Senior Magi from the Magi Palace, or influential Maguspriests.

A small number of those people were strangers to Ji Hao. Ji Hao had never met them before, but judging by the pride on their faces and sensing the familiar power vibrations from them, Ji Hao easily recognized these people. They were all from those powerful families which suffered great losses back in the Kui Gate.

The leader of Cloud Sun Family, who was almost burned to cinder by the essence sun fire, was saved by his people. The current master Maguspriest of Cloud Sun Family brought a bottle of liquid condensed from the extremely negative power and put out the essence sun fire burning on his body. Without being continuously burned by the essence sun fire, the Cloud Sun Family leader took a deep gasp, and his incinerated skin and flesh started regrowing speedily. Within a couple of breaths, he recovered completely.

Same as Suiren Ming, the Cloud Sun Family leader now looked at Ji Hao with fear in his eyes. Obviously, the essence sun fire which almost burned him out had left a psychological shadow in his heart that might never be erased.

Standing in midair, Ji Hao remained silent. Gradually, among those people rushed out of the Town Hall, the ones familiar with Ji Hao stepped back and lined up orderly in midair above the Town Hall. Clearly, they wouldn't get involved in this.

From a distance away, some earls and marquises who were friends with Ji Hao, smiled bitterly and nodded at Ji Hao, seeming to be reluctant. Apparently, they wanted to do something for Ji Hao, but under the pressure from those powerful families, they could do nothing.

Those powerful families could be considered as the ‘origin’ of the humankind. Among those marquises and earls on the scene, ninety-nine percent of their clans were branches of those powerful, ancient families, and were connected tightly with them. Some elders and leaders from those powerful families were these earls and marquises’ direct elderships.

They couldn’t help Ji Hao, neither did they dare to help him. Ji Hao understood them. Therefore, he gave them friendly smiles and nodded to them, hinting that even though they couldn’t help him, they were till his friends.

The elders and leaders from those powerful families, and the large groups of people behind them, had been slowly approaching Ji Hao. Gradually, the leaders of those families walked to the front, while those elders and people lined up orderly behind their leaders.

Deep wing-flapping noises could be heard from all directions as large numbers of fierce birds rose into the air and carried heavily armored warriors from these families and clans, coming close to Ji Hao. Dust rose in clouds from the ground while countless strong beasts carried warriors, who were armed to the teeth, and encircled Ji Hao from a distance away.

"Hah!" Thunderous growls came from the nine dragons chariot. Tens of thousands of Yao Mountain warriors trod on fiery clouds and centered on the enormous chariot, quickly forming a strong battle formation. Over ten-thousand Jia Clan warriors, who were much taller than human warriors, seemed to be even more combative. As their blood boiled, their bodies expanded suddenly, and within a blink of an eye, they reached nine meters in height.

Followed a series of bone creaking noise, Taisi put out his white bone altar that he carried with him everywhere. Placing the Nailhead Seven Arrows Book on the altar, he gripped his bone wand, popped out his eyes, and glared at the leaders of those powerful families.

A few elders with wrinkled faces narrowed their eyes as they glanced at the Nailhead Seven Arrows Book on Taisi's altar. Their faces twisted instantly, as they hurriedly and silently sent their voices to the ears of their people by using special magic.

Those people, who had been approaching Ji Hao step by step, paused immediately, while the faces of the tens of leaders turned extremely dark.

Clearly, these knowledgeable people recognized the Nailhead Seven Arrows Book. One had to mention that the Nailhead Seven Arrows Book was a terrifyingly powerful, an evil and cruel treasure for magic curses. No one was willing to stand out and take a strike from the Nailhead Seven Arrows Book for no reason.

Some cautious people even secretly activated their magic treasures and talismans, designed to defend against dark curses. As differently colored light sparkled behind their bodies, the hazy silhouettes of all kinds of puppets made from plants and woods emerged behind their bodies. These puppets could die for their owners.

"Ah, you're all pretty careful, aren't you? Are you afraid of death?" Looking at these people who seemed to be facing formidable enemies, Ji Hao abruptly laughed out loud.

"Marquis Yao Ji Hao!" A strong voice shouted. Following the voice, a middle-aged man walked out of the crowd of Gong Sun Family people with big steps. This man was wearing a yellow robe, with a six-feet-long yellow dragon coiled on each of his arms. He had a square, angular face, and the power vibration released from his body was as sharp as a sword.

"The...Leader of the Gong Sun family?" Ji Hao squinted at this man. Since he walked out of the crowd of Gong Sun Family people under the current circumstances and voiced as a representative of the family, he must be the family leader.

The former leader of Gong Sun Family was Gong Sun Meng. His

soul was devoured when he was possessed by a sky devil. He created Gong Sun Tianming, and insisted on pushing Gong Sun Tianming onto the throne of the human emperor. Ji Hao was a part of this whole ridiculous thing, from the beginning to the end. Gong Sun Meng was gone, and Gong Sun Family would certainly elect a new leader after he died.

"I am Gong Sun Bo." said the man with a deep voice, "Marquis Yao Ji Hao, how dare you go against your superiors? The leaders of Suiren Family and Cloud Sun Family are honorable elders. How dare you hurt them?"

Ji Hao grinningly looked at Gong Sun Bo, then narrowed his eyes and remained silent for a while. Only then did he respond slowly, "Not even honorable elders can steal my things. Those treasures are mine, and will always be mine. Whoever dares to try to steal from me, I will chop off his hands. If he tries again, I will cut off his head. Honorable elders or not, my things can only be mine. No one can take anything from me without my permission!"

Gong Sun Bo remained silent for a while, raised his head, and drew a circle in the air. He then pointed at every leader or elder from those powerful families behind him and said, "What if we combine our powers?"

Ji Hao smiled, then pointed at the Pan Jia sun held in his left hand, and said, "You guess, do I dare to detonate this thing in Pu Ban City? Boom! Make it explode?"

Chapter 1371: Go Down With the Ship

Gong Sun Bo's square and angular face twisted instantly. Instinctively, he took three steps backward in a row.

The facial expressions of all leaders, elders, and people from those powerful families and clans changed. They stared at Ji Hao as if he were a ghost. With twitching eye corners, many of them couldn't help but fix their eyes on the Pan Jia sun.

The Pan Jia sun was thousands of times weaker than the Pan Gu Sun, but still, it was a real sun that contained immeasurable power and energy, and could lead to destruction.

When it floated above Pu Ban City, providing the city with light and warmth during the dark days brought by the flood, this Pan Jia sun was so nice and adorable...But, if Ji Hao truly detonated it, and once its power erupted...No one could tell exactly how much damage it would cause to Midland, but Pu Ban City would be flattened for sure, even if it were ten times larger!

Not even Divine Magi could survive an explosion like that, right?

Could they survive? Probably not. A natural star could create a Supreme Magus, but the power possessed by this Pan Jia sun was more than a hundred times greater than the power of any natural star in Pan Gu world.

"You...How dare you?" Gong Sun Bo realized his gaffe, as he was actually frightened back for three steps by something Ji Hao said. Even worse, all Gong Sun Family people on the scene witnessed this. Gong Sun Bo's face blushed in anger. "You dare not to do this!" Staring at Ji Hao like a mad wolf, he said through gritted teeth.

"Wanna bet?" Ji Hao looked at Gong Sun Bo expressionlessly and said, "Wanna make a bet about if I dare to detonate it here in Pu Ban City? Ahyaya!"

Abruptly, Ji Hao gave a high-pitched shout. Slapping on his own forehead, he bared his teeth, gave an ugly fake grin, and said, "I'm so stupid! Why would I detonate it in Pu Ban City? People living in this city never offended me...I should do it in You Xiong City. Emperor Xuanyuan, I suppose he wouldn't blame me for blowing up his ancestral temple, would he?"

Shrugging innocently, Ji Hao sighed and continued, "What can I do? His descendants are all bullies. They even want to sh*t on my head. Even though many good people existed among his descendants...In order to vent my anger, I can only go down with the ship..."

Gong Sun Bo widely opened his mouth, and so did the group of Gong Sun Family elders behind him, and all Gong Sun Family people. They felt being choked by Ji Hao's words, that even caused them a pain in the heart and disabled them from talking for a long while.

Detonating the Pan Jia sun in You Xiong City? Even blowing up Emperor Xuanyuan's temple? Ji Hao, how dare he? But, but, was he really daring enough to do that?

Looked at those dumbfounded Gong Sun Family people, Ji Hao smiled and said, "Ah, 'go down with the ship', you may not understand its meaning. After all...this idiom is way ahead of you. But, there is another saying that you must understand, 'fight desperately like a cornered wild beast'... You get it, don't you?"

Gently patting the Pan Jia sun, which had taken back all of its warmth and light because of the restraining spell Ji Hao cast, turning into a dim ball, Ji Hao continued word by word, "Don't push this too far. If you provoke me beyond my endurance, I may truly do something that even I can't understand, regardless of everything else."

After a long while of silence, Gong Sun Bo puffed out his chest. Once again, he released that sharp-sword-like power vibration and

took three large steps towards Ji Hao. Looking at Ji Hao coldly with his head held high, he said, "Ji Hao, how can Gong Sun Family people lower our heads because of some threatening words said by a young man like you? The Pan Jia sun is related to the future of the humankind. You have to give it to the alliance."

An especially sharp, mountain-heaven sword intent burst from Gong Sun Bo's body and locked on Ji Hao.

Tens of exceptionally fierce power streams with different natures erupted from the other leaders and elders and landed on Ji Hao's body like a giant mountain. In the next moment, hundreds, thousands, tens of thousands of power streams were released, all aimed at Ji Hao! In the surroundings, all warriors from those powerful families and clans boosted up their powers as much as they could. Thinking of Ji Hao as a deadly enemy, they turned their intent of killing into boiling lava and poured straight on Ji Hao's body.

If Ji Hao moved, the hundreds of thousands of warriors would immediately launch a full strike.

The powers of the leaders and elders and core members of the noblest tens of human families and clans, and the greatest magic treasures that belonged to these families, were combined. The combined force was great enough to crush stars and even slaughter Supreme Magi.

"This is the official result of our discussion. The Pan Jia sun has important value to our humankind, it should belong to all human beings." Gong Sun Bo said righteously, "Marquis Yao Ji Hao, for your selfishness, you hid the important treasure that belongs to all human beings. What you did is almost a betrayal to the humankind! If you don't hand out the Pan Jia sun, the alliance of human clans will hunt you down with no spare effort! Your entire family will be executed!"

In Ji Hao's hand, the Pan Jia sun dazzled with a blinding light.

Emperor Shun’s voice could suddenly be heard. With a slightly embarrassed look, Emperor Shun darted straight out from the air in front of Ji Hao. Looking at Ji Hao in a complicated way, he growled, "Stop! Ji Hao, stay calm! Stop!"

Looking at Emperor Shun coldly, Ji Hao started talking with a deep voice, "Emperor Shun, Marquis Chong Si Wen Ming is injured severely outside the Huai Gate by an assassin. By now, he is still in coma. I came back to deliver the news...Hehe, but I didn’t think that I would encounter something so disgusting once I arrived in Pu Ban City."

Breathing deeply, Ji Hao continued in a harsh tone, "When facing the flood, we were short of food. I dedicated my treasures and helped people through the difficult time. I made a contribution, and did nothing wrong! This Pan Jia sun is my personal belonging. These people, these people..."

"Emperor Shun," Ji Hao pointed heavily at Gong Sun Bo and the others and continued,

"Tell me, what should I do under this situation."

Emperor Shun’s face instantly turned pale. "Si Wen Ming in a coma? Who did it?!" Emperor Shun growled.

The faces of Gong Sun Bo and the other elders slightly twitched when they heard Ji Hao. They seemed to give a sigh of relief together, but soon, their mouth corners curved down and showed dissatisfaction — Si Wen Ming was only injured to a coma? Why wasn’t he dead already? It was such a perfect plan, as they had counted in all defensive treasured Si Wen Ming had. Si Wen Ming shouldn’t have a chance to survive at all!

Only injured to a coma...This wasn’t enough!

Ji Hao frowned and yelled out, "Emperor Shun, Uncle Wen Ming is only injured and in a coma, he’s not dead! Let’s solve the problem under our eyes first. They attempted to steal my

treasures. Tell me, what should I do?"

Emperor Shun frowned. All of sudden, Gong Sun Bo burst with a shout, "Kill! Don’t give this kid any chance!"

From all directions, strong power streams surged like tidewater. Hundreds of fierce power vibrations rose straight into the sky. The greatest treasures that belonged to the tens of powerful families were activated simultaneously to an extreme level. The space around Ji Hao suddenly collapsed and was crushed, becoming a bottomless black hole.

Tens of giant hands condensed from fire and mist reached down towards the Pan Jia sun.

Amidst the chaos, Ji Hao’s laughter echoed through the clouds. All of a sudden, the Pan Jia sun released a splendid light and a scorching heat.

"No! Stop!" Emperor Shun roared in both shock and rage.

Chapter 1372: Sworn Enemy

Surely, Ji Hao wasn't crazy enough to detonate the Pan Jia sun in Pu Ban city.

Those people were the crazy ones, not him.

Facing the destructive strike launched by elites from tens of powerful human clans and families, Ji Hao let out the Pan Gu bell and shielded himself against the first wave of shockwaves, then unlocked the first layer of seal he cast on the Pan Jia sun and released a small part of its power.

In his spiritual space, his colorless embryo of Dao locked its fingers together and incanted the nine secret words. With a tremendous spirit power, the embryo of Dao forcibly triggered the Pan Jia sun, and the sun emitted a splendent glow while releasing a great heat. The Pan Jia sun didn't burn the earth of Pu Ban City. Instead, its light and heat condensed into golden, shining, and almost tangible, sharp flaming spears, darting towards those people.

Countless flaming spears swished across the sky and left clear traces in the air.

The hundreds of thousands of elites from those powerful human families and clans were instantly disarrayed. Their mounts were freaked out by the destructive power contained in those flaming spears. Giant, fierce birds desperately darted all over the sky, with their feathers drifting in the air. On the ground, strong beasts roared thunderously, running everywhere in panic. Some beasts and birds even had their bones softened by the fear, falling straight to the ground.

Those flaming spears swept across the disordered formation of those powerful human clans and families. The bodies of large numbers of warriors were penetrated, as the fire spread rampantly inside their bodies. Within a blink of an eye, golden flames burned

from every pore of theirs.

Shrill screams could be heard without an end while human-shaped torches fell from the sky, one after another. Before they landed on the ground, they were already incinerated. On the ground, countless people struggled and roared, but they only managed to last a few seconds before they were burned into ashes too.

Beasts and birds howled in pain, as they were also penetrated by those flaming spears. Their enormous bodies were burning, looking much more spectacular than the burning bodies of their owners.

Even a few birds with the wingspans of over five-hundred meters fell from the sky, burning ragingly. Because of their bulk, they continued burning after thudding against the ground, until the earth around their bodies was burned into several large pits filled with boiling lava.

Bearing the brunt of Ji Hao's counterattack, those families, clan leaders, and elders had been trying their best to boost up their powers, injecting their powers into the magic treasures held in their hands. Those were hundreds of powerful magic treasures that existed since the prehistorical era, passed down through generations. They were nourished by the spirit blood of generations of Divine Magi, and were already as powerful as pre-world spirit treasures. These treasures buzzed and vented their endless fury towards Ji Hao; they seemed to be as raging as their owners.

Fire burned across the air, dense mist coiled, while boiling hot rain fell from the sky, and shooting stars descended. In broad daylight, countless sparkling stars emerged in the sky. They sent down blade-like beams of light which twisted the space, stopped the time, and created all kinds of bizarre and motley phenomenon.

The powers released from the hundreds of top-grade magic

treasure almost turned the sky above Pu Ban City back into Chaos. People living in the city screamed in pain. The twisted natural powers surged violently like the flood, breaking their bones and internal organs. Large numbers of citizens were pressed down to the ground, screaming and vomiting blood.

Even the flood failed to kill or hurt a single human being inside Pu Ban City, but the strike launched joint-handedly by the leaders and elders of the tens of powerful human families and clans caused huge casualties in Pu Ban City. Hundreds of thousands of people died right on the spot, while tens of millions were injured.

"Stop! Stop! This is Pu Ban City, a territory of human beings! Living in this city are all human beings!" In the storm of power, Emperor Shun's raging but weak roars sounded so insignificant.

"Stop! Stop now!" Emperor Shun growled madly. He spread his arms and rushed towards Gong Sun Bo and the others, attempting to shield the city against the massive attacks launching by Gong Sun Bo and the others with his chest.

"Emperor Shun! By the Kui Gate, Ji Hao killed countless of our people! Today, he has to die!" A Chu Wu Clan old Maguspriest screamed, "All his treasures are ours... All his people must become slaves... All his families have to die! Even as the human emperor, you can't stop us!"

This old Maguspreist smiled twistedly while wielding a six-feet-long streamer towards Emperor Shun. Painted on the streamer were the faces of countless ghosts. A blue and green colored dim light condensed into a fist-sized sword, flew out, and pierced deep into Emperor Shun's chest.

A dim light shone from Emperor Shun's body, which blocked the sword and defended Emperor Shun against this fierce strike.

Sideway, tens of people moved simultaneously. They released tens of bright, colorful light streams, which covered Emperor Shun's body. Emperor Shun gave a muffled snort in pain. Blood

spurted out from his nose, eyes, ears, and mouth, while he fell to the ground from the sky.

"Hehe, Emperor Shun!" Ji Hao laughed out loud, "Being an emperor like this is no fun! Hehe, these people, hehe, these people..."

Those sharp flaming spears almost wiped out all hundreds of thousands of elites from those powerful families and clans. More flaming spears had been darting out of the Pan Jia sun ceaselessly, merging into an ocean of fire and confronting those leaders and elders.

Around Ji Hao, the space had been crushed completely, and all natural powers were disturbed.

The Pan Gu bell floated above Ji Hao's head, releasing torrents of Chaos power. All of the Chaos power generated by the crushed space was absorbed by the bell. Simple, anciently styled spell symbols emerged on the bell. Gradually, a giant figure with spread arms turned clearer and clearer on the surface of the bell, seeming to embrace the sky.

"Haha!" Ji Hao laughed wildly out. Facing so many powerful beings, the great pressure seemed to squash Ji Hao's internal organs, even under the protection of the Pan Gu bell. His bones had been letting out a slight cracking noise.

He had to fight this battle with no efforts spared.

As for the consequences...Whatever!

Ji Hao pulled out Pan Gu Dragon Mark. A pair of dragons flashed across the sword edge, while deep, dry, yet resonant dragon roars echoed through the sky, along with a fierce intent of killing. Ji Hao looked at the sky and let his Yu Yu sword intent flow across his heart like a chilly stream of water. As he gently wielded the sword with his right hand, his power was drained by Pan Gu Dragon mark.

Four hazy swords flashed out of Pan Gu Dragon Mark, floating in the north, south, east and west.

Emperor Shun raised his head. Seeing the four flashing hazy swords, he seemed to think of something. While vomiting blood, he growled out rumblingly, "Ji Hao! No...Don’t do this. They are human beings too. They’re all..."

The Pan Gu Dragon Sword dazzled, and the four hazy swords flashed across the sky, instantly swallowing Gong Sun Bo and the others.

Puffing noises could be heard without an end, as human bodies were torn into pieces by the edges of swords. Metal clangs were started, as the greatest magic treasures belonging to those powerful human families and clans were cut open by Pan Gu Dragon Sword.

Amidst thunderous booms, those treasures were broken violently, their spell symbols exploded, and their powers erupted.

Shrill howls lingered in the city, while those leaders and elders were wounded severely by the explosions of their own treasures.

Suddenly, Gong Sun Bo darted out of a raging fire. An eye of his was blown up, and a half of his body was crushed. With a hoarse voice, he wailed, "Marquis Yao Ji Hao! You are a sworn enemy now!"

Chapter 1373: Whose Standpoint

The roof of the Town Hall was gone.

The square before the Town Hall was turned into a thousands of meters deep lava pit by the heat of the Pan Jia sun.

Badly injured elders and leaders soaked in the lava dragged their broken bodies, howling with strong voices and cursing Ji Hao's ancestors with the worst languages they knew.

Holding the dazzling Pan Jia sun, Ji Hao looked just like Taiyi, the ancient East Emperor. Quietly floating in the air, he was looking down at those people. The Pan Gu bell floated above his head, coiling in heatwaves and letting out a deep buzz.

Pan Gu Dragon Mark had been shaking agitatedly. It vibrated so intensively that it almost crushed Ji Hao's finger bones, and had been giving him an unbearable pain. Pan Gu Dragon Mark was eager to taste more blood. It madly wanted to tear all top-grade treasures on the scene, which belonged to those powerful human clans and families. The successive killing done by Ji Hao triggered the wildness and ferocity of Pan Gu Dragon mark. Inside the sword, a soul was forming, filled with a strong will of killing.

Gong Sun Bo was also floating in the air, stunned. He was covered in blood. Half of his body was fragmented, and even a half of his spine was exposed in the air. He looked at the others, who were either dead or seriously injured. He couldn't believe his eyes.

Hundreds of thousands of elite warriors had all been incinerated. But this loss didn't bother Gong Sun Bo. Those elite warriors were from tens of families and clans, which meant that each clan only lost about ten-thousand warriors on an average. These powerful families and clans each had tens of millions of elite warriors. Therefore, this slight loss was not even worth mentioning to them.

What shriveled Gong Sun Bo, what made him regret, was the

death of those elders!

Were those elders especially strong? Not likely. Were they capable? Not likely. Had they made major contributions to their families and clans? Not likely. Were they extra important to the humankind? No. Nevertheless, every single one of these elders had a strong background. They were all pure-blood, direct descendants of ancient human emperors. In their families and clans, their powers were tightly connected and ineradicable. Sometimes, these incapable, contribution-less, almost useless elders could bring family and clan leaders headaches.

By the Kui Gate, Ji Hao had already taken out hundreds of elders from these families and clans. But those elders were not as important as these ones he killed in front of the Town Hall. After all, the ones who could be sent out to the field were never truly important, even though they also had backgrounds.

However, these elders who came to Pu Ban City this time were different. They came to punish Ji Hao, and in the meantime, they came to pressure Emperor Shun by taking advantage of their seniorities. These elders were the truly powerful ones in their families and clans; in their families and clans, they were able to rally multitudes at their calls.

The death of any one of them could shake a strong family or clan. But what happened now? Over a hundred of these ‘treasures’, ‘important family members’, were directly killed by Ji Hao. Hundreds were left soaking and yelling in the lava, and about a thousand lucky ones were not injured too badly. But at the moment, they were all standing aside in a daze. Clearly, these people were all scared out of their wits.

Those were the absolute elites of tens of top-grade human families and clans. With their powers combined, how on earth did they end up like this?

Gong Sun Bo stared at Ji Hao and trembled intensely. The

completely undecorated bell floating above Ji Hao's head, what kind of treasure was it? Just now, Ji Hao took a strike launched by so many powerful people together. He seemed to be slightly injured, but still, he looked so energetic and healthy. Even if he were truly wounded, that could only be flesh wounds!

"Ji Hao! You, you, you..." Gong Sun Bo'd mind wasn't clear. He wanted to say something, but failed to do so.

Ever since the alliance of human clans was founded, nothing like this had ever happened!

An insignificant marquis, who was born as a Southern Wasteland barbarian, actually dared to challenge all these top-grade human families, including You Xiong Family, Suiren Family, You Chao Family, Cloud Sun Family, High Sun Family, Wu Chang Family, Ghost Chariot Family, and Chu Wu Clan!

Not only challenge, he killed so many people from those families!

Gong Sun Bo's eyes were unfocused. Finally, he had some vague ideas in his head. "You, you, you killed so many people, so many people! How dare you?! How dare you?!" He stuttered.

Ji Hao held the Pan Jia sun, calmly looked at him, and responded, "Why don't I dare? Tell me, why don't I?"

Gong Sun Bo barely raised his arm, which had only half a forearm bone remaining, then pointed at Ji Hao and screamed, "I am the ruler of You Xiong City... the current leader of Gong Sun Family... an elder of Mi Family and other large human clans! You..."

Before he finished, a dark stream of blood spurted out of his mouth. With difficulty, he coughed a piece of yellow-colored, crystal-like bone out of his mouth.

Ji Hao laughed teasingly and said, "I thought you're Emperor Xuanyuan himself! Since you dared to bully the others, you should know that you might have your heads smashed one day. You're the

ruler of You Xiong City, and you're the leader of Gong Sun Family, but so what? You attempted to steal my treasures and tried to kill me. So, I do dare to kill you!"

Gong Sun Bo was infuriated by Ji Hao's words, that he even showed the whites of his eyes. Coughing intensely and letting out mouthfuls of blood, he finally caught his breath. Pointing at Ji Hao again, he shouted, "Kill me? How dare you?! You, you..."

Pan Gu Dragon Mark flashed across the air while Ji Hao dashed to Gong Sun Bo's face with one single step. Shining with a sharp frigid light, the sword lunged fiercely towards the spot between Gong Sun Bo's eyebrows.

He had killed so many already, so why didn't he dare to kill one more?

Ji Hao gritted his teeth. Indeed, he had killed so many people. But he was powerful being now, so why would he be afraid? His cultivation was still at the level of half-step Supreme Magus, but with his basic level Pan Gu body, he could absolutely confront a Supreme Magus!

As for his cultivation of Dao, after what the mysterious man did to him, he had already transformed his red sun primordial spirit into an embryo of Dao. This meant that he was currently at the grade of embryo of Dao, which equaled the level of Supreme Magus!

As a Magus, as a Cultivator of Dao, he was stunningly powerful. Added with Yu Yu, someone legendarily strong to depend on, why would Ji Hao be afraid of anything now?

Gong Sun Bo watched the blinding sword light dazzling at his face. In fright, he screamed with a hoarse voice — Ji Hao truly dared to kill him... he truly dared to! He was not pretending! He seriously dared to kill him!

Holy ancestors' souls, how dare he do that? Didn't he know that a

clone of Emperor Xuanyuan was still in Pan Gu world? That was the ancestor of the entire You Xiong Family!

A silhouette flashed over. While vomiting blood, Emperor Shun showed up right before Ji Hao’s sword edge, with his arms widely spread.

Ji Hao hurriedly took back the sword. The sword edge brushed across Emperor Shun’s temple and cut off a wisp of hair.

With a bitter grin, Emperor Shun looked at Ji Hao and said with a deep voice, "Marquis Yao, restrain your anger! You’ve been doing nothing but killing, but how many can you kill?"

Turning around, Emperor Shun looked at Gong Sun Bo, and continued, "Gong Sun Leader, if you insist on solving this with violence, I will stay out of this, even if you die right here!"

Gong Sun Bo paused for a long while, then abruptly burst into a shriek, "Emperor Shun, which side you’re on?"

Emperor Shun remained silent for quite long, then slowly nodded and responded, "I’m on the side of the humankind! For all I did, I did for the humankind!"

Giving a bitter smile, Emperor Shun’s face gradually twisted as he said, "You, you better not push me!"

Chapter 1374: This is Personal

"You, what do you want?" Hearing Emperor Shun's raging growl, Gong Sun Bo remained silent for a while, and then asked the question with a low voice.

"What on earth do you want?" Emperor Shun gripped Gong Sun Bo's shoulders with both hands and growled deeply with a slightly shaking voice, "You have attained enough, and you have enjoyed enough. Gong Sun Bo, don't push too far."

"Without our support, can you sit safely on that throne?" Gong Sun Bo smiled scornfully, with the pride and arrogance that was supposed to exist on the face of the leader of a powerful family which descended directly from an ancient emperor. He held his chin sightly high and looked at Emperor Shun.

"I am ready for abdication. If I kill you now, what can the Gong Sun Family do?" Clearly, Emperor Shun was already burning in wrath, as he even said something he would never say on normal days, "You should know that I have over ninety percent chance to pass the trial of Supreme Magus and successfully become one. If I kill you right now, what can your family do?"

Gong Sun Bo's eyes were unfocused slightly. Through gritted teeth, he said in a deep voice, "Emperor Shun, don't forget that in the end, your blood originated from You Xiong Family too. You are a descendant of Emperor Zhuanxu, which means you're also a descendant of Emperor Xuanyuan."

"If Emperor Xuanyuan is here himself, he might pull out his sword and hack you disappointing descendants to death!" Emperor Shun's face was as dark as the dense dark clouds in the sky before the arrival of a storm. Word by word, he sneered and said with scorn and contempt, "Do you really think that the things you did deserve the title of 'emperor descendants'?"

"Everything we did, we did it for the future of our families." Gong

Sun Bo said, also with a dark face. He attempted to say more, but the noises in the surroundings shut his mouth.

Many of those people, who were wounded severely by Ji Hao, now struggled back up from the ground. They poured magic medicines into their mouths to heal their injuries and replenish their spirit blood. They were important members of their families. Therefore, the medicines they took were all extremely precious and rare. Quite a few elders who had their entire bodies damaged, with only their heads remaining. But even they started healing with the help of magic medicines too.

More and more people stood back up from the ground, gritted their teeth and stared at Ji Hao, gasping loudly in rage like injured beasts. If that strike Ji Hao launched just now didn't frighten them so much, they would have pounced on Ji Hao once again.

With the Pan Jia sun floating upon his left hand, Ji Hao quietly stood in midair.

Silently, he scornfully looked at these 'elites'. He really wanted to say something provocative and enrage the people, so they could start another suicidal wave of attack. He was confident that he could take out all of these 'elites' this time.

Just now, he launched a strike with all of his power, by doing which, he gained a deep understanding of Yu Yu's sword art and sword formation. If he did it again, the effect would be at least fifty percent greater than before. Ji Hao felt a bit itchy in his heart. Should he say something provocative to these people? He was truly excited to do so!

Emperor Shun sensed the strong viciousness from Ji Hao. He hurriedly turned around and slightly shook his head to Ji Hao with a faint bitter smile. He was earnestly requesting Ji Hao to not bring the situation to an irreparable state.

Ji Hao also shook his head and gave a bitter grin. He wanted to tell Emperor Shun that ever since people from these families

showed up before the Kui Gate, forced away Si Wen Ming and himself, then attempted to steal the most glorious final credit of the flood-control mission, the situation was already irreparable.

Since they showed up, these people from powerful families were pure enemies.

But, for Emperor Shun's sake!

As Emperor Shun said, he was ready for the abdication. He was going to draw his spirit star down, merge with the star, and become a Supreme Magus. When Emperor Shun became a Supreme Magus, according to the latent rule of the human society, he could never step into any internal affairs of the humankind.

When Si Wen Ming ascended to the throne, if these people still didn't give up, Ji Hao would have plenty of time to play the game with them.

Smilingly letting out the Taiji creation cauldron, Ji Hao carefully sent the Pan Jia sun into it, then took it back into his body. After that, he sent Pan Gu Dragon Mark back into his body as well. Then, he cupped his hands, bowed to Emperor Shun with a harmless smile, and said, "As you wish. I will take the slaps but never strike back, hear people call me names without cursing back...Ah, they're bullying us...But, the overall situation for the humankind, I get it, I get it!"

The group of leaders and elders almost vomited blood.

Thinking about the overall situation for the humankind? Taking the slaps but not strike back, hearing people call him names without cursing back? Marquis Yao Ji Hao, damn him! The hundreds of thousands of elite warriors he incinerated just now, was that the result of his 'no strike back, no curse back'?

Many of those elders and leaders were nearly driven crazy by the anger. In both rage and shame, they looked at the Pan Gu bell floating upon Ji Hao's head, which had still been releasing strands

of Chaos power. If they could break the strong defense of this bell, they would have attacked again, regardless of anything else.

"The humankind never had such a rule. No one has ever said that when a human being attained a useful treasure, the treasure would be owned by the public." Emperor Shun sank his fingers into Gong Sun Bo's shoulders and said in a bland tone, "You keep your own treasures. No one should take anything that belongs to your neighbor without a good reason, not even a sheep or a cow. This rule passed down from the era of Emperor Fuxu."

"I know that you each have a few proud, ambitious young men in your families, who have taken the power of the sun as their spirit power." Emperor Shun smiled coldly and said, "Do you want to merge with a sun and become Supreme Magi? In the past countless centuries, many had tried. As for the result, I think you don't need me to tell you."

Raising his head, Emperor Shun looked at the sky. High up in the sky, the twelve water worlds had been merging with Pan Gu world, and the rumbling noise was even shaking the whole world.

He continued coldly, "Over there are twelve worlds. If your boys want to merge with suns, go, no one will stop them!"

Those leaders and elders remained silent...The Pan Jia sun had its power restrained by a mysterious, great power. It was gentle and easy to control. Therefore, one could try merge with it with no worries. There was a great chance for any powerful Divine Magi with the sun power as his or her spirit power to become a Supreme Magi with the Pan Jia sun.

But, the suns in the twelve small worlds? Those native, raw, unrestrained suns which had been releasing all of their lights and heats? One could try if one dared to, but the result...wouldn't be good anyway.

"What happened this time..." Emperor Shun tried his best to mediate the conflict between Ji Hao and those powerful families.

"For what happened this time, Emperor Shun, you don’t need to worry about it. Some family members are killed, that’s all. It’s personal, between him and us, and these things do happen a lot. Which clan doesn’t have a few sworn enemies?" The leader of High Sun Family walked out of the crowd, then smilingly nodded and said, "Emperor Shun, even back in the era of Emperor Fuxi, he wouldn’t step into the ‘blood vengeance’ between clans, would he?"

Emperor Shun’s mouth corners twitched.

The surviving leaders, elders and elite members of those families and clans smiled grimly. They pulled out ancient-styled stone or jade daggers, cut open their wrists, and condensed their blood into twisted spell symbols.

"We swear with our blood that Marquis Yao Ji Hao is our deadly enemy, and our hatred to him can only be washed off with blood and souls."

Chapter 1375: Treacherous Undercurrent

The roof of the Town Hall was temporarily repaired. Inside the Town Hall, all clan leaders, earls, and marquises, who were still qualified to attend and take part in a discussion regarding the future of the humankind, sat straight on the ground.

Sitting behind Gong Sun Bo and the other leaders were a large number of marquises and earls, lined up according to their bloodlines. The number of those people was over sixty percent of the total number of all human marquises and earls on the scene.

The rest forty percent of marquises and earls were divided into several groups according to their relationships, scattered in the corners of the hall. In the broad hall, only the space around Ji Hao, Man Man, Shaosi and Ji Hao's other friends was completely empty, without even a ghost.

Many Marquises and earls, who were close to Ji Hao, nodded to him with bitter smiles. Their clans and families were branches of those powerful ones, and all originated from those powerful families. Both themselves and their clans had been affected largely by those powerful families. In front of Gong Sun Bo and the other leaders and elders, not a single one of these earls and marquises dared to show any friendliness towards Ji Hao.

These families were way so powerful; their influence was even beyond people's imagination.

If one thought about it and dug deep, even Emperor Shun's family was a branch of You Xiong Family, both descending from Emperor Xuanyuan. Facing these powerful families, even Emperor Shun had to consider the 'overall situation', not to mention these earls and marquises.

Ji Hao sat on the ground, rested his hands on his knees, and smilingly lapped at Gong Sun Bo.

These powerful families hated Ji Hao so much, but at the moment, they wouldn't recklessly attack again. As the members of top-grade powerful human families, these people were proud. They wouldn't let themselves be stuck in a bad situation like those who lived in the bottom of the society. They tried, but failed to talk out Ji Hao. Now, they had made the whole thing personal, and they would solve all problems in a personal way.

Gong Sun Bo and the other leaders nodded to Ji Hao smilingly too. They hated Ji Hao to the utmost degree, but as leader of top-grade powerful families, they still needed to act polite and generous.

At this very moment, everyone in the Town Hall had a warm smile on their faces, as if Ji Hao had never slaughtered hundreds of thousands of people earlier. In the hall, only Ji Hao and his friends sat in the empty area like an iceberg; the coldness spread from them even chilled everyone's heart.

Emperor Shun looked around. Seeing the smiles on the faces of Gong Sun Bo and the other leaders, he sighed helplessly, then took a glance at Ji Hao. He had tried his best to mitigate the conflict, but Ji Hao had killed so many people from these families, and that hatred could never be erased.

Gong Sun Bo and the others had made a blood oath, that they had to take revenge against Ji Hao and his clansmen in a destructive way to wash off the shame Ji Hao brought to them, and to defend the honor and dignity of their great families. The blood hatred could not be erased, not even by the twelve former human emperors themselves; that was a fast knot.

Perhaps by now, Emperor Shun could only do whatever he could to protect a part of Ji Hao's clansmen, so that the Gold Crow bloodline wouldn't disappear. Silently, Emperor Shun did a rough calculation. With the power of his family, that was all he could do.

Coughing slightly, Emperor Shun said in a deep voice, "The flood

is ebbing, and many things need to be settled. First of all..."

Gong Sun Bo rudely interrupted Emperor Shun and said blandly, "First of all, Si Wen Ming is injured to a coma, so that flood-control army shouldn't remain under his command."

Waving his hand, he continued, "That is an elite force. These years, they fought hard in the flood, in the storm, against the water-kind, day after day. They are tired. Therefore, we need to allow them to live better lives. We have decided to dismiss this army, and we will take them over, along with their families."

As Gong Sun Bo finished, the leaders of High Sun Family, Wu Chang Family, You Chao Family and Suiren Family applauded, grinningly praising Gong Sun Bo for his brilliant idea.

Those leaders started giving our their words. In front of everyone else, they promised to treat those warriors and their families well, that they will have farmlands, houses, livestock, and all living supplies. With all the resources possessed by those powerful families, those warriors would definitely live a bountiful life from now on.

Ji Hao sneered.

The army under Si Wen Ming's command was tremendous. It could even be considered as the largest human force since the beginning of history.

Warriors in this army mostly came from clans destroyed by the flood. In the past few years, they fought against water-kind creatures every single day. They flattened mountains, and expanded gorges. Each day, they would consume a great amount of energy. Therefore, all of these warriors had grown iron-like muscles and an unbreakable spirit.

Before the flood, many of these warriors were ordinary Junior Magi or even Novice Magi. But through years of working hard and bloodshedding, some of them had made the breakthrough and

become Senior Magi. This army under Si Wen Ming's command was not only great in scale, but also, every single warrior in this army was exceptionally strong, with especially rich battling experiences that ordinary warriors could never compare with.

The flood-control mission lasted for years. Those powerful families never sent out one single warrior. Instead, they only dug out some stale crops from their storages and gave to Emperor Shun. But when the flood was gone, these families immediately attempted to carve up Si Wen Ming's army!

"This army..." Emperor Shun started talking. But, the leader of High Sun Family impatiently interrupted again, "We all understand that Si Wen Ming is a capable kid. His 'All Streams to the Final Land' formation is drawing the four wastelands, and within three months tops, the four wastelands will be connected with Midland."

"Therefore, Emperor Shun wants to send this army into Northern Wasteland and wipe out all of Gong Gong's remaining force." The leader of High Sun Family continued with a smile, "You can leave this to us. As we are taking over the army, we surely need to send strong forces to bring them in anyway. As for cleaning Northern Wasteland, we will do it."

Ji Hao almost laughed out loud.

'What a wishful thinking. The flood-control mission was accomplished with blood and severe efforts. For that, you didn't even touch it. Yet, for cleaning the Northern Wasteland and swallowing up the territories that belonged to Northern Wasteland clans, you have already started to drag this fleshy piece of meat into your bowls.' thought Ji Hao.

The core forces of these powerful families mostly centered on Midland. If they could truly swallow Northern Wasteland...What would they do as their strengths started soaring?

Emperor Shun shook his head again in helplessness. He wanted

to say something, but those were tens of powerful families with combined powers, and over sixty percent of all earls and marquises were now on their side. Under the circumstances, their decisions were basically the decisions of the alliance of human clans.

Even Emperor Shun couldn't easily overthrow their decisions, unless he turned against them openly and officially!

How could emperor Shun ever do that? Yu Dynasty had still been covetously waiting in the north. If the alliance of human clans burst into internal conflicts, the non-humankind would mercilessly throw the humankind into hell.

Sighing slightly, Emperor Shun said a few words.

Ji Hao didn't hear Emperor Shun clearly, because a jade talisman in his inside pocket suddenly turned burning hot, as an emergency message was delivered —Outside Yao Mountain City, a large mysterious army was approaching speedily.

Chapter 1376: Kick Out of the Court

Those leaders started talking. On behalf of those marquises and earls sitting behind them, they listed a series of major efforts that would be made by the alliance of human clans next.

Emperor Shun knitted his eyebrows, looking at the leaders who looked like a group of greedy people who had been waving their knives and forks, carving up a trophy on the table. For fighting the flood, these powerful families didn't make any contribution, but while scrambling for trophies, they were more active than anyone else. They were greedy, crazily greedy. After Ji Hao killed so many important members of these families, their greed had turned more and more hysterical.

Even when scrambling for trophies, these leaders never forgot to weaken the others and strengthen themselves.

As the leaders of powerful families, they were pretty capable. They methodically drew up tight operational plans, and ordered the other families and clans to send out certain numbers of warriors, and provide certain amounts of food, armaments, and other supplies, for the army to use.

A coalition force of these clans would march into Northern Wasteland under the unified command of these powerful families.

It was obvious that the coalition force of those relatively smaller clans, and the flood-control army, which was now being seen as an apple in those powerful families' hands, would serve as a spearhead into Northern Wasteland, while the forces of these powerful families, their true elites, would stay behind to 'help, and play to the score'!

If those clans under Gong Gong's command struck back intensely, only warriors from those relatively smaller clans and the flood-control army would die. But with the forces of these powerful families 'helping' from the behind, all the occupied

territories would be theirs! They wouldn't sacrifice too much, but they would be able to attain large fertile territories.

Emperor Shun's face was awfully dark, and so were the faces of the leaders of the other large human clans, especially the ones developed from medium and small scale clans, instead of branches of these powerful families. The leaders of those clans were so enraged that their faces seemed to even burst into thunderbolts at any time!

Earls and Marquises from these clans and families were assigned with the heaviest tasks. In comparison, the number of warriors they needed to send out was the largest, and the amount of supplies they needed to afford was the greatest.

During the flood, the territories of these marquises and ears, and their people had all suffered great losses. After all, their clans were newly developed ones, and were not like You Xiong City, which had strong defensive formations to protect their people against the flood. The flood was gone, and now was a critical moment for them to rebuild their homelands, rest, and recuperate. Nevertheless, at this time, those powerful families forced them to prepare for a war!

With twisted faces, quite a few marquises and earls attempted to stand up and say something loudly. But, their friends around them forcibly pressed them down on the ground and stopped them from losing their tempers. Everyone clearly understood that nothing good would ever happen to them if they went against those powerful families.

These marquises and earls were not like Ji Hao. They weren't as strong as Ji Hao, neither did they have the complicated but especially strong background as Ji Hao did. If they offended these powerful clans, in all probability, they could die one night because of some 'sudden illnesses'. Their people would be enslaved by the enemies and their territories would become farmlands of some other clans.

Many marquises and earls gritted their teeth in anger...They could only sulk without daring to say anything. They dared not to leap up and pull out their swords, hacking some unlikable powerful families people direct to death, just like Ji Hao did.

"Emperor Shun." Touching the burning hot jade talisman, Ji Hao slowly stood up, smilingly bowed to Emperor Shun, and said.

Gong Sun Bo raised his eyebrows, showed a weird smile and said slowly, "Marquis Yao, we're discussing about important affairs. If you have something to say, wait until everything is settled!"

Ji Hao shook his head, then smiled to Gong Sun Bo and said, "Do we need to discuss at all? Didn't you leaders decide everything already? Even Emperor Shun can only sit aside and listen to you. What do you need us for?"

Gong Sun Bo gave a cold grin. Sitting beside him was a scrawny old man. He was the leader of Chu Wu Clan, named Wu Zong. "Marquis Yao, what do you mean? Are you saying that..." Wu Zong said with a harsh tone.

"Boo!" Suddenly, Ji Hao burst with a loud shout while lunging towards Wu Zong.

Wu Zong was startled. He shrieked like an ordinary human being who suddenly saw a fierce tiger. His scrawny body leaned backward, and a dense smoke puffed out of his sleeves. From the smoke, over ten weaving puppets swished out and shifted into Wu Zong's shape, fleeing towards all directions.

Ji Hao laughed, and so did many marquises and earls in the hall.

Slowly shaking his head, Ji Hao said, "Leader Wu Zong, what are you afraid of? I am Ji Hao, a rule follower. I won't beat anyone in the Town Hall. You know what I mean. I mean, since you are making plans for the future of the humankind, I will go handle some private matters, and won't waste any more time in here."

Waving his sleeves, Ji Hao turned around and told Man Man,

Shaosi, and his other friends to leave. With big steps, they walked to the gate of the Town Hall.

Gong Sun Bo leaped up from the ground, pointed at Ji Hao's back with tens of other leaders, and yelled, "Marquis Yao, you are ignoring important affairs relating to the entire humankind for your personal reasons! If you leave today, you should never come back! A man like you should never come back to this place!"

Ji Hao paused briefly and stopped walking, then smilingly glanced at Emperor Shun.

With a deep voice, Emperor Shun responded, "Marquis Yao has made major contributions to our humankind..."

Gong Sun Bo interrupted him and said coldly, "Tens of thousands of marquises and earls in the alliance of human clans have made the decision together. From this day on, anyone who leaves the Town Hall during a meeting regarding important affairs...He or she can never set foot in this place again!"

Gong Sun Bo sneered and continued, "Marquis Yao despised the alliance. We think he doesn't deserve his title anymore. Emperor Shun, please deprive his title as Marquis Yao."

Ji Hao clicked his tongue. 'Hah, they want to take away my title now, don't they? Forbid me from stepping into the Town Hall again, to expel me from the core zone of power. Then, when I become the leader of an ordinary clan, these powerful families can do whatever they want to me, right?' Thought Ji Hao.

"Marquises, Earls, hehe!" Looking at those marquises and earls on the scene, Ji Hao laughed out loud, without saying a word. A long while later, he waved his sleeves and raised a dazzling fiery light, darting out of the Town Hall with Man Man, Shaosi, and his other friends, without looking back.

"Today, I leave because I want to. You cannot stop me!"

"Some other day, I will return when I want to, and you won't be

able to stop me either!"

"The life is long, and we have plenty of time. Dear leaders, we will have the time to play your game!"

Ji Hao’s cold voice echoed in the Town Hall. Hearing him, faint smiles emerged on the mouth corners of Emperor Shun and some marquises and earls, but Gong Sun Bo and the other leaders had their faces twisted. They nearly vomited blood in anger.

"Marquis Yao Ji Hao, you won’t have a chance to come back!" murmured Gong Sun Bo viciously.

Chapter 1377: A Strong Force Encircles The City

Fiery clouds rolled while the nine dragons chariot flashed across the sky, flying towards Yao Mountain City.

Sitting on the chariot, Ji Hao looked down at the mountains and rivers down below that the chariot flew past quickly. The ‘All Streams to the Final Land’ great formation was already completed. By now, the flood was ebbing, but in many areas, turbid waves had still been surging in rivers and lakes.

The situation was already much better than the worst time during the flood. By the sides of different sized water channels, the earth was already exposed in some areas. Simple and crude shacks and tents were already built in some flat areas, forming different scaled campsites.

Countless human beings had been working hard. They were scrawny and exhausted, but they had smiles of hope on their faces. They created new farmlands, took out the seeds that they preserved with great efforts during the flood, and planted into the soil with extra care.

The earth of Pan Gu world was generous and caritative. As long as one was willing to spend efforts and shed sweat, the seeds planted would certainly pay back with a sweet harvest. Generation after generation, human beings were full of confidence towards the earth, no matter how badly they suffered.

Plant a seed today, ánd you would harvest thousands of grains in months.

With farmlands, as long as one made efforts, there would be a harvest. One would fill one’s stomach, then create more farmlands, rebuild villages, towns, and cities. One would reconstruct his homeland, then have kids, and the kids would have

their kids.

"Human beings are all good." Ji Hao abruptly grinned as he felt warmth in his heart. Somehow, an indescribable, warm, and strong power spread inside his body. Even his embryo of Dao had been shaking slightly. From these ordinary human beings, he sensed a great life-force.

Back in the Town Hall, from those powerful family elites who stood in high positions, and were capable of turning mountains into a sea, Ji Hao sensed nothing but coldness, cruelty, heartlessness, and rottenness. Only when he saw these ordinary people did he sense the thriving life-force.

Gong Sun Bo and his people were cold, rotten, heartless, and cruel. Therefore, Ji Hao dared to kill every last one of them and make their blood flow in a river. These ordinary people were so weak but so warm and energetic, and on seeing them, Ji Hao felt a warmth and love. These people were weak, but they represented all the strength in the world. Ji Hao was willing to protect these people with all he had.

"Eh, Emperor Shun!" Sitting aside, Man Man complained murmuringly while gulping a fruit. Her face was even covered in juice. "He is the human emperor! The emperor of all human beings! But no one listened to him at all! Look at my Abba, if any clan dares to not listen to him, that clan would be wiped out from the earth!"

Shaking her head, Man Man sighed and continued, "Emperor Shun is such a poor emperor!"

Ji Hao gave a long sigh, then patted Man Man’s head and responded, "Emperor Shun, he is a good man...A good man will always be upset by some unkindness."

Man Man suddenly narrowed her eyes and looked at Ji Hao with a dangerous light sparkling in those eyes, then asked, "Eh? Are you saying that my Abba is a bad guy?"

Ji Hao laughed loudly, then gently pulled Man Man's earlobe while saying, "Your Abba is not a bad guy, he is a fierce man! Most people in this world will bully the weak and fear the strong. You be fierce, then naturally, no one will dare to offend you. On the contrary, they'll listen to every word you said! But of course, your Abba is a fierce man, but he is also a good man."

Honestly speaking, Zhu Rong was truly a good man. At least, Southern Wasteland people had been living a good life under his lead. Besides, the Zhu Rong Family had been suppressing Chi You through generations, which was also admirable.

Man Man nodded in satisfaction, then popped out her eyes, looked at Ji Hao, and asked in confusion, "But why can't Emperor Shun be a fierce man?"

Ji Hao remained silent for a while, raised his head, and looked at the sky, responding blandly, "Because human beings have too many concerns, and they respect their ancestors very much. Respect the elderly, venerate the ancestors and their bloodlines, these are all good. After all, ever since the prehistorical era, human beings lived in clan units. They supported each other, and protected each other to survive. That's why the humankind developed to where it is today. Therefore, in the hearts of human beings, families and bloodlines mean a lot, a lot."

"Emperor Shun is a good man. Therefore, he venerates his ancestors sincerely...He is a descendant of Emperor Zhuanxu, and also a descendant of Emperor Xuanyuan. You Xiong Family is the origin of Emperor Xuanyuan's bloodline. So, how could Emperor Shun go against You Xiong Family?"

Ji Hao helplessly spread his hands and said blandly, "Not only You Xiong Family, High Sun Family, Cloud Sun Family, You Chao Family, Suiren Family, all these powerful families are the same. Every totem on their battle flags represents the origins of human bloodlines...All human beings, even the weakest ones living in the furthest areas, know that those totems represent their ancestors."

Ancestors were sacred, inviolable, like the sky and the earth!

Therefore, as the leaders of those powerful, ancient families, Gong Sun Bo and the others were embodiments of the totems of human ancestors. They were sacred and inviolable. Ji Hao was a special one. He remembered everything that happened in his previous life, and would seek revenge for the smallest grievance. Except him, no one, not even Emperor Shun, could go against these families.

Man Man nodded, seeming to understand a bit. Throwing the fruit core out of the chariot, she grabbed a fire dragon which was coiled on Ji Hao's leg, and wiped her hands clean on its scorching hot scales.

Sighing heavily, she looked at Ji Hao and said seriously, "Ji Hao, if they really want to bully us, let's go back to Southern Wasteland. Back there, no one dares to offend us!"

Ji Hao looked at Man Man and slightly frowned. Pointing at the south, he said, "Perhaps, we don't need to go back to Southern Wasteland, because Southern Wasteland will come to us. Uncle Wen Ming's 'All Streams to the Final Land' great formation is strangely powerful!"

While chatting and laughing, the nine dragons chariot arrived in Yao Mountain territory, floating in the air, less than a hundred miles from the Yao Mountain City.

Looking down from the sky, all farmlands and villages around the city were flushed away, and the broad area around the city had become an empty space. Countless dark spots had been approaching the city from the west, east, south, and north. Among those dark spots, Ji Hao found tens of flying forts produced by Xiu Clan people.

Ji Hao scanned across the army around the city with his spirit power. Speechlessly, he found out that ninety-nine percent of all warriors in this army were non-humankind beings. A very small

number of human warrior existed in this army. According to Ji Hao's observation, these human warriors mostly served as guides and messengers.

The ones who had truly been commanding this army were a group of Yu Clan nobles on a flying fort, all wearing luxurious robes and armors.

With pride on their faces, these Yu Clan people were facing a magic sandbox, pointing their fingers on it and seeming to discuss about where should they start the attack.

Countless non-humankind slaves carried all kinds of weapons, and had been digging channels and building fence walls around the city, seeming to seal Yao Mountain City up and turn it into a deadly zone.

Chapter 1378: Slave-Hunting Army

Dimming the nine dragons chariot, which was dazzling and noisy, Ji Hao and tens of thousands of elite warriors quietly landed in Yao Mountain City.

The Yao Mountain City was preparing for a war at full stretch. But once Ji Hao returned, the tense atmosphere was eased instantly. Ji Xia walked over with a large group of clansmen while laughing out loud, then punched Ji Hao's chest a few times with his wine-pot-sized fist.

"Ji Hao's back! Hah! You lost weight, but your skin is not darkened though. Well, these years have been dark without sunshine. You can't tan your skin even if you want to!" Grabbing Ji Hao's shoulders with both hands, Ji Xia carefully looked at his face, then quickly glimpsed at the lower bellies of Man Man and Shaosi. He gave a long sigh and continued, "Eh, did you come back by yourselves? I don't see new faces!"

What new faces? Ji Hao dropped his face. Grabbing Shermie's neck, he threw him into Ji Xia's arms.

"Ouch!" Shermie involuntarily coiled his long and slim arms around Ji Xia's neck, with his eyeballs almost bulging out of his eye sockets, as the two stared at each other.

"New faces? Don't we have new faces? This is Shermie, my disciple...Hmm, he's special. Perhaps, he is the strongest crayfish in the world. Don't underestimate him. Among water-kind creatures which used to be under Gong Gong's command, over ninety percent of all shrimp warriors are led by him now. From now on, he is the chief commander of the water-kind force in our Yao Mountain territory. "

With a few words, Ji Hao introduced Shermie to Ji Xia. Hearing that Shermie was a crayfish, Ji Xia immediately began rubbing Shermie's bald head in curiosity while murmuring, "Hah, crayfish,

a crayfish...Like those in the corners of streams? Interesting, interesting! A tiny crayfish like that became a tall boy like this. You much have gone through a lot, haven't you?"

Ji Xia was truly concerned about Shermie. For an unknown reason, Shermie sniffed with a pair of misty eyes. He kneeled on the ground sincerely and kowtowed to Ji Xia. It had been so many years, had anyone ever said something so warm and caring to Shermie, and treated him like a young kid?

Ji Hao was his Shifu, but in Ji Hao's eyes, Shermie was only a talented, potential spirit creature who could have a bright future. But from Ji Xia, Shermie sensed a father's love. Ji Xia loved Ji Hao and his other kids, but, he also gave some of his love to Shermie.

Watching this, Ji Hao quivered in speechless. Throwing Ji Xia a sideways glance, he led his people and walked back to the main hall of Marquis Yao's mansion. In the hall, a group of Yao Mountain territory minister and commander sat on the ground, and some maids had been serving tea.

In the crowd, Ji Hao suddenly saw his old friends.

Heng Luo's tender cheeks were slightly blushed. She leaned against Stone's lower leg, giggling to Ji Hao. She was almost drunk. Stone was lying in a corner of the hall, with his limbs spread, and was in a deep sleep. A strong aroma of blood could be sensed from his entire body. Outside the hall, in the yard, Treeman had comfortably put down his roots, and was enjoying the sunshine.

"Oi, you're all here!" Ji Hao waved his hands to Heng Luo happily. With a drunken face, Heng Luo chuckled, then straightened her beautiful and slim middle finger at Ji Hao.

"You can never lean something good, can you?" Ji Hao rubbed his nose and murmured.

Sitting beside Ji Hao, Ji Xia waved his hand and laughed, "The

flood was so annoying these years. So, we raised an army in Yao Mountain City and made tens of trips to Southern Wasteland, bringing many of our clansmen and people from our brother clans here."

Pointing at Heng Luo and Stone, he continued, "I knew they're all your old friends. They were going moldy in the flood too. So, they and some of their friends came to Yao Mountain territory with us."

"The strange things is that before, a round-trip to Southern Wasteland would cost at least a year. But in recent years, this time span is getting shorter and shorter. The most recent troop we sent out returned in less than three months! It seems that Southern Wasteland and Midland are getting closer and closer to each other." Scratching his head, Ji Xia said in confusion.

Ji Hao smiled and told Ji Xia and the others in the hall about Si Wen Ming's 'All Streams to the Final Land' great formation in detail. Hearing that the four wastelands had been approaching Midland fast because of the great formation, people in the hall all exclaimed out.

Many Gold Crow Clan people in the hall clearly understood that the living condition in Yao Mountain territory would be a hundred times better than in Gold Crow Clan. But after all, their ancestral temple was still in the Gold Black Mountain. The temple was the root of the clan. Therefore, these people missed their hometown all the time.

Now, the four wastelands and Midland were going to merge together, which was wonderful. In the future, clansmen living in Yao Mountain territory could easily take trips back to the Gold Black Mountain, right?

Ji Hao released his spirit power. Heng Luo, Stone, Treeman and the others all came with their friends, didn't they? Scanning across Yao Mountain City with his spirit power, Ji Hao found hundreds of jungle spirits like Heng Luo, thousands of stone men, and tens of

thousands of treemen.

Most of those stone men were drunk, and had now been comfortably sleeping in corners. The treemen were stretching their branches by streets and alleys, happily showering under the sunshine. On the other hand, the jungle spirits had all dressed up, hanging in markets with their accompanying spirit creatures, bargaining with the owners of stalls and buying small things which were completely useless in Ji Hao's eyes.

"Hah, the nature of women never changes! Jungle spirits, are they women?" Spending one-millionth of a second on this unsolvable question, Ji Hao took a deep breath, then his face turned serious.

Glancing at the thousands of ministers and commanders in the hall, he said with a deep voice, "In a not so long while, we, Yao Mountain territory, will fight a fierce battle. We should be preparing for it, as if it's a hundred times more serious than the flood. The non-humankind army outside the city is only a spearhead of the enemy. Have you found out who they are yet?"

The army outside was guided by human warriors, but obviously, it was a non-humankind force. Judging by the number of commanders on a flying fort outside, this army was an allied force of over a thousand differently scaled forces, and among them, nearly a hundred were the leading ones.

Ji Hao was curious though. Where did Gong Sun Bo and the other elders find these non-humankind beings? And this non-humankind army was pretty strong!

"It's a slave-hunting army." A Gold Crow Clan elder named Ji Que stood up. He was slim and nimble, best at hiding and tracking. When he was young, he was the best hunter in Gold Crow Clan, and the leader of all hunters. Now, he was the commander of scouts in Yao Mountain territory.

"One thousand, four hundred and thirty-seven slave-hunting

troops, hired by someone with high prices to attack our Yao Mountain territory." Ji Que said with a dark face, "That is not a regular non-humankind army, but those non-humankind beings that are especially good at hiding, ambush, and squad-fighting. These days, our scouts fought a few battles against them. Over three-thousand of our warriors have already been injured or killed."

Ji Hao’s eye corners twitched. In mere battles that happened between scouts, over three Yao Mountain warriors had fallen?

This army of slave-hunting troops did come with evil intents.

Chapter 1379: Virus Attack

If one stood on the tall fence wall and looked down, one would see people as tiny as ants, walking around.

Looking afar, one would see countless frog-like non-humankind slaves a hundred miles away, yelling and shouting. Their skins were all covered in speckles. With all kinds of tools and weapons, they had already dug a three-hundred-meters-wide ditch around Yao Mountain City.

What puzzled those non-humankind beings was that no matter hard these slaves tried, their shovels couldn't reach further down from about twenty-four meters and one foot deep underground, not even for an inch. They tried hard, and even broke their tools, but aside from a few dim fire sparkles, not even a fistful of earth could be dug out.

Twenty-four meters and one foot deep, such a ditch wasn't deep enough to defend against human warriors. Strong Senior Magi could reach nearly a hundred meters high with one leap, and even an ordinary Junior Magus could jump tens of meters high easily. Therefore, without a one-thousand-meters-deep ditch, those human warriors from Yao Mountain City could never be stopped!

From a distance away, Ji Hao saw large groups of Jia Clan warriors joined in digging while complaining. Holding all kinds of glowing spell symbols weapons, they growled thunderously, and smashed violently on the bottom of the ditch.

Fire sparkles dazzled while resounding booms echoed, but nothing happened. Except for farmlands, the underlying soil layers around Yao Mountain City was even harder than diamond under the effect of the heaven and earth great formation, and was protected by other defensive formations. How could a few Jia Clan warriors easily break it?

After trying for half a day, those non-humankind beings failed to

deepen the ditch. Helplessly, they broke a mountain in a distance away, borrowed some earth, and built a tall fence wall by the ditch. Xiu Clan people cast spells on the wall. Soon, the earth wall was turned into a wall of hard stones, then a thick layer of melted iron was poured on it.

"Wanna make us stay stuck in the city till death?" Ji Hao sneered. They seemed to be planning to catch a turtle in the jar. Apparently, they prepared to kill every last member of Gold Crow Clan. Gong Sun Bo said it clearly that all Ji Hao's clansmen would die, and all the others who lived in his territory, who weren't from the Gold Crow Clan, would become slaves.

"Tonight, I will kick their asses with my warriors!" Ji Xia punched on a battlement. Following a loud crack, a bright puff of fire burst from his fist. The moment Ji Xia smashed the battlement with his fist, Ji Hao clearly saw that his skin and bones had all turned glowing purple-red, transparent like a crystal condensed from a fire.

Ji Hao gave a grin. It seemed that Ji Xia was about to absorb the ancestor's legacy completely, as his body already started to merge with the great Dao of fire. Once he cultivated his body to an extreme level and drew a natural star into his body, he would start his cultivation as a Supreme Magus. Then, Ji Hao would help with the methods of Dao that he learned from Yu Yu. With his help, Ji Xia would have a great chance to absorb the star, melt the spirit of the star, and successfully become a true Supreme Magus. And when Ji Xia became a true Supreme Magus, hehe, would Gong Sun Bo and his people still act so aggressively?

But that would be in the future. Right under his eyes, this slave-hunting army was large in number, which even made Ji Hao look at it seriously.

"Abba, you fight too brutally. They came all the way here the bring themselves to us. If you get them all killed, that would be such a waste!" Ji Hao calculated with his fingers and said, "Abba,

you see, those slim Yu Clan nobles, each of them is worth a great sum of crystals. Those are all money!"

"If we don't want crystals, we can trade them for armors, weapons, food, and all kinds of resources that we need! In the future, when you see a Yu Clan noble, don't see him or her as a living creature. Instead, use your imagination. You should see them as a moving hill of magic crystals! The amount of crystals that a Yu Clan noble is worth is at least twice their volume!"

"Look at those Jia Clan warriors. Our Yao Mountain territory is just in need of strong cannon fodder. We can arm them, control their original souls, and let them fight for us...Or, I recently met an elder, who likes creatures with strong bodies especially. We can sell these Jia Clan warriors to him with a sweet price!"

"As for those Xiu Clan people, I think the production scale of our Yao Mountain territory is still a bit too small, and we have too few craftsmen. Things inside these Xiu Clan people' heads are all treasures. In fact, they are even more valuable than those Yu Clan nobles!"

"And those dark-skinned slave warriors, they're like Jia Clan warriors, the best cannon fodder ever!"

"These non-humankind slaves are not good fighters, and look so ugly. But, they are giant in number. They eat less than cats, but work harder than cattle. We are building more cities in Yao Mountain territory, and we are short of labor. Even though we don't need them to build cities, we need them to work in our mines, ranches, fishing grounds, tree farms!"

Slapping Ji Xia's arm, Ji Hao laughed excitedly and said, "Abba, uncles, grandpas, those creatures out there, who walk with two legs, you can see them as many many crystals, as a lot of money... They are all valuable!"

On the city wall, a group of elders and ministers looked at Ji Hao, stunned.

The enemy gathered over a thousand slave-hunting troops, including millions of elite warriors, added with a large number of great-scale weapons to attack Yao Mountain City. Obviously, they wanted to flatten this city.

But in Ji Hao’s eyes, why did these people end up as preys who brought themselves to the predators?

"Kid, you are making sense!" Ji Xia frowned, then scratched his scalp and said, "But, if we don’t fight and kill, they won’t just become our salves obediently, will they? This, since we have to fight, people will die for sure. No matter it’s our people or theirs who might die...this..."

"In some battles, no one needs to die." Ji Hao’s eyes shone with a sharp cold light as he said, "Yu Mu, you take care of them. I’ll let you control the core of the heaven and earth formation. Take a look and tell me how many more things we need to keep all those people in our city?"

Yu Mu smilingly patted his large fleshy belly, stirring up fat ripples that spread on his entire body.

Narrowing his eyes, Yu Mu glanced at those non-humankind warriors gathered outside the city, then seriously nodded and said, "I don’t need the heaven and earth great formation, they would be flattered. Look at their proud faces. Give me an hour."

Raising the Disease God streamer on the city wall, Yu Mu and over ten-thousand Maguspreists from Southern Wasteland, who were masters of magic poisons, started a dance around it, and cast a ‘Disease God Spell’. Oddly colored power streams surged into the streamer.

Clouds of invisible, highly poisonous mist were released from the streamer, swirling towards the non-humankind army along with countless locusts, which were even tinier than dust grains.

Chapter 1380: The Moves of the Non-Humankind

In a luxuriously and exquisitely decorated great hall, which was built with colorful crystals, Dishi Tu stood in a corner, fiddling with a beautiful crystal glass. From time to time, he lowered his head and sniffed the complicated and constantly changing aroma of the wine contained in the glass.

Above the giant magic sandbox in the middle of the hall, images had been changing, showing everything happening one-hundred-thousand miles around Yao Mountain City. Nearly a hundred Yu Clan nobles with luxurious outfits stood by the sandbox, with their heads held high in pride. They tried their bests to act elegantly while they were loudly talking about their attacking plans.

Nearly a hundreds leaders of strong slave-hunting troops, nearly a hundred attacking plans...

Yu Clan people were proud and peacockish. Every single one of these leaders believed that his or her plan was the best, while the plans of all the others were bullsh*t. No one could convince the others, and everyone had been sparing no effort to advocate their own plans.

The leaders of about a thousand smaller scaled slave-hunting troops were scattered in the hall, not paying any attention to the intense arguments of those people by the sandbox. They each held a glass of wine. While tasting the fine wine, they were all delightfully talking about the great life in Liang Zhu City.

Relaxed laughter could be heard from the hall every now and them. These people didn’t seem to be nervous at all.

"Idiots." Dishi Tu raised his head, emptied his glass, then conveniently threw it into the large clay jar aside, which was filled with clean water. Tightening his cloak, he walked out of the hall

with big steps.

An enormous, beautiful eagle with silver feathers had been lying quietly outside the hall. Seeing Dishi Tu, the eagle stood up and cawed excitedly. Dishi Tu hopped onto the eagle's back and gave a deep growl. Hearing his voice, the eagle rose into the sky and hovered around the hall, then flew to a campsite not far away.

"Low-grade nobles, all idiots. They can only do some sneaky things like this! Hunt slaves, sell slaves, dirty deals..." Dishi Tu snorted scornfully, with his head held high proudly, while glancing back at the hall.

The eagle hovered, then dove down swiftly, and landed in the middle of the campsite. A few strangely muscular Yu Clan warriors immediately walked over, then politely bowed to Dishi Tu and said, "Commander!"

Dishi Tu shook his head, patted on the head of the eagle, and walked into a tent beside him with a dark face, sitting on a luxurious large armchair in the tent. A warrior served a bronze cup of water. Dishi Tu picked up the cup, gulped a few mouthfuls of water, then sighed in satisfaction, placing the cup heavily on the table by the chair.

"Those damn things! Back in Liang Zhu City, I will make them suffer." With a sulky face, Dishi Cha pointed at the direction of the hall and said, "Dilatory, completely inefficient...What's worst, those people thought we are really a slave-hunting troop, and they threatened us to join this stupid war!"

A few Yu Clan warriors stood in front of him, shaking their heads silently.

They weren't from a slave-hunting troop. Instead, they were the scouts of the Blood Moon army, true warriors. Once the flood started to ebb, Dishi Yanluo sent them to sneak into the human land in the disguise of a slave-hunting troop to pry for information.

Earlier, they were moving in the north side of Yao Mountain territory. Suddenly, tens of slave-hunting troops surrounded them. After negotiation, Dishi Tu and his warriors joined this army of a rabble of slave hunters.

"What a waste of time, of life. Being with those idiots, even I feel stupid." Dishi Tu gritted his teeth in anger and snorted, "The only thing that surprises me, my dear friends, which family's slave-hunting troops do you think have such a strong arm?"

Nearly a hundred flying forts, over a thousand divine towers, with considerable powers of both defense and offense... Furthermore, for those Jia Clan warriors and the main force of this army, their armors were as good as Blood Moon warriors' armors.

Slave-hunting troops were privately-owned. Usually, their equipment was two to there grades lower than the regular armies in Yu Dynasty. But these slave-hunting troops were not like that. They had more weapons, especially heavy weapons, even more than the core elite force of Blood Moon.

Slave-hunting troops pursued nothing more than profits. They bullied the weak and feared the strong. Usually, they would only sneakily attack small human clans, but never would spend a giant sum of money to purchase such great equipment. Obviously, someone had been sponsoring these slave hunting troops with huge investments.

"Yao Mountain territory! Marquis Yao! What a trouble! They offered a whopping price for him, right?" Wagging his pair of legs, he said to his people with a relaxed tone, "But this time, it seems that human leaders want him dead. Poor guy, I think he's doomed this time."

A few Yu Clan nobles laughed. They all knew about the conditions brought up by those human beings who served as 'guides' — All relatives of Marquis Yao Ji Hao must be killed, every last one of them; all other residents of Yao Mountain territory will

become slaves!

"Lowly barbarians." A Yu Clan warrior laughed, "They have no idea that Emperor Dishi Yanluo is going to launch a new wave of attack. We have already reached the center of their territory while they are still busy at killing each other."

"Not only Emperor Dishi Yanluo, a few other emperors as well..." Dishi Tu said with a deep voice, "...They seem to have combined their powers. The flood didn't cause too many losses to us, but the humankind...This is a great opportunity to weaken, and even conquer the humankind!"

While chatting, Dishi Tu suddenly leaped up and burst with a scream. Hurriedly, he took out an amulet from his inner pocket.

The amulet was shaped like a leaf, hollow, and glowing dimly. A weak warmth had been spreading from it. Dishi Tu frowned and cast a spell on it.

The amulet made no response.

"Ah, I was nearly scared to death." Dishi Tu murmured, "This is a top-grade amulet against magic poison. Once human Maguspreists release magic poisons, it will give an alarm, and trigger the defensive screen to dispel and neutralize all magic poisons."

"Hmm, the flood is still ebbing, so I think it's the gas from decomposed bodies that triggered this amulet slightly, instead of a real magic poison released by a Maguspreist on purpose. Otherwise, it wouldn't stay so quiet!"

The other few Yu Clan warriors took out their own tools against magic poisons and carefully searched through the tent.

They found nothing.

This was a false alarm. Dishi Tu laughed loudly, then took out a fine bottle of wine that had been cherished by him, inviting his friends to enjoy it together.

Invisibly, Yu Mu's locusts easily drilled into their bodies.

None of their amulets and defensive talismans was triggered.

Chapter 1381: The Power of the Disease God

"Dong! Dong dong!"

Towards the evening, war drums could be heard from the tens of flying forts. A few Jia Clan warriors bared their upper bodies and lazily growled at the ground.

Countless non-humankind slaves, who had been digging ditches or building walls, dropped their weapons and tools, then yelled, shouted, and leaped towards the campsite. Smoke rose from kitchen chimneys, as the aroma of booze and meat spread out in all directions. Cooks in this slave-hunting army prepared the dinner, and large groups of slave hunters, slaves warriors, and slaves returned to the camp.

On the city wall, Ji Hao looked at those non-humankind slaves who had been scrambling for food in their campsite, then slightly knocked his fingers on a battlement and said, "Yu Mu, do it. They’re gonna throw everything up later anyway. If we wait until they have filled their stomachs, that would be a waste of food!"

Yu Mu laughed, then bit his right middle finger broken, and drew a spell symbol in the air with his blood, sending it onto the Disease God streamer.

A gray mist was released from the streamer. All of a sudden, an indescribable coldness made every living being in Yao Mountain City quiver. Tens of thousands of treemen who put their roots down by streets or alleys waved their branches and rustled their leaves.

Dishi Tu held a glass of wine and stood by the entrance of the tent, scornfully looking at those non-humankind slaves who had been fighting over food like dogs.

"Lowly, rude slaves. Look at their lowly faces! Can you imagine that their ancestors used to build star-sized forts, and even kill

holy beings in the holy realm!"

Dishi Tu lowered his voice and whispered to his friends.

The few Yu Clan warriors popped out their eyes in shock, then looked at him and asked, "Commander, how that possible? These lowly slaves, they can’t even read. They..."

"They used to have a glorious civilization. They used to be strong." Dishi Tu proudly raised his head and sneered, "But no civilization can stop us, the great Yu Clan, from conquering. The destroyed the civilization of these slaves, and that, is also the fate of the humankind."

"Star-sized forts?" In shock, the few Yu Clan warriors murmured to themselves, "And, holy beings!"

"Some precious fragments are collected in the secret library of the Dishi Family." Dishi Tu said proudly, showing off the history of the Dishi Family and his own great family ground. "I was luckily allowed to study in there for seven days. In there, I learned many powerful secret magic, and a lot of intentionally erased histories."

Slightly shaking the glass in his hands, he continued with a low voice, "We need to know that the death of a holy being can never be recorded in a history book. After all, holy beings are immortal, aren’t they?"

The few Yu Clan warriors smiled knowingly and happily like a group of weasels which had just filled their stomachs with chicken, sensing pleasure from both their bodies and their souls. Talking about these top secrets that no other people could know made them feel so special, like standing high up above clouds, looking down at the masses.

"Eh?" One of them abruptly covered his lower belly with his hand. Slightly frowning, he said, "It’s strange, I am a bit...

Dishi Tu’s face twitched as he buried his belly in his hands too. Knitting his eyebrows, he stuttered, "I’m having a stomachache. I

sensed a weird, burning pain. It can’t be! We’ve been eating solid foods prepared for regular armies these days. No such things can happen."

As their stomachs grumbled, they twisted their faces. Their faces turned slightly pale.

Dishi Cha hurriedly took out his amulet that hung on his neck and cast a spell. The amulet released a green light, which spread on the bodies of his and his friends. This was one great function of this amulet, that once it was triggered, it would emit a green light to sterilize everything under the coverage of the light. The green light was highly effective on all weird kinds of toxins and poisonous bugs.

Things weren’t that bad before Dishi Tu triggered the amulet. The moment the green light poured on their bodies, the pain in their bellies began growing like wild grasses nourished by the strongest fertilizer. Their gastrointestinal motilities were promoted so largely, and their stomachs rumbled loudly.

Soon, large amounts of gas were generated inside their bellies. They began farting and burping, one after another, without an end. Gradually, they felt their internal organs were even about to be pushed out of their mouths.

"Medicine!" Dishi Tu barely took out a golden medicine sealed in a transparent crystal tube. This was a secretly concocted medicine for military use, which could effectively help with all kinds of negative situations and quickly replenish energies, allowing the users to be energetic and high-spirited in a few days after a dose of it.

Only high-grade commanders in regular armies of Yu Dynasty could have great medicines like this. The few Yu Clan warriors took out the same medicines and poured into their mouths, but afterward, their faces twisted even worse, like evil ghosts.

The medicine flew into their stomachs, but they sensed no effect

of it, as if the medicine was devoured by something else inside them before the effects showed.

A greater pain erupted like a volcano. The medicine failed to weaken any pain. On the contrary, it triggered a hundred times sharper pain. Like pouring a bucket of oil on a fire, the pain triggered by the medicine momentarily struck Dishi Tu and these Yu Clan warriors down.

Following a ghost-cry-like shrill howl, Dishi Tu and the others fell to the ground, with their bellies buried in their hands. Their internal organs had been twitching intensely, while cold sweat streamed down their backs. Their sweat was ice-cold and sticky, covering their deathly pale skin and looking like a layer of rotten egg white, emitting a stinky smell.

"I, I, I..." A Yu Clan warrior tremblingly murmured a few words, then passed out because of the unbearable pain.

Dishi Tu opened his mouth and let out a mouthful of sticky gastric juice, then began vomiting blood. After each mouthful of blood was squeezed out of his body, he would be weakened a bit. Letting out seven to eight mouthfuls of blood, he fell on the ground, limp and feeble, without any strength left in him.

Like a dead fish, Dishi Tu looked at the campsite in a distance away. In there, countless slaves, dark-kind warriors, and Jia Clan warriors had been rolling on the ground, covering their bellies with their hands, howling and twitching in pain. Those non-humankind slaves were relatively weaker. Therefore, after a short series of cries, they ‘luckily’ fainted.

Poor Jia Clan warriors. They were all strong and sturdy, especially energetic, with thriving life-forces. Their bodies could endure the pain that was a thousand times worse than what put those slaves into unconsciousness. They screamed hoarsely and twitched on the ground, with their eyes bulged from the sockets, thickly covered in blood streaks.

"Thud!" Two flying forts, which were pretty close to each other, bumped together. On the walls of the two forts, tens of Jia Clan warriors fell down while howling. The same screeches could be heard from inside the two flying forts as well, but soon, all noises started fading.

"All down. We’re dead!" Dishi Tu cried in despair.

Before he fell unconscious, he murmured, "How much ransom money do I need to pay for myself? Damn it, I’m gonna be broke!"

Chapter 1382: Damn Guides

Ji Hao stood on the city wall, opened his erect eye, and clearly saw everything happened in the campsite of the enemy. Countless non-humankind beings struggled and cried in pain, and eventually fell to the ground, fainting.

But some of them surprised Ji Hao

A quarter of an hour later, no sound could be heard from the campsite anymore. Ji Hao made a step forward, transformed into a beam of light, and flashed into a flying fort, which floated in the air.

The flying for was five-miles squared in area, entirely cast from a special alloy. Placed on the thick fence wall of the fort were a large number of divine towers and crossbows, along with other weapons. A fort like this was extremely expensive, and amazingly effective on battlefields. Using flying forts like this to attack Yao Mountain City must have cost some people a fortune.

"But, these are all mine now!" Ji Hao sneered, then broke into a luxurious hall built from crystal.

Thousands of Yu Clan nobles lied on the ground, covered in blood that they had vomited. A strong odor suffused the air. The two fire dragons coiled on Ji Hao’s arms and Mr. Crow, who stood on Ji Hao’s shoulder, screamed together angrily. This place stank.

In the mess, a few male human being tremblingly stood in the hall, wearing luxurious clothes.

They gripped white bone wands, with tens of dark and white jade medicine bottles scattered around their feet. A strong herbal aroma and some strange pungent smell had been spreading from those bottles.

Abruptly seeing Ji Hao, they shrieked despairingly. The wands in their hands had been releasing a dim blue light to cover their

bodies, but their wrists quivered when they saw Ji Hao. From their wands, a blue fire condensed into arrows, silently darting towards Ji Hao.

Without a dim light, the few men immediately began vomiting blood after launching an attack. With softened bodies, they fell on the ground and cried weakly, twitching uncontrollably.

Waving his broad sleeve, Ji Hao raised a fierce gust of wind that shattered those fire arrows. Floating in the air, three-feet above the ground, he slowly approached the few men. Looking down at them, Ji Hao suddenly grinned and said, "Impressive! You lasted for such a long while under Yu Mu's poison!"

The few men twitched intensely. They wanted to talk, but couldn't.

Ji Hao crooked his finger. The wand held in a man's hand flew up. The wand was as thick as a baby's arm, made from bone, thickly embossed with poisonous bugs. On those embossments, countless tiny and twisted spell symbols were faintly visible, while a strange, strong power vibration was releasing from it. Ji Hao touched it with his fingers and felt a slight pain.

"So powerful. A divine-level treasure? It's a shame though that you are only Magus Kings. You can't release all of its power." As Ji Hao crooked his finger again, seven wands flew up together and floated before his face.

These wands were all made from the bones of an unknown creature. That creature had an extremely pure essence natural poison contained in its bones. Processed by special magic, that essence natural poison became a magical power, which could both attack and protect its owners.

All these wands were divine-level magic treasures, top-grade pieces, designed especially for masters of magic poisons. No wonder these people lasted so much longer than the others under Yu Mu's poison. After all, they were protected by such powerful

treasures.

Heavy footsteps could be heard. Like a moving flesh hill, Yu Mu walked into the hall, with fat waving all over his body. Gasping for air, he came to the few men, bent his waist with solid efforts, and picked up a few bottles on the ground.

Carefully sniffing those bottles, Yu Mu's eyes suddenly shone as he said, "Life-taking perilla pills, thousand-snake powder, three-light white-bone ointment...All top-grade things, yet you have wasted so much! Back then, we had to work so hard for the Magi Palace for three to five years to earn a bottle like these!"

"All good?" Ji Hao asked.

"Top-level!" Yu Mu licked his lips. In the sphere of drugs and poisons, he was a master. "Not even the Magi Palace can produce these in large batches. After all, some raw materials are too rare. For example, the main material of life-taking perilla pills is red-striped perilla, which needs to grow naturally for ninety-nine years, nine months, and nine days. During this period, it has to suffer the frost nine times, and in the end, it can only be picked in a heavily snowing noon, with a cold jade knife!"

"Red-striped perilla is not rare, not even hundreds, thousands of years old ones. Ninety-nine-year-old red-striped perillas? You can find them everywhere. But who can make sure that those plants have been through exactly nine touches of frost? And you need to pick them on a heavily snowing day. That's way too troublesome!"

Yu Mu explained to Ji Hao about why these medicines were so valuable.

Ji Hao nodded, then handed the seven wands to Yu Mu.

Yu Mu's eyes shone again. His mung-sized eyes suddenly expanded to the size of soybean, fixed on the seven wands.

"This, the spirit bone of the Disease beast, right? In the legends, the Disease beast was the Disease God's mount, and had

disappeared from this world long ago. The disease beast only has one spirit bone, which can suppress all kinds of toxins, viruses, poisons..."

Carefully stroking the seven wands, Yu Mu reached out his tongue, licked a wand, then shook his head and said, "Not its bone... These should be the bones of his mix-blooded offspring. These can suppress all kinds of toxins, viruses, poisons indeed, but can never defeat the Disease God Steamer."

Ji Hao turned to the few men, who were twitching on the ground, and asked coldly, "With these good medicines and powerful treasures, you're no one ordinary, are you? Eh? Your clothes are not bad either...Ah, these few space rings are all great pieces."

Using a fire dragon as a whip, Ji Hao lashed violently on a man's body, then sneered and said, "Who are you?"

Yu Mu cast a spell and slightly eased their pain. While groaning, they finally restored some strength. The man lashed by Ji Hao with the fire dragon suddenly twitched again, as his clothes were set on fire, and a bone-deep slashed was left on his body, nearly tearing his body apart. The fire burned in his wound and blackened his skin.

Screaming in pain, this man raised his head with difficulty, looked at Ji Hao, and gave a twisted smile, "We are just guides. These slave hunters hire us to guide their way with a high price. Hehe, we take the money, and we do our jobs. What's wrong with that?"

'Just guides'? Which guide could carry divine-level treasures everywhere? Which guide could have these top-grade life-saving medicines, that not even elite Magi Palace apprentices could attain easily? Which guide could wear top-grade luxurious clothes like the highest Yu Clan nobles?

Ji Hao sneered, then nodded and said, "I hate guides the most."

Turning to his warriors, Ji Hao shouted, "Drag them out, peel them, soak them in oil, then light the oil on them...Give them more life-saving drugs. I want them to be burned for seven days alive, before we incinerate them!"

Once Ji Hao gave his order, the faces of the seven men suddenly turned deathly pale.

Chapter 1383: Men of Sacrifice

The heaven and earth great formation was activated, as starlight poured down from the heaven like waterfalls. On the city wall, hazy legendary creatures had been sparkling, while countless golden and silver, beautiful spell symbols emerged on the ground around the city.

The great formation triggered the earth power. Earth and rock moved like flowing water. Within a quarter of an hour, a city rose three hundred miles away from Yao Mountain City, large enough to accommodate ten million people.

Melting pots were heated until red. Countless searing irons glowed with a bright red light in the pots. Slave warriors from Yao Mountain City had been growling, dragging slave-hunting troop warriors to those melting pots. Following shrill howls, spell symbols sparkled dimly on those searing iron, while the irons were pressed heavily on the faces of those warriors.

'Slave', this blood-red character was burned on the faces of those slave-hunting troop warriors, looking extremely dazzling. Through their skins and muscles, the sears were also burned on their bones, releasing fierce power streams which flowed swiftly inside these warriors' bodies like drills. The power streams drilled into their marrow, their internal organs, and their souls.

Managing each melting pot were a few Yao Mountain Maguspriests. They were holding their wands, casting spells, and replenishing the searing irons in the pots with power. These sears were like countless chains, locking the bodies and souls of these warriors, burying the eternal loyalty deep in their souls. Once a thought of betrayal emerged in their heads, or a Yao Mountain Maguspreists triggered the sear, these captives would die immediately. Their bodies would become powerful bombs, destroying all living creatures around them.

Ordinary captives could be enslaved by these magic sears for all their lives, but surely, one couldn't treat those powerful warriors and Yu Clan nobles in such a simple and violent way.

Strong Jia Clan warriors had been raring in rage. They were pressed down on the ground by Yao Mountain warriors, who were even stronger. Their armors were ripped off, and so were their clothes. Powerful elderly Maguspreists picked up long needles made from the bones or teeth of spirit beasts, dipped into a magic blood ink concocted according to a special formula, and tattooed complicated, weird patterns on these Jia Clan warriors' bodies.

These scary tattoos squirmed on the skins of these Jia Clan warriors, gradually becoming strands of colorful mist that seeped into their bodies and merged with their spirits and souls.

Following a deep spell incanting voice, these Jia Clan warriors stood up like walking corpses and lined up orderly, walking to a campsite aside, uncontrollably. They roared in anger and despair. Some of them with high-self-esteem even started crying hoarsely and heartbreakingly.

With these tattoos, they clearly understood that Yao Mountain City people would never release them. They would serve Yao Mountain City all their lives. Their children, and the children of their children, would all become Yao Mountain City's slaves.

They were from slave-hunting troops. Therefore, they clearly knew how miserable could their lives be as slaves. Human beings would never treat slaves better than the non-humankind beings treated human slaves. They could only be crueler, without any warmth.

Nearly ten-thousand Yu Clan people stood aside with relaxed looks. Quietly, they watched their warriors being turned into slaves by Yao Mountain City people. They were also clearly aware of the fact that the owner of Yao Mountain City would use them to extort a great sum of money from their families. Yu Clan nobles

were valuable. Each of them was worth a lot of money. Therefore, unless they fell in battles, they would normally always be treated kindly by human beings, when they were captured.

They didn't need to worry about their lives, but they would have to pay a big sum of money.

Some heartless Yu Clan young men were talking about the slave-control methods of Yao Mountain people. With low voices, they said that the searing irons used by Yao Mountain people seemed to be too simple and crude, and lacked an aesthetic feeling. They believed that if they could design those searing irons, the 'slave' sears on those warriors' faces would be prettier.

The leaders of these slave-hunting troops had sulky faces at the moment, as they had been calculating the losses that they had suffered this time. Aside from their own ransom money, so many Jia Clan warriors, Xiu Clan craftsmen, dark-kind slave warriors, and non-humankind salves were captured, all becoming Yao Mountain City's slaves. The losses of dark-kind slave warriors and non-humankind slaves were negligible, but those Jia Clan warriors and Xiu Clan craftsmen weren't the same...The pension would cost a fortune!

"But of course, if we give their families to Yao Mountain City, we can save that pension. Besides, their families can be converted into ransom money!" A long while ago, the leader of the largest slave-hunting troop bit his lips and gave his suggestion with a low voice.

Hearing him, the eyes of the other leaders shone as they applauded this smart leader smilingly.

What a perfect idea! These Jia Clan warriors and Xiu Clan craftsmen were captured in Yao Mountain City. Therefore, their leaders had to give their families a generous pension back home. However, if those families could be given to Yao Mountain City also as slaves, that pension would be saved! And each one of their families could be converted into a sum of money!

"But, we have to be careful doing it." said a cautious Yu Clan man, "After all, Jia Clan and Xiu Clan people are our own kind. Hmm... We all understand that we can't treat them like slaves."

The group of Yu Clan people pulled their faces and chuckled.

Jia Clan warriors and Xiu Clan craftsmen serving in slave-hunting troops were all from small families, without anyone powerful to depend on. Otherwise, they wouldn't have chosen to become slave hunters. As long as these leaders stayed careful, sending all their families to Yao Mountain City wouldn't cause a big trouble.

"Greedy, stupid slave dealers!" Standing in a distance away, Dishi Tu disgustedly looked at these leaders.

He then turned to those Yao Mountain warriors and Maguspreists. A large part of Yao Mountain warriors were Jia Clan warriors, dark-kind warriors, and non-humankind slaves, all well-equipped. "It's gonna be a tough opponent...No, in fact, he has already become the most difficult commander among all barbarians in this world! Marquis Yao Ji Hao, so shameless, he captured us all with magic poison!"

As Dishi Tu murmured to himself, he saw those 'human guides' were stripped and pushed to before the crowd of slave-hunting troops leaders.

With a series of shrill cries, a 'human guide' was peeled with a magic and soaked in a tank of oil.

"Who are you? Who sent you to assault Yao Mountain City?"

A tall and strong Yao Mountain commander shouted at him.

Soaking in oil, that 'guide' burst into hysterical laughter while enduring the pain, "Burn me! I am only an ordinary guide! Hahaha! Burn me! Soon enough, you will all die too!"

The human commander nodded, then mercilessly threw a torch onto the 'guide'.

"My supreme Blood Moon! So cruel!" Dishi Tu made a few steps backward and exclaimed.

Chapter 1384: Blood Moon Scouts

Like a ghost, Ji Hao silently showed up behind Dishi Tu.

"Cruel indeed, very inhumane! This is even a violation of the Geneva Conventions. But, since the Geneva Conventions is not yet existing, why can't I violate it a little?" Ji Hao murmured while he flipped his finger on the back of Dishi Tu's head.

Dishi Tu sensed a pain from the back of his head and was startled. He screamed, then turned around and clenched his fists, looking at Ji Hao nervously.

"Dear landowner, how are you?" Seeing Ji Hao's face, Dishi Tu had a layer of cold sweat oozing out of his handsome face. He bowed to Ji Hao politely and said with a smile, "I am deeply sorry for causing you so many troubles."

"No, no trouble at all. I actually need to thank you for bringing me so many slaves!" Ji Hao grinned at him and said with a kind countenance. "We have to admit that in the coming future, Yao Mountain territory may need to fight many intense battles in a row. Seeing so many cannon fodders falling from the sky, in fact, I am delighted."

Glancing at those glowing-red melting stoves in a distance away, and those non-humankind warriors who were struggling under searing irons, Dishi Tu sighed slightly. Remaining silent for a while, he bowed to Ji Hao again and said, "I hope I will be able to redeem my warriors...They are the best of my family..."

Ji Hao interrupted him. "Are they truly your family warriors? Alright. You're not a leader of a slave-hunting troop, neither are they your family warriors. You are really different from those guys."

While speaking, Ji Hao pointed at the other slave hunting troops leaders, who had been keeping quiet out of fear now.

Peeling the enemies with a magic, soaking in soil and setting them on fire... This cruel torture augmented these leaders' fear of Ji Hao by several times. In the past, when hunting slaves, these leaders had used even crueler punishments on their slaves. But somehow, a great fear rose from their hearts once they realized that the one suffering this today was one of 'their people'.

"I...Of course I'm a..." Dishi Tu was a bit nervous. He clearly understood that the price of a Blood Moon army commander could be ten times higher than the price of a leader, of a slave-hunting troop. If Ji Hao were slightly greedier, the price could even be a hundred times higher!

Dishi Tu didn't want to see his families waiting for him in a completely empty house, which even had its gates sold for the ransom money, when he returned to Liang Zhu City.

"I, am only an ordinarily..." Dishi Tu stuttered and attempted to explain.

Ji Hao smilingly glanced at the group of leader, then gripped his shoulder, flashed across the air and dragged him to a hill a hundred miles away. Dishi Tu suffered an awful dizziness. As he finally recovered from dizziness caused by disordered space, Ji Hao had already snatched an exquisite space ring from his finger.

"That's my personal belonging! You..." Dishi Tu suddenly found out that dealing with barbarians, especially violent, aggressive yet especially strong leaders of large forces among them, was so very dangerous.

"A leader of a slave-hunting troop will pray when he or she sees something scary. But they will pray to 'beautiful jade coins', 'perfect jades', or simply 'sparkling crystals'! Those were their faith. They came for money."

Fiddling with that exquisite ring, Ji Hao continued coldly, "Only a high-grade noble with a high society background, who has been showering under the light of the Blood Moon, and is standing at a

high position in Yu Dynasty, will pray to the ‘supreme Blood Moon’ when he experiences a great mood swing."

Dishi Tu looked at Ji Hao in shock. He didn’t think that Ji Hao could know about Yu Clan people even more than he imagined.

"I..." Racking his brain and pondering for a short while, Dishi Tu stuttered, "I was...hunting. Yes, I was on a short hunting trip. But accidentally, very accidentally, I approached your territory. I am so sorry. I was forced to join them, to do these unfriendly things to your territory. But I swear I didn’t hurt any of your people."

"I know almost everything about you Yu Clan people. My knowledge about you is far beyond your imagination. Perhaps, you should know one thing. From Yemo Luoye, I won a Supreme-Magus-level slave." Flicking his finger, Ji Hao continued, "An old noble being from the Dark Sun, a true noble. His name is Yemo Shayi. Your culture, your traditions, everything about you, I learned a lot from him."

As dark silhouette flashed out from Ji Hao’s shadow. With a cold smile, Yemo Shayi showed up, standing before Dishi Tu’s face.

Dishi Tu quivered instantly. In fear and shock, he stared at Yemo Shayi and said, "Not possible...Emperor Yemo Luoye, she...But of course, such things can never spread, such shameful things..."

Yemo Shayi circled around Dishi Tu, sniffed him, then chuckled in a frosty voice.

"A little bird with bright eyes, do not deny your true identity. In order to cover the smell of your bodies when you scout in forests, you always apply an ointment made from lithospermum, chrysanthemum, junci medulla, and nineteen other herbs." Yemo Shayi scornfully curved his mouth corners down and said, "Did you make your ointment yourself? Your ointment is rustily made. The aroma of chrysanthemum is a bit too strong, sensing a bit feminine."

Dishi Tu’s countenance changed a bit, then he bowed to Yemo Shayi with respect. Smiling to Ji Hao bitterly, he said, "I am very sorry. I am the commander of the seventeenth regiment of the Blood Moon army. My name is Dishi Tu. Under orders, my warriors and I sneaked into human territory to scout for the current situation of human beings."

Breathing deeply, Dishi Tu continued with a dry voice, "I hope my warriors and I can be treated the way that matches our identities. Our families will be willing to pay ransom money for us."

"Ransom money!" Ji Hao tilted his head, looked at Dishi Tu, and smiled mildly. Then, he coiled his arm around Dishi Tu’s neck, slapped his shoulder with his other hand, and said, "So, Dishi Tu, my friend, talking about the ransom money might hurt our friendship. Hmm, this might sound a bit vulgar, but I solve problems in straightforward ways...So, do you want to be rich?"

Yemo Shayi’s face twitched intensely. In speechlessness, he looked at the sky. ‘Poor Dishi Tu, falling in Ji Hao’s hands, your fate...’ Yemo Shayi slightly shook his head.

"Eh? I’m a proud commander of the Blood Moon army. I..." Dishi Tu wanted to show his spirit.

"Shall I peel you and light you like a lamp?" Ji Hao asked grinningly.

"I think we should better continue the topic of getting rich." Dishi Tu betrayed his spirit right away.

Chapter 1385: Solid Evidence

"Wanna get rich?" Ji Hao held his hands behind his body, looking at Dishi Tu's grinning face, and said, "So, you're a vulgarian too!"

Dishi Tu's face turned slightly dark. With fear, he glanced at Yemo Shayi. If he could defeat Yemo Shayi, he would seriously throw a heavy punch to Ji Hao's face.

As a proud Yu Clan noble, as a professional Blood Moon warrior with high self-esteem, Dishi Tu wanted nothing more than military rewards. 'Getting rich'? Such a shallow thought, how could it have anything to do with him? If Ji Hao didn't threaten him with that cruel punishment, how could he ever say something so shameful?

Yemo Shayi snorted slightly. Hearing that, Dishi Tu trembled, as if he were suddenly struck by high voltage. Letting out a long breath, he gave a bright grin and said, "My dear landowner, I admit I am indeed a vulgarian. So, how will you make me rich? Jade coins? Crystals? Or other precious treasures? I'm interested in them all."

Because of the dreadful pressure from Yemo Shayi, Dishi Tu gave up on himself. He was prepared to throw himself into a muddy puddle.

Ji Hao smiled. Dishi Tu knew how to behave in a delicate situation, and Ji Hao liked people with such an ability. Gently patting Dishi Tu's shoulder, Ji Hao smiled and said, "You will certainly get rich. But before that, I hope you can create evidence for me."

Dishi Tu looked at Ji Hao in confusion. 'Create' evidence? What did that mean?

Coughing slightly, Ji Hao pointed that large campsite for captives in a distance away, and said with a deep voice, "Go tell the others

about who you really are, then convince them to cooperate with you to testify against those ‘guides’. I need a written evidence from each of you to prove that these ‘guides’ were sent out to collude with you by a few large and powerful human families against my Yao Mountain City."

Dishi Tu’s heart missed a beat. As a qualified Yu Clan man, he wasn’t a stranger to all kinds of schemes and conflicts that happened between families. He had witnessed bloody great purges happened in Yu Dynasty, but he never thought that he would be involved in an internal strife of the humankind one day.

"Are some powerful human families against your city? Why? Did you... offend them?"

Ji Hao smilingly looked at Dishi Tu and said something that twisted Dishi Tu’s face, with a mild, calm voice, "Of course, I didn’t offend them. On the contrary, they colluded with you non-humankind beings, and are against our entire humankind!"

Raising his head, he looked at the beautiful skyglow and continued blandly, "In your written evidence, you need to make it hundred percent sure that those large human families have already made an agreement with you. They planned to storm Yao Mountain City and use this city as a stronghold, then attack Pu Ban City. They vainly attempted to catch all leaders of the alliance of human clans in action!"

Holding Dishi Tu’s hand, Ji Hao let him squat on the ground along with himself. Sweeping his palm across the ground, a clear relief map of Pu Ban City area appeared on the ground. Ji Hao drew a line between Pu Ban City and Yao Mountain City, then smiled and said, "You see? My Yao Mountain territory is the broadest, strongest human territory around Pu Ban City."

"With my city occupied, their army would be able to threaten the core area of Pu Ban City anytime they wanted. They could even attack from three directions simultaneously, marching straight

into Pu Ban City while sweeping across all territories around the city." Ji Hao punched heavily on Pu Ban City on the map, then smiled to Dishi Tu and continued, "This is the evil intent of those families!"

"Destroying the alliance of human clans? But what's in it for them?" Dishi Tu spread his hands and looked at Ji Hao. He was even more confused. "They are influential human clans, which means they have shared interests with the alliance!"

"What's for them? Sure, they will gain, depending on how much you can offer them." Ji Hao smilingly looked at Dishi Tu and said, "This is the advantage of 'creating' evidence. You can make your 'offer' perfect, and we can convince the world that your 'offer' fills the interest and demands of these large human families, so they made an agreement with you people."

Dishi Tu shook his head and said, "I don't know what we can offer to tempt those large families! You need to know that this is a war between two races. What can go beyond the interest of their race?"

"Family interests can surely go beyond the interest of their race." Ji Hao narrowed his eyes, looked at Dishi Tu, and said, "As a race which has conquered countless cultures, you should have a deep understanding about this...For example, the enfeoffment system?"

"The enfeoffment system?" Dishi Tu showed a complicated countenance. With a trace of curiosity, he looked at Ji Hao, and said, "No offense, but I have to say that based on the social civilization level in this world, it seems that you shouldn't have such a thought. Probably, this can happen in the future, but the current civilization level of the alliance of human clans..."

"A primitive tribal culture, sure, I admit that." Ji Hao proudly pointed at his nose and said, "But, I'm a smart person. Perhaps, you can think it in this way, that my wisdom has transcended many people in this era. I have many different thoughts, but as for where

did those come from, you can use your imagination...Maybe, a bolt of thunder struck on my head and brought those thoughts?"

Dishi Tu showed the whites of his eyes. That, was some real nonsense. With hidden bitterness, he helplessly looked at Ji Hao. ‘Do I look like an idiot?’ He thought.

"Some powerful human clans have made an agreement with the non-humankind." Taking back the smile on his face, Ji Hao said coldly.

"The flood largely weakened the humankind. In the eyes of some people from these large human families, the humankind can no longer hold the attacks from the non-humankind. Therefore, they decided to betray the humankind, and to save their own families from damages."

"According to your agreement, they would be helping the non-humankind to destroy the alliance of human clans, and wipe out all human forces that dare to fight against the non-humankind. In return, Yu Dynasty would appoint them as ‘kings’. Each family would have an enfeoffment, build a kingdom, and pledge loyalty to Yu Dynasty."

"Yu Dynasty would become the ruler of Pan Gu world, with those ‘kings’ serving as its claws."

"Mining, fishing, animal husbandry, the military... With the help of these ‘kings’, Yu Dynasty wouldn’t be spending too many efforts to possess all inexhaustible resources in this world."

Hearing Ji Hao’s words, Dishi Tu gave a bitter smile and said, "But, not a single large Yu Clan family will say that..."

Ji Hao gently patted Dishi Tu’s head, then smiled and said, "I don’t need those large Yu Clan families to stand out and testify. Dishi Tu, the commander of the best scouts of the Blood Moon army, a member of the Dishi Family, has become a captive in my Yao Mountain City...Do I need more evidence?"

Ji Hao smilingly looked at Dishi Tu’s embarrassed face, "Because of you, this chain of evidence is perfect! Dear Dishi Tu, you’re gonna be rich! Because, I... will give you a generous reward."

Chapter 1386: An Opportunity to Make Money

In the campsite for captives, over a thousand slave-hunting troop leaders watched a group of ‘guides’ burning like torches, with deathly pale faces.

Cruel, so cruel! Over ten of their ‘guides’ had been burning in the fire, howling shrilly. However, healers from Yao Mountain City had been taking good care of them, feeding them with all kinds of drugs to replenish their life-force and spirit blood.

They were burning in a fire, but could not die; they were forced to stay awake. Such a cruel torture could only happen in Yao Mountain City and hell.

"The owner of Yao Mountain territory is such a monster." murmured a young Yu Clan man. This was his first hunting trip. A breeze brought over a grilling meat aroma. Instantly, the faces of this young man and the other few around him twisted. Simultaneously, they began vomiting heavily.

"Monsters?" Along with Dishi Tu, Ji Hao showed up behind this young man and said smilingly, "In fact, back in Southern Wasteland, my people called you monsters too. Three-eyed monsters, four-eyed monsters, five-eyed monsters, dark-skin monsters, green-skin monsters..."

Ji Hao shrugged and looked at those ‘guides’, who had been struggling and screaming in the fire, then continued with a deep voice, "They wanted my people and me dead, in the most miserable way. But, I want my people to live, happily and safely. This conflict can never be mediated, and can only be solved in a ‘monstrous’ way."

Ji Hao put his hand on a shoulder of the young Yu Clan man, then looked him in the eyes and said seriously, "You should feel

lucky that you failed so fast, before you could cause any loss to my people and me. This is the reason why you still have a chance to go back home and be with your families."

"If, I said if, you did any slight harm to my people, I swear I would have cut off your heads, piled them up, chopped your bodies into pieces, and fed to the wolves!" Patting the pasty face of the young Yu Clan man, he continued with a bland tone, "Trust me, in order to protect my people, I can do things even worse than the hell you have imagined."

The group of Yu Clan people remained silent. Ji Hao sounded determined. His words delivered a strong coldness, that drilled straight into these Yu Clan people' hearts. Clearly, he was a strong, tough-minded landowner, who would not be swayed. Based on this direct impression they had of Ji Hao, these Yu Clan people surely wouldn't be stupid enough to say anything to him in retort.

"Alright, alright! Everyone, listen to me!" Dishi Tu took a few steps forward, clapped his hands loudly, and caught everyone's attention, then said, "First of all, please allow me to introduce myself. I am Dishi Tu, the commander of Blood Eye regiment from the Blood Moon army. Under Emperor Dishi Yanluo's order, I came to the human territory to scout for the current situation of human beings."

The group of leaders exclaimed out. In both respect and awe, they looked at Dishi Tu, especially the token held in his hand, which represented his identity. All Yu Clan people on the scene bowed to Dishi Tu. They were all from small Yu Clan families, and be it in terms of social status or family background, they could never compare with Dishi Tu.

"Alright, now I've told you about who I am and what my mission is. Unfortunately, you have made a loss-making deal." Dishi Tu sighed and continued speaking, "Look at you... Captives, you're all captives. Fortunately, you still have a chance to be ransomed. But your warriors, ah, so unfortunate, they are dead already. How

much ransom money will you pay?"

The faces of those slave-hunting troop leaders turned even darker. Sulkily, they looked at Dishi Tu.

Indeed, these slave hunters didn't have strong family backgrounds. But year after year, they showered in blood and did brutal works. Their experiences raised their fierce tempers. Dishi Tu was a high-grade nobleman in truth, but, if he ever dared to laugh at them, these slave-hunting troop leaders could swear that Dishi Tu wouldn't have a chance to even watch the sun rise again!

Over a thousand slave-hunting troops could become an extremely strong force if they combined their strengths. Killing a couple of high-grade noble beings wouldn't be a big deal to a force like this. Not to mention the fact that they could let Ji Hao bear the blame.

Sensing the viciousness from these leaders, Dishi Tu hurriedly raised his hands and laughed, "Ah, ah, I am not laughing at you. In fact, I am trying to say that I've brought you an opportunity to make money!"

Before these leaders said anything, he pointed at Ji Hao and carried on, "Let me introduce this noble, powerful, and wise lord to you. Marquis Yao Ji Hao, a top-grade nobleman among human beings."

Clicking his tongue loudly, Dishi Tu gave a long sigh and said, "We have already seen what Lord Ji Hao can do. That was impressive, amazing, and terrifying. We are over a thousand slave-hunting troops, with millions of warriors, but within a quarter of an hour, we were destroyed!"

The group of leader showed weird and complicated looks on their faces. They were indeed stunned by Ji Hao's power.

Before, they thought that this would be an easy, simple small task, with a high payoff. But in the end, this small task threw them into a desperate situation. The ransom money, the pension, all the

blames from the families of the dead ones; thinking about these, some of those leaders even wanted to die right now!

"On behalf of Lord Ji Hao, such a powerful, respectful man, I brought you an opportunity to make money, serious money. As long as you cooperate with Lord Ji Hao, you can all return home safely, without paying a coin. In addition, you may even receive a payback that might be beyond your imaginations!"

"Lord Dishi Tu, what do you need us to do?" A tall Yu Clan man, whose face was almost covered in a perfectly brushed golden beard, leaped up and shouted, "What do you need us to do? Make money, serious money, that's our favorite news!"

Dishi Tu quickly told them about Ji Hao's requirements. Relaxedly, he said, "See? It's easy, isn't it? You only need to testify against some people as I said, and prove that they attempted to overturn the alliance of human clans."

The group of leader looked at each other and remained silent.

They had been fighting against human clans for years. They had seen all kinds of human beings, the brave ones, the ones who chose to fight till death, the tough ones, the generous ones, but Ji Hao was the first person they met who tended to frame his own kind.

But of course, since someone among human beings had colluded with them to attack Ji Hao's territory indeed, it was reasonable for freaks like Ji Hao to exist among human beings.

They were attacking his territory, so why couldn't he collude with the non-humankind as well to frame them?

"How much can we get?" Asked a leader with a muffled voice.

"You will get more than you can imagine!" Ji Hao looked at him and laughed, "Have you heard about an old saying, 'an eye for an eye'? Some people described my temper with an idiom, 'Ya Zi Bi Bao', means, seeking revenge for the smallest grievance. Do you understand what 'Ya Zi' means?"

In the fire, a human torch suddenly burst into raging screams, "Marquis Yao Ji Hao, you will die miserably!"

Chapter 1387: Hurt Their Ancestors

Except for over ten burning ones, the other captured ‘human guides’ had been roaring and struggling hysterically, seeming ready to pounce on Ji Hao and tear him into pieces.

Metal clangs could be heard without an end as the enchanted chains coiled on their bodies glowed, laying tremendous pressure on them as they pressed them to the ground. In the surroundings, heavily armored Yao Mountain warriors growled and raised their long spears, whipping violently on their bodies.

Along with a series of bone cracking noise, their bones were broken, but none of them begged for mercy. Still, they madly cursed Ji Hao, cursed Gold Crow Clan people, and everyone who lived in Yao Mountain City.

Turning away from those Yu Clan people who had been racking their brains to organize their language in order to draft a well-structured written evidence, Ji Hao walked to the guide on fire, who cursed him the first.

"I will die miserably?" Ji Hao smiled, then scornfully shook his head, and said, "You don’t get to decide that. Whoever is behind you, since they colluded with the non-humankind to attack my city in such a lowly, nasty way, and tried to hurt my families and my people, they should understand that they may need to pay for this."

"No one is aboveboard. So, let’s see who can be meaner and more shameless." Ji Hao reached out his hand and patted the man’s burning chest, then said blandly, "He still has the strength to curse. It seems that our fire isn’t hot enough…Use the bone-rotting magic fire, and add some special seasonings!"

Followed Ji Hao’s order, tens of Maguspreists who waited aside cast a spell in chorus. They wielded their wands and released a green fire. The fire quickly merged into the

‘guide’s body.

A sizzling noise was immediately generated. The ‘guide’s muscles began melting, and blood started evaporating at a scary rate. The pitch of his voice instantly soared. Hearing his shrill howls, two healers poured a bottle of strong liquid drug onto his body. Under the effect of the drug, his muscles grew back speedily, and so did his life-force and evaporated blood.

Standing by this ‘guide’ who was twitching and shrieking, Ji Hao looked the other ‘guides’ who hadn’t been sent on fire, and said coldly, "I know that you’re all hard bones. You are men of sacrifice, raised by your families with incalculable costs. Facing common punishments, you won’t say a word."

The group of ‘guides’, including the burning ones, laughed out loud together. Their laughter was filled with pride. Sacrificing for their families was an honored thing to do.

No matter how cruelly Ji Hao tortured them, they wouldn’t say a thing.

The Master Maguspriests from their families had already planted magic seals in their souls. Once an external force touched their souls, the magic seals would be triggered, and their souls would be gone. Therefore, even if Ji Hao directly tortured their souls, he still would get no confession from them.

As for torture…They had to just look at these burning ones. They had already been burned for more than an hour, but still, none of them gave a word. They didn’t betray their families, neither did they give Ji Hao the names of whoever planned this.

"No soft bones exist among human beings!" A relatively older man pointed at Ji Hao and yelled, "Marquis Yao Ji Hao, whatever you do, you will not get anything from us!"

Ji Hao speechlessly rubbed his nose and gave a long sigh.

‘No soft bones exist among human beings’, this even made Ji Hao

feel guilty. Was he a villain now? The problem was that those ‘hard bones’ colluded with the non-humankind and attempted to destroy his Yao Mountain territory!

Ji Hao had made incalculable contributions to the humankind, and saved countless people from the flood. He was a true hero! But now, why was he torturing a group of human beings who called themselves ‘hard bones’?

"I think this isn’t the right play!" said Ji Hao blandly, "But, if it’s wrong, let it be wrong. I know one thing, that you wanted to hurt my people. For this very reason, I will take revenge by all means. Today, you will give me what I want, willingly or not."

Breathing deeply, Ji Hao continued with a harsh tone, "As I said, you have to give me the evidentiary statements!"

"You can forget about it!" A muscular man laughed, "We won’t give you a word! Marquis Yao Ji Hao, come on! Set me on fire to see if I will be afraid of you or not!"

Ji Hao looked at this man from head to toe. That was a newly promoted Magus King, with a pair of extra strong arms. Apparently, those arms were well-gifted. The man had a handsome and righteous look. When he yelled at Ji Hao to set him on fire, he sounded even brave and unbending.

"True men! You are true men!" Ji Hao looked at that man and praised.

"We are all decent men! Of course, we are true men!" The man looked around in pride, holding his head high.

"Hah, true men. When the flood was raised, countless human beings cried and begged for survival. Water-kind creatures ran rampant in every corner of this world. Back then, where were you bunch of true men?" Ji Hao smiled and threw out a question.

The man’s face was blushed immediately. He magnified his nostrils and breathed loudly, without saying a word.

"True men! Haha, I have another question for you. In the past, the non-humankind had launched countless attacks. But have you ever joined the alliance and fought life-risking battles against Jia Clan monsters?"

All ‘guides’ lowered their heads and gave no response.

"Alright, true men! We showered in blood and fought desperately. We risked our lives and finally defeated the flood. But after that, you bunch of true men showed up! You wanted to steal our credits; you wanted to be awarded. For that, you even colluded with the non-humankind to hurt your own kind!" growled Ji Hao, "You scums, are you even men?"

No one said anything.

The Yao Mountain warriors raised their heads high proudly. Even the weakest non-human slave warrior from Yao Mountain territory pointed at these ‘guides’ with its nose.

Ji Hao stopped talking. He locked his fingers together and incanted an ancient spell.

Following a series of creaking noise, a gate emerged in the air. It was a bronze gate, embossed with countless twisted ghost faces. The gate quietly opened. A strong netherworld power swirled out of the gate, and soon, Netherworld Hierarch walked out in big steps.

"Hahaha, my little friend Ji Hao. We see each other again so soon! I’ve been studying the…Eh? What are these? Are you grilling human beings to go with wine?" Looking at those burning ‘guides’, Netherworld Hierarch shouted, "But, why are they still breathing?"

Ji Hao rolled his eyes and responded in a deep voice, "Elder, do me a favor. These people here, please give me the souls of their ancestors!"

The faces of those ‘guides’ paled instantly. What did Ji Hao say? The souls of their ancestors?

Chapter 1388: A Terrifying Deal

Netherworld Hierarch looked at Ji Hao, seeming to be struggling.

His gaze at Ji Hao was complicated, with a trace of contempt, surprise, and many other subtle emotions that Ji Hao didn't want to dig in. A long while later, Netherworld Hierarch put his mouth near Ji Hao's ear and whispered, "Since the ancient times, people only affected their younger generation when they did things wrong. Kid, you are so cruel, now that the younger generations did things wrong, you're relating it to their ancestors! Those are dead people!"

Ji Hao sighed slightly, then innocently and pitifully spread his hands towards Netherworld Hierarch and said, "But, they were bullying me. Elder, you have no idea. If my Yao Mountain territory didn't have this power of defense, hehe, I'm afraid that my families and all people living in my territory would have been enslaved already!"

Ji Hao told Netherworld Hierarch about the whole thing in detail. Netherworld Hierarch frowned instantly, then scratched his forehead with a forefinger, and said, "Too much, this is too much... really too much. Ah, those little things, every generation is worse than the older one. How could they treat a kid like you in such a nasty way? Hm!"

Ji Hao looked at Netherworld Hierarch's struggling face. Abruptly, he dragged Netherworld Hierarch's sleeve, then pointed at those burning melting stoves, and said, "Elder, look over there, those were the warriors I captured this time. You can have as many of them as you want."

Netherworld Hierarch's eye corners twitched. He looked at those warriors struggling under searing irons in surprise and said, "So many non-humankind beings? Hah! All alive and healthy! Hah! Well, I don't want those frog-like short creatures. They're useless!

They'll melt immediately in the blood pool. But, those dark-skinned ones and four-eyed ones, good, good, very good!"

Waving his broad sleeve, Netherworld Hierarch looked at Ji Hao and laughed, "Give me all the dark-skinned ones and four-eyed ones. Hmm, before, I could only get the corpses of these creatures from battlefields. And the ones I got were all stored for a long time, such that half of the life-force of those corpses was lost already."

Ji Hao generously waved his hand and said, "They are yours then. Are you gonna take them away now?"

Netherworld Hierarch rubbed his hands and released a bone-piercingly cold spirit power, raising frosty gusts of wind that swirled in all directions. Immediately, he counted out all Jia Clan warriors and dark-kind warriors in this large campsite.

Those were over a thousand slave-hunting troops. Every troop had at least three-hundred Jia Clan warriors and thousands of dark-kind warriors as its main force. This time, Ji Hao captured nearly a million Jia Clan warriors and over ten-million dark-kind warriors. As for those non-humankind slaves who had been darting around, yelling and shouting, Netherworld Hierarch didn't even want to count.

"I'm getting a bit greedy, a bit greedy. My heart of Dao is even shaking, shaking. But, I am just in need of good raw materials. Greedy, for once, only once." While struggling, Netherworld Hierarch sighed, then again waved his broad sleeve. Behind him, strong Netherworld power streams roared out like a hurricane from the bronze gate, swiftly rolling up those Jia Clan warriors and dark-kind warriors, and bringing them into the Netherworld.

Netherworld Hierarch then cast a spell with a low voice. With a deep series of metal clangs from the gate, a troop of muscular warriors walked out in large steps, in perfectly ordered lines.

Each of these warriors was about twelve-meter tall, with three sharp horns on the head, and four eyes glowing with a scary, dark

green light. From their eyes, green flakes of fire had been puffing out from time to time. Occasionally, they would open their mouths and make a gasp, while letting out dazzling white fires. Their uncovered skins were covered in dragon scales.

Each warrior had a heavy blood-red shield held in his left hand, and a nine-meters-long machete in his right hand. Obviously, these entirely blood-red machetes were dangerous pieces, made from the blood poison from the blood pool.

"I made these ‘blood sea half-dragon warriors’ with Ji Clan warrior corpses and dragon spirit blood in my leisure time. They have all been nourished in the blood pool for a thousand years. Their dragon scales are as tough as the scales of real dragons. No weapon can hurt those scales, and no magic can leave a mark on those scales. They can also let out blood pool dragon fire from their mouths...Be careful, don’t let them hurt your people by accident, because the wounds caused by them are usually very troublesome to treat."

"They feel no pain, fear, or tiredness. They don’t need food or water either. Their bodies can absorb all natural powers to replenish themselves. As long as you don’t tear them into pieces, they can fight forever."

"Except for their blood pool dragon fire, they don’t have other special functions or abilities. But, they do have a great strength; they are as strong as high-level Divine Magi."

Hearing Netherworld Hierarch introducing these half-dragon warriors in detail, Ji Hao and a group of Yao Mountain leaders around him raised their eyebrows in excitement. These half-dragon warriors were definitely strong weapons. After all, they couldn’t feel pain and fear, wouldn’t be tired, but could absorb natural powers to replenish themselves and heal their wounds!

Netherworld Hierarch let out a hundred thousand half-dragon warriors, and following behind them were large groups of dark-

kind warriors. These warriors had purely dark skins, and glowing, vivid-red eyes. They walked airily without causing the slightest sound.

"These are ‘blood pool ghosts’. I created them accidentally when I was making those half-dragon warriors. They can freely switch between tangible forms and intangible forms. In tangible forms, they are as strong as high-level Magus Kings, and in intangible forms, they can move like lights and shadows, about ten-thousand miles per second. Their weapons are also made in the blood pool. With a slight touch, their weapons can turn an ordinary human being into a puddle of blood."

A whole million blood pool ghosts, which were as strong as high-level Magus Kings, and could freely switch between tangible forms and intangible forms, walked out of the bronze gate.

Same as those half-dragon warriors, these blood pool ghosts needed no food or water. No matter how badly they were injured, as long as they remained in whole pieces, they would be able to absorb natural powers and heal themselves.

"I can’t take advantages of you. These half-dragon warriors and blood pool ghosts are yours, as a gift from me." Netherworld Hierarch looked at this terrifying army of walking dead, and said carelessly, "But, you have to be careful when using them. They don’t have brains, and they can’t think. They’ll do exactly what you tell them to do. If you fail to control them well and cause a large trouble, I would never admit having anything to do with that!"

Ji Hao rolled his eyes, then glanced at Netherworld Hierarch.

Netherworld Hierarch excitedly slapped Ji Hao’s shoulder and said with a large grin, "I will send a batch of those dark-skinned and four-eyed ones back to you, in three-hundred to five-hundred years, when I have finished my works with them. Hehe, so many fresh materials. They’ll be enough for me to play...No, ‘study’ for

many years."

Laughing towards the sky, Netherworld Hierarch threw a sideways glimpse at those human ‘guides’. A dark circle spun in his eyes. In a short while, he reached his hand into the bronze gate and clenched his fingers. Instantly, tens of thousands of translucent figures drifted out of the gate.

Without even taking a glance at those souls he grasped out of the netherworld, he hurriedly said goodbye to Ji Hao, transformed into a bright beam of light, and flashed into the bronze gate.

Thud! Thud! The gate closed, and disappeared right away.

Chapter 1389: A Written Complaint

To a great extent, human beings valued and respected their ancestors. Even the smallest human clan located in a cave in the wilderness would build a small altar to enshrine and worship the souls of their ancestors. That was a faith, a belief, which had been giving people the strong will of fighting against the pressure from the non-humankind.

Therefore, these ‘guides’ collapsed sooner than he expected.

When tens of thousands of souls showed up before their faces, even the ones who refused to give a word when burning in fire started crying and struggling. Then, they suffered a mental breakdown.

In no time, Ji Hao attained the confessions that he wanted.

‘The Gong Sun Family and the other few large human families colluded with the non-humankind and attempted to occupy Yao Mountain territory, to seize the opportunity to launch a surprise attack on Pu Ban City and overturn the alliance of human clans, as the entire humankind was weakened by the flood.’

The oral confession made by these ‘guides’ was recorded in thousands of heavy jade boards, including images, voices, soul marks. These men of sacrifice from those large families told Ji Hao their names, family backgrounds, the names of their superiors, and everything else about themselves. They confessed the details of the fact that they colluded with non-humankind beings to attack Yao Mountain City; they even said out some things they did in the past.

Hearing their confession, Ji Hao couldn’t help but sneer.

Those large, powerful families and these men of sacrifice that they raised, these people did nothing good in the past either. As men of sacrifice, who were secretly raised by their families, and

the things they had done were all unpresentable, including hurting each other, assassinating important members of other large families, even wiping out quite a number of small clans. They wiped out those small clans themselves for no other reason than a few core descendants of their families having their eyes on a couple of girls from those small clans.

They mentioned all kinds of dirty, nasty things that they had done. The confession of these, thousands of ‘guides’ made Ji Hao speechless. In the end, Ji Hao could only gaze at the sky, without being able to say a word.

In fact, Ji Hao wouldn’t be wronging them by accusing them of colluding with the non-humankind, because many of these large families had indeed done such things! For things that weren’t convenient to be done by them, they hired non-humankind beings to do for them. Many times, they even traded all kinds of secrets of the alliance of human clans for resources from the non-humankind.

Guided by Ji Hao, the leaders of those slave-hunting troops had made over a thousand solid written evidence with details regarding how exactly they colluded with those large families, where this strong force mass came from, who provided with the supplies, who guided them to this area, and how they sneaked into Yao Mountain territory. The information they provided was tightly connected and flawlessly matched.

Also, Dishi Tu swore as a commander of the Blood Moon army that he was the link between the Blood Moon army and those large human families. In his confession, the non-humankind had been preparing to launch an all-out attack to the humankind, and these large families decided to seize the opportunity to rise up; he made these vague things sound quite real.

The fire burning on the few ‘guides’ was put on. Healers applied ointments on their bodies, while the souls of their ancestors were locked in the heavily guarded core of a branch formation of the

heaven and earth great formation. Afterward, Ji Hao took everyone's confession and drove the nine dragons chariot to Pu Ban City, all by himself.

Fiery clouds rolled, while the chariot glowed blindingly.

It was late at night. Wherever the chariot flashed across, the world would be illuminated by a red light. One could see the golden-red light from the chariot from over a thousand miles away.

Thousands of miles away from the Town Hall, tens of people suddenly rose into the sky and blocked Ji Hao's way in a straight line.

"Marquis Yao Ji Hao, under Gong Sun Leader's order, you can't..." said a strong voice.

Ji Hao didn't want to waste any time on these people. He waved his hand and sent out tens of shreds of dark shadows from his sleeve. Those shadows drifted out of Ji Hao's sleeve and hovered around these people. Immediately, shrill howls were let out from these people's throats. Thin streams of blood mist sprayed from all over of their bodies, while they fell to the ground, desperately waving their hands.

Facing those blood pool ghosts Ji Hao released, these elite warriors from large human families failed to even strike back before they were injured so badly by those ghosts with faintly glowing blood-red weapons. The strong blood-pool poison lingered in their wounds. Without top-grade natural treasures to neutralize the poison, these warriors could never heal their own bodies. They could only lie on the ground, waiting for death.

"Stupid." Ji Hao sneered. The nine dragons flew straightaway without pausing. Within a blink of an eye, the chariot flashed across the air and stopped above the Town Hall.

Locking his fingers together, Ji Hao let out a breath towards his

hands, then spread his fingers. Following his moves, forty-nine bolts of Yu Yu divine thunder were generated, which exploded above the Town Hall. They shattered the roof tiles and triggered layers of defensive screens. The ground around the Town Hall quaked intensively, raising clouds of dirt and sand. Countless human warriors rushed out in a panic.

"Ji Hao!" Gong Sun Bo flew out of the Town Hall in fury. Staring at Ji Hao with red eyes, he shouted, "How dare you come to this place?! We have already told you that you are not allowed to step into the Town Hall ever again!"

Ji Hao looked at Gong Sun Bo and asked with a bland tone, "What gives you the right to say that?"

Gong Sun Bo gave a twisted grin, pointed at the Town Hall, and growled, "We deprived your political rights on behalf of the most of marquises and earls!"

The power system of the alliance of human clans was similar to the parliamentary system, that Ji Hao learned about in his previous life. Tens of thousands of marquises and earls, the leaders of large human clans would all take parts in discussions regarding important affairs, in the Town Hall. Any decision supported by the majority would be the highest decision of the alliance.

Over sixty percent of all marquises, earls, and clan leaders supported Gong Sun Family and the other large families. Therefore, their decisions were the highest decisions of the entire humankind!

They expelled Ji Hao, which meant the humankind expelled Ji Hao.

"What’s give you the right to speak on because of all those marquises and earls?" Ji Hao laughed out loud. He boosted his power and let his laughter echo like thunder, nearly through the entire Pu Ban City. "You colluded with the non-humankind and attempted to overthrow the alliance of human clan. You chose to

serve the non-humankind like dogs. What gives you the right to speak on behalf of all human beings?"

Gong Sun Bo was startled by Ji Hao’s words. He leaped into the sky, pointed at Ji Hao, and shouted in rage, "Nonsense! When did we collude with the non-humankind?"

Gong Sun Bo didn’t sound so confident when saying that. To be honest, they did collude with the non-humankind to attack Yao Mountain territory. Therefore, Ji Hao wasn’t exactly wronging them by accusing them of conspiring with the non-humankind. However, how could Gong Sun Bo ever admit such a thing? Neither did he believe that Ji Hao could find any evidence!

Those slave-hunting troops didn’t even know who paid for all those top-grade heavy weapons and hired them to attack Yao Mountain City!

"Emperor Shun, I have a written complaint here. We, all Yao Mountain people, are accusing these large human families of colluding with the non-humankind with evil intents. Will you take it or not?" Taking out a leather scroll, Ji Hao shouted, "If you refuse to take it, I will go straight to Emperor Fuxi, Emperor Shennong, and the other former emperors! I still have their emperor tokens!"

Emperor Shun walked out of the Town Hall with a large group of human leaders.

The faces of those large family leaders were all pale. How could this kid Ji Hao have emperor tokens?

What a disaster!

Chapter 1390: A Bad Situation

"Emperor tokens!" Gong Sun Bo and the other large family leaders' eyes almost burned.

Ji Hao actually had emperor tokens! He could actually contact those former human emperors who were in the Chaos and doing god knew what! This, this, this was a disaster to Gong Sun Bo and the other leaders!

If they knew that Ji Hao had emperors tokens, they would never, ever go against Ji Hao so aggressively! If they knew this, they would even be happy to marry the most beautiful girls in their families to Ji Hao, to earn his support.

But they didn't know, and they had already done those things!

Glancing at each other, Gong Sun Bo and the other leaders silently took a step forward. A strong intent of killing spread out from their bodies, that could make any ordinary human being quiver out of fear. They could not let Ji Hao go to those former emperors; such things could never happen!

They weren't afraid of Emperor Shun, because Emperor Shun was a contemporary of theirs, and they were powerful enough to confront his majesty.

However, to an incomparable extent, they respected and feared those former emperors. Gong Sun Bo, for example, as the leader of You Xiong Gong Sun Family, had tens of thousands of differently scaled families and clans branched from his family following his words! However, once Emperor Xuanyuan showed up himself, with a single word, he could take away all the power that Gong Sun Bo possessed, and drop him straight to hell from the top of the society! Emperor Xuanyuan was the only reason for the Gong Sun Family to be so powerful and influential!

Gong Sun Bo could go against the world, but he could not

withstand, not even a word from Emperor Xuanyuan!

The other large human families were all the same. Once Emperor Shennong, Emperor Suiren, Emperor You Chao, Emperor Fuxi, and the other former emperors showed up in person, one single word from those former emperors could take away everything they had. As Ji Hao was able to contact those former emperors, who had been staying out of worldly affairs for long, he had to die!

"This kid is a disaster, we should have killed him long ago!" Gong Sun Bo and the other leaders had their eye corners twitched. Throwing eye communications, they reached an agreement — They should have joined hands and killed Ji Hao long ago.

"Hehe!" Ji Hao gave a fake laugh. The intent of killing was so wrong. Didn't those leaders know that he could sense it?

Chaos power streams rose from his head. The Pan Gu bell buzzed deeply and flew out. Strong streams of Chaos power poured down and shielded Ji Hao's entire body. The Taiji cloak released two streams of light, as clear as water, with the colors of black and white as it wove into a diagram of Taiji, spinning slowly behind Ji Hao.

The Taiji creation cauldron suddenly appeared under Ji Hao's feet, with the Pan Jia sun rising slowly from it, illuminating the sky with a dazzling red light and releasing heatwaves, which swept across the entire area. The Taiji universe mirror was hiding inside the Pan Gu bell, preparing to send away all attacks from the enemies.

"I have too many treasures. I don't think you have enough time to silence me." Laughing out loud, Ji Hao abruptly pointed his finger at Xiong Ao, the leader of the Xiong Family, who looked as strong and sturdy as a giant bear, standing behind Gong Sun Bo. "Xiong Leader, I have someone's confession here. Do you want to hear it?" shouted Ji Hao.

Turning around his palm, a small jade board appeared in Ji Hao's

hand, releasing a bright light screen as Ji Hao cast a spell on it.

"Kill this boy! He is a disaster for our humankind!" Gong Sun Bo growled.

Tens of thousands of strong power streams flooded to Ji Hao, but Gong Sun Bo and other leaders showed despair on their faces. They had tasted the Pan Gu bell's defensive power days ago! Even though they wanted to kill Ji Hao so badly, they weren't confident about their own capabilities.

Heavy thuds could be heard without an end, as the Pan Gu bell swayed slightly and blocked all attacks.

A slight part of the power flood drilled through the thick layer of Chaos power and struck on Ji Hao, but the Taiji diagram spinning behind him and completely naturalized it.

In the light screen released from the jade board, a scrawny, tall, middle-aged man with a pointy chin had been screaming, "I confess! I confess! Xiong Li, the third son of the current leader of Xiong Family, which is a branch of You Xiong Family, it was me and my people who killed Xiong Li...Xiong Li's soul is still suffering inside a ghost fire lamp of Gong Sun Bi, the young leader of our Gong Sun Family! Gong Sun Bi carries that lamp everywhere!"

Gasping loudly, this middle-aged man continued loudly, "Gong Sun Bi raped Xiong Leader's youngest daughter, and Xiong Li knew about it. He wouldn't let go of Gong Sun Bi. Therefore, our young leader ordered us to kill him, then blame it on the non-humankind!"

Immediately, people on the scene stopped attacking Ji Hao. Gong Sun Bo turned around hurriedly, looked at Xiong Ao, as he said, "Xiong Ao leader, this...this nonsense, you won't believe it, will you? You and me, we are not from the same family, but we shared an origin. We're like brothers, you..."

On Xiong Ao’s face, dark stripes emerged one after another. Soon, a life-like bear tattoo appeared on Xiong Ao’s body. Gasping loudly and quickly, he suddenly dashed out, cracked the space, and broke into the group of Gong Sun Family people within a blink of an eye and gripping the neck of a handsome young man.

Tens of Gong Sun Family people growled out together, pulled out their swords, and pointed at Xiong Ao.

Hearing thunderous roars, hundreds of Xiong Family people activated their treasures and released an overwhelming power vibration against those Gong Sun Family people.

Beside those Xiong Family people, people from the Mi Family, which also originated from the You Xiong Family, stepped up, confronting the Gong Sun Family together with the Xiong Family.

Xiong Ao slapped on the face of that handsome young man, crushing half of his face and breaking all his teeth. From a finger of that young man, Xiong Ao took out a space ring. Carefully, he handed the ring to an old Maguspriest from Xiong Family.

The old Maguspriest pointed out his wand and let out a dark fire, burning the ring. As the handsome young man screamed, the soul seal left in the soul was destroyed. The old Maguspriest carefully searched in the ring for a while, then took out a ghost fire lamp made from cyan wolf bones.

A twisted figure had been struggling and wailing in the lamp. Abruptly seeing Xiong Ao, it paused. Staring at him, it desperately waved its arms towards him and shouted, with blood-red tears gushing out of its twisted eyes.

"My son! My daughter!" Xiong Ao’s eye corners suddenly ruptured, as blood mixed with tears, spurted from his eyes. Hysterically, he pointed at Gong Sun Bo and growled, "Gong Sun Leader...What Marquis Yao said is real! My son, my daughter, hah...They were on a trip when they encountered non-humankind monsters, and were unfortunately killed! Hah, they died at the

hands of this non-humankind monster!"

A Gong Sun Family elder stood out, pointed at Xiong Ao, and yelled, "Xiong Ao, let go of my grandson! You dare not to kill him, do you?"

Xiong Ao tilted his head, looked at that elder from head to toe, and said slowly, "Gong Sun Bao, what are you? Why don't I dare to kill him? Your grandson's life is important, but weren't my son and daughter important?"

Raising his arm, he threw out a punch, and smashed Gong Sun Bi's head.

Ji Hao chuckled, then unhurriedly took out thousands of jade boards. In ordered lines, those jade boards floated before his face.

Gong Sun Bo gasped in shock. Around him, the countenances of quite a few large family leaders turned extremely weird.

Chapter 1391: The Anger of Marquises and Earls

Suddenly, a complicated expression appeared on Emperor Shun's face, from which, one might find a trace of nervousness, a faint anticipation, a slight hesitation, and worry. But more obviously, he seemed to be at a loss. Subconsciously, he raised his right hand and slightly clenched his fingers towards Ji Hao, but soon, he dropped that hand.

He seemed to want to stop Ji Hao from activating those jade boards and keep the evidence secret. As a human emperor who had been trying to hard to maintain the balance of the overall situation and fight against the non-humankind, Emperor Shun never wanted too many internal conflicts.

However, as a man with a sense of morality, Emperor Shun was actually looking forward for Ji Hao to do some things. At the very least, Ji Hao might be able to change those large families a little bit, right?

Emperor Shun's face went a bit twisted as he closed his eyes painfully. He had been in anticipation. He always wanted to do something to these large families. But, in so many years that had passed, he failed to resolve to do what he wanted. After all, these large families were rooted deeply in the humankind, such that even touching them slightly could cause a severe damage to the entire humankind, especially under the current circumstances.

The flood had just sunk, and the non-humankind might be planning something.

But, Emperor Shun was truly struggling. Perhaps, this was also the best chance, wasn't it?

Xiong Ao raised Gong Sun Bi's corpse, roaring like a beast. He cursed those Gong Sun Family elders madly. Gong Sun Bi's

grandfather had also been growling hysterically, attempting to pounce on Xiong Ao. A few Gong Sun family elders, who managed to keep their minds clear, held him tightly with all their strength. The war between Xiong Ao and Gong Sun Bi's grandfather could not happen.

Gong Sun Bi killed Xiong Ao's son and raped his daughter...The Xiong Family was the most important branch of You Xiong Family, and was exceptionally powerful. Over a hundred Marquises and earls were from the Xiong Family. Yet, Gong Sun Bi did such cruel things to the son and daughter of the current Xiong Family leader. He even sealed the soul of Xiong Ao's son, torturing it day and night!

It was a deathly hatred! This hatred was deep enough to put the Xiong Family and Gong Sun Family at daggers drawn!

Xiong Ao had to be comforted at the moment, at all costs. Once the Xiong Family was torn from the Gong Sun Family, the latter would become a joke of the humankind. Even worse, if the clone of Emperor Xuanyuan in Pan Gu world ever got to know about this, the Gong Sun Family would be gone.

The Gong Sun Family had done too many dirty things that could not bear a thorough investigation. Everyone knew how fierce Emperor Xuanyuan could be. Once Emperor Xuanyuan knew about the nasty history of the Gong Sun Family, many Gong Sun Family people would die! Gong Sun Family people were Emperor Xuanyuan's direct descendants indeed, but so were Xiong Family people!

Emperor Xuanyuan would never cover up for Gong Sun Bo and his people. If they did things wrong, they would die without a doubt!

"Haha, since you've already done those things, you shouldn't be afraid of being known!" Ji Hao chuckled, then picked another jade board and cast a spell on it. Immediately, a light screen was

released, flickering to about a hundred meter high.

"Ji Hao! How dare you!" Gong Sun Bi's entire body was trembling, not because of anger, but because of fear. How on earth did Ji Hao get those confessions? How on earth did he know about these things?

In the light screen, a muscular man was howling with a pained expression. "I confess! I confess! The branch of Mi Family located in Mount Green Cloud... I took a non-humankind slave-hunting troop from the 'Shining Gold Chamber of Commerce' there and destroyed them!"

"You can't blame me for it... can't blame me! The leader of that branch was the most trusted man of the current Mi Family leader. But, he had been trying to persuade Mi Family leader to stay away from my master, and to get close to my master's enemies! So, they had to die, so there can be a peace!"

Behind Xiong Ao, a tremor ran through Mi Family leader's body. Suddenly, his eyes turned purely dark, scarily dark. Next, pasty electric bolts burst from those eyes, condensing into two fist-sized, dazzling spell symbols before his face.

"Damn you! You destroyed Mount Green Cloud! I, I, I..."

A stream of blood sprayed out from Mi Family leader's mouth and fell on a Gong Sun Family elder. The blood exploded and released blinding thunderbolts. That Gong Sun Family elder wasn't preparing for this. Consequently, a half of his body was blown up, with his head and half a chest remaining, screaming in pain.

"Gong Sun Cang! Damn you! Gong Sun Cang! I am Mi Xin, and the leader of Mount Green Cloud was my twin brother! He was my twin brother!" Mi Xin roared hoarsely. Thunderbolts dazzled all over his body while he rushed towards the remaining half of Gong Sun Cang.

Based on Mi Xin's experiences, he knew what truly happened

once he heard the man's confession.

His twin brother, the leader of the Mount Green Cloud branch of Mi Family, was the man he trusted the most, who also had a chance to become the next Master Maguspreist of the Mi Family. His brother never liked Gong Sun Cang. He had been trying to tell Mi Xin that Gong Sun Cang was sinister and vicious, and was not worth being a friend of. He also encouraged Mi Xin to be friendly with the other few elders from Gong Sun Family, and draw a clear line between Gong Sun Cang and himself.

For this small thing, Gong Sun Cang had actually colluded with a non-humankind slave-hunting troop and slaughtered all of Mi Family people in Mount Green Cloud.

Mi Xin attacked Gong Sun Cang crazily. The group of Gong Sun Family elders was stirred. They shouted and yelled, without knowing what to do. Some tried to save Gong Sun Cang, some attempted to stop Mi Xin, but no one managed to ease the chaotic situation.

Ji Hao activated hundreds of jade boards in a row.

The confessions made by those men of sacrifice from large families could be heard one after another, exposing the dirty things they had done before.

Gong Sun Family, You Chao Family, Suiren Family, High Sun Family, Cloud Sun Family, Ghost Chariot Family, Chu Wu Clan, marquises and earls standing behind these large families had their expressions changed. Some pulled out their weapons in fury and marched towards some elders from these large families. Some gritted their teeth and drew back quickly with twisted smiles on their faces.

Over sixty percent of all marquises and earls were standing behind these large families. With the support of these marquises and earls, the large families could maintain their power and social status. These earls and marquises were also important components

of the strong forces possessed by those large families.

Bluntly speaking, if these marquises and earls went against these large families, they would lose at least eighty percent of their powers!

Ji Hao had been activating more jade boards, exposing more and more confessions. Marquises and earls burst into raging growls one after another, raising their swords and blades. Some marquises and earls stood up with sunken hearts, dismayingly stepping away from the large family people with their clansmen.

Within a quarter of an hour, eighty percent of the tens of thousands of marquises and earls behind the tens of large families went away!

Some earls and marquises stood in a distance away from those large family people, in groups with their friends. Some glanced at each other and silently went to Emperor Shun, standing behind him.

Some utterly enraged Marquises and earls went to Ji Hao while cursing. They took their stands and lined up behind Ji Hao.

Soon, over ten-thousand marquises and earls stood behind Ji Hao, staring at Gong Sun Bo and the other large family people with red eyes.

Chapter 1392: The Anger of the Emperor

"What a show, what a show!" Ji Hao held his hands behind his body, with thousands of jade boards floating in a straight line beside him, playing the confessions of those 'guides' over and over again.

They were men of sacrifice. Decent things wouldn't be their jobs. Their tasks were mostly related to uprooting dissidents or family-exterminations, because their mouths would be shut tight, and they would never betray their masters.

Things that needed to be kept secret were surely not decent. Once these things were exposed, countless troubles could be caused. At the moment, for this very reason, large groups of marquises and earls gathered their armies in Pu Ban City and launched the craziest attack on the leaders of those large families. Some of them even risked their lives. Even if they might die, they wanted Gong Sun Bo and his people to suffer.

Panting deeply, over a thousand marquises and earls stood behind Ji Hao in silence, staring at those large family people with eyes filled with blood streaks. Back in the Kui Gate and here in Pu Ban City twice, Ji Hao madly slaughtered elders from these large families twice. Many elders died in his hands. For sure, those dead elders had also done lots of nasty things, and many of those things were related to these marquises and earls behind Ji Hao.

Those elders were dead already. Therefore, these marquises and earls stayed calm constrainedly. The enemies were dead, which meant they had no reason to start wars like the Xiong Family. They gathered behind Ji Hao and took a position. They would no longer serve those large families as their branches. Instead, they'd rather join hands with Ji Hao and Si Wen Ming.

"Not real! Those aren't real! I don't know those people! They are liars! Ji Hao hired them! Liars! They are lying!" While defending

against the fierce attacks from tens of marquises and earls, Gong Sun Bo barked ragingly.

The leader of You Chao Family was also suffering the attacks from a few marquises and earls. While protecting himself, he had also been screaming, "Marquis Yao Ji Hao! You are holding an evil intention! You are sowing discord among us. You, you, you're killing our bloodlines!"

Suiren Family leader's stood in a distance away, under the protection of a large group of people. Holding a staff, which was glowing with a bright fiery light, he pointed at Ji Hao and yelled, "Marquis Yao Ji Hao, are you out of your mind? Are you possessed? Those are lies! Lies! People! Please don't listen to this crazy boy. Those things, those things..."

"Those things..." Ji Hao said blandly, "...if your men of sacrifice didn't confess to me themselves, how could I possibly know about those things? I didn't know that a son and a daughter of leader Xiong Ao has gone missing, neither did I know that the Mi Family had a branch in Mount Green Cloud. And for sure, I had no way to find out that the greatest treasure of the Moon Family was actually stolen from their ancestral temple..."

Counting these things, Ji Hao couldn't help but shake his head and sigh.

These large families...Many talented, righteous and powerful princes like Lie Mountain Kang and Huaxu Lie existed in these families. But these families never lacked dregs like Lie Mountain Xu, Yi Shen, and Gong Gong Wuyou.

As young people, those people were arrogant and unbridled. Because of their family background, no one could restrain them. When they get older, when their elderships became old or died, these people would gradually take over the power and resources of their families. They would become old scums like Wu Gu and Wu Thunder; they would become evil and sinister.

In the eyes of those people, all ordinary people were as insignificant as ants. They believed that they could do anything they wanted to ordinary human beings in this world. Even Xiong Ao's son and daughter were murdered by Gong Sun Bi. One could easily imagine how would they treat the other human beings.

Ji Hao activated the remaining hundreds of jade boards.

These were the confessions of the strongest, highest ranked batch of men of sacrifice that Ji Hao had captured. Same as the others, they confessed all dirty things they had done in their lives.

They gave Ji Hao everything they knew, to beg for a painless death. They begged Ji Hao to kill them, both their bodies and souls, because they didn't want to live anymore.

All of a sudden, marquises and earls and those large family people, who had been brawling in the hall, paused. They watched the light screens released from those jade boards, stunned. Gradually, some marquises and earls managed to calm slightly back down. They stopped fighting and drew back, while the faces of those large family leaders twisted like fierce ghosts.

Those men of sacrifice mentioned some cases related to several large families.

For example, thirty years ago, a prince of Gong Sun Family, who was excellent in both terms of morality and talent, was murdered by the Ghost Chariot Family and Chu Wu Clan. Back then, Gong Sun Family elders all agreed that he was the most promising one to occupy Emperor Shun's position. Joint-handedly, the Ghost Chariot Family and Chu Wu Clan murdered that prince for his marrow and bloodline. They transplanted his marrow and blood into a Gu bug raised by the Chu Wu Clan to improve its potential and strength.

Gong Sun Bo's face fumed in fury, with blood was streaming down his mouth corners.

That prince was his son, his most beloved son! Thirty years ago, that prince went on a trip, but never comes back. Gong Sun Bo searched for his son with no spare pain for entire thirty years, and found nothing!

"You!" Gong Sun Bo screamed in sorrow and coughed blood.

"It's not real! Not real! No! I...I don't know...This, thirty years ago, I don't know. I have nothing to do with it!"

"Yes, I gave the order! So what? Gong Sun Bo, do you have something to say? I just couldn't bear watching the proud face of that little b*stard of yours! He injured my precious boy with one single move! He deserved to die, didn't he?" The leader of Chu Wu Clan burst into a fierce roar.

Suddenly, You Chao Family leader leaped up hysterically, reached his hands straight out while flying towards the leader of Cloud Sun Family.

"You! It was you! You replaced a few herbs from my son's body-strengthening medicine! Because of you, he can never become a Divine Magus! It was you!" the You Chao Family leader growled.

It was messed up, all messed up. Abruptly, the leaders and elders from tens of large families found out that many unbearable pains they had been suffering actually came from the people they called 'brothers' every day!

They were confused or deceived before. But with these confessions that Ji Hao provided, everything was suddenly clear!

The deep hatred made them absolutely irreconcilable with each other!

The elders and leaders from tens of large families began fighting like a group of dogs, in a total mess.

All of a sudden, a golden sword light descended from the sky. People from the tens of large families shrieked, while deep slashes were left on their bodies, almost tearing their bodies apart. Blood

splashed while they fell to the ground.

A man descended along with the golden sword light, wrapped in a dark-yellow mist.

"You bunch of...Die!" In a towering rage, he growled.

The sword light dazzled again and sent hundreds of heads up into the sky. Blood sprayed all over the air.

Chapter 1393: Cut the Knot

The Town Hall...

Emperor Shun sat in the middle, with two men wearing tall hats sitting on each side of him.

The four men were much taller than Emperor Shun, coiling in mist and releasing strong power vibrations. They were trembling slightly. Apparently, they were enraged.

Tens of thousands of jade boards that contained confessions of slave hunters and those 'guides' floated in the air while sparkling. All confessions had been played.

Ji Hao sat not far away from Emperor Shun calmly. Unlike before, he wasn't all alone anymore. Tens of superordinate elderly marquises and earls sat by his sides, and behind him, over ten-thousand marquises and earls sat in straight lines. Everyone's eyes were filled with blood streaks, as they gritted their teeth and looked at those jade boards.

Somethings were like pustules on the skin, that before one popped them, one could never know how bad the inside was. Once one popped these pustules, one might be shocked, scared, or enraged; one might even despair.

Tens of human families, the top-ranked and most powerful ones, were actually so rotten on the inside. Not to even mention they colluded with the non-humankind, attacked Yao Mountain City, and aimed at Pu Ban City, merely because of all nasty things confessed by those men of sacrifice, a bloody rupture had already been created between these large families and ordinary human clans.

Everyone on the scene clearly realized that from this day on, the branches that originated from large ancient families had cut off their relationships with these large families.

Some things were way too dark, cruel, unkind, and despairing, such as what happened to Xiong Ao's son and daughter, or the Mount Green Cloud branch of the Mi Clan. People who had done such things were insane and heartless. How could those large families do things like that? For their own interests, for power, those large family people had already become devils, from human beings!

Before, they had been keeping their dark histories perfectly secret. No now knew what they did, and non-humankind beings from the Yu Clan were their best shields. They took the blame for many bloody, dark sins.

No one ever thought, nor believed, that they could do such things. From Emperor Shun to all marquises and earls, from clan leaders to clansmen, who would believe that the descendants of ancient human emperors, glorious, god-like powerful Divine Magi, would do nasty things like these?

Divine Magi, powerful Divine Magi who stood high above the masses like gods, weren't they the guardians of human beings? Shouldn't they stand in battlefronts against the non-humankind, shielding human beings from enemies' arrows, swords, and blades with their chests?

Why would they do anything that was even worse than things done by the non-humankind monsters?

"They... How can they deserve the totem of You Xiong Family?" Coiling in dark-yellow mist, Emperor Xuanyuan growled in wrath. The power vibration released from his body was the fiercest. "They... How could they... How dare they...?"

A Gong Sun Family elder tremblingly crawled out of the crowed, reverently kneeled on the ground, and kowtowed to Emperor Xuanyuan as he said, "Great Ancestor, most of You Xiong Family people are good! These years, they have also been contributing to the humankind!"

Emperor Xuanyuan pointed out his finger and released a sharp sword intent, penetrating the elder's shoulder. Blood splashed while Emperor Xuanyuan continued growling, "Scums! Have they been contributing? Then, why didn't I see you send you one warrior to fight the flood?"

The elder lied on the ground, facing the floor and daring not to move. This time, the flood nearly destroyed humanity. Facing the flood, these large families merely protected their own territories and people, but didn't send out a single warrior to fight for the humankind. That was an unquestioned fact which could not be changed, no matter how they explained.

"Scums! Perhaps, you didn't do things wrong, but don't you really know anything about what they've done?" Out of anger, Emperor Xuanyuan had been shaking intensely, causing a deafening buzzing noise in the Town Hall. He generated yellow streaks of sword power which gradually descended towards all You Xiong Family people on the scene.

"Every year, when you worship ancestors, you would tell me that human beings are living in contentment, and the world is in peace. Why didn't anyone tell me one word that is true at a worshiping ceremony?" Emperor Xuanyuan could barely organize his language. His tongue even rolled abnormally when he was talking. After all, he was just a clone of Emperor Xuanyuan. His wits were limited, and his character was flawed. Obviously, he had more of Emperor Xuanyuan's fierceness and decisiveness, which made him a violent being. Just now, he cut hundreds of Gong Sun Family people once he showed up, which even startled Ji Hao.

"We, we...!" The elder tried to explain, but in the end, he failed to say a word. Indeed, they worshipped their ancestors every year. In the ancestral temple of You Xiong Family, they prayed to Emperor Xuanyuan.

But to be honest, praying to Emperor Xuanyuan...wouldn't bring any actual response from him anyway. Over time, this kind of

worshipping ceremony had become a type of show about a family's cohesive affinity, power, and social status. Who would tell the truth at a ceremony like this?

This might be unpleasant to hear, but basically, worshipping ceremonies held in these large families had become 'ghost-cheating' activities!

"Alright, if a man has a tumor, he can simply resect it." Snorting heavily, Emperor Xuanyuan said, "Something seems to have happened in the area that I am responsible for, so I can't stay here for long. Emperor Shun, use the 'Great Mitiuo spell' to interrogate every scum from the You Xiong Family. Kill everyone who has done dirty things, then send them to our friend, Netherworld Priest, and trade for a batch of zombie warriors."

Emperor Xuanyuan sneered and continued in a cold and harsh tone, "As living beings, they're useless. But after death, they can indeed make some contribution to the humankind."

The other three former emperors nodded and applauded, praising Emperor Xuanyuan for his way of handling this. They unanimously decided to do the same to people from the other large families.

In the hall, the group of large family leader and elders were scared to death. Their faces paled, and they began wailing and howling. As for the guilty ones, some of them even shat their pants. The innocent ones were also freaked out.

The Great Mitiuo spell was the cruelest soul-torturing magic created by human beings. It would grind a soul into the finest grains to examine the behavior of its owner. It was an evil spell. There was about thirty percent chance that a Divine Magus would die right on the spot under the effect of this magic, seventy percent chance that this Divine Magus would go crazy, and about one percent chance of staying fine in the luckiest case.

If this spell were truly used, these strongest human families

would certainly suffer great losses.

But, the four former emperors had already made the decision. It was a decision of Emperor Xuanyuan, so who dared to dissuade him?

Chapter 1394: The Formation Changed

Over the Lang Zhu City, the sky was cloudless.

All clouds were dispelled by the strong power vibration released from tens of thousands of divine towers, exposing the surpassingly beautiful starry sky.

The Yu Clan nobles endured the flood for years. But now, they had been trying their best to have fun. They crazily burned their energies and powers to lead a life of pleasure, as if they were making up for what they missed in the past few years.

The nights in Liang Zhu City had become erotic. A moist, sticky, weird smell could be sensed from every street and alley. In the shades of trees, in flower shrubs, one could find entangled bodies, and hear the strange moans without an end.

In a magnificent great hall which was decorated with blood-red gemstones, Dishi Yanluo, the Emperor in power of the Blood Moon, lied lazily in a soft and large chair, surrounded by hundreds of beautiful Yu Clan girls.

The wine, the fresh flowers, the aphrodisiac incense, the floating, soft voile dresses, the fluffy feathers of bird-of-paradise... The floor was paved with a thick layer of blood-red rose petals. Behind gauze curtains fluttering in the wind, one could see strong Yu Clan warriors putting their arms around the waists of young girls.

A group of musicians sat in a corner of the hall, nearly drunk. They put no rein to their imaginations, performing a weird melody that had been composing in their heads. The roving melody was like the hearts of all Yu Clan beings on the scene, shaking, swaying, full of sexual passion.

Tens of carefully selected female human slaves with soft armors and short swords were divided into two groups, pretending to fight

in the hall. Because of the soft melody, the movements of these female slaves had become slow and powerless. They looked like airily dancing snakes, flirty and without a sense of strength.

"Ah, hehe, I hate the rainy season!" Dishi Yanluo raised a human-head-sized wine cup, which was carved out of an entire piece of ruby. He shouted aloud and slightly swayed the cup, then poured the wine on an exceptionally coquettish Yu Clan girl.

The girl was chuckling. Wetted by the wine, her extremely thin voile dress was almost transparent, exposing her beautiful body.

Dishi Yanluo put his fingers around her neck, preparing to press her down on that large, soft chair, which was enough for three bulls to roll on. But suddenly, a short Xiu Clan old man rushed into the hall.

"Your Majesty!" From a distance away, the Xiu Clan old man shouted, "I am very sorry, but there's one thing that you need to see yourself. Dishi Cha, what on earth has he done? Something about that portal-base teleporting formation is wrong."

Dishi Yanluo was almost drunk. Hearing that Xiu Clan old man, he took a deep breath. Dense mist rose from his head, spreading a strong scent of alcohol. In the next moment, his mind was clear again. With three flickering eyes, he pushed away the girl, stood up, and looked at the Xiu Clan old man.

"Master Q, what's wrong? It's just a portal connecting Pan Gu world and a small world, isn't it?" Walking to the Xiu Clan old man with quick steps, Dishi Yanluo said, "Those small worlds were already caught by Pan Gu world, and this great world has been devouring them. The portal is useless now, so I told you to send your disciples to demolish it!"

"It can't be demolished!" Master Q looked at Dishi Yanluo with a strange expression. "Dishi Cha...We don't know what he changed, but something is wrong about these portals. And, I have a bad feeling!"

Dishi Yanlou frowned slightly.

Dishi Cha, that damnable man! He broke the portal that led to the hometown of all Yu Clan beings, and made the plan for the twelve families in power to conquer the twelve new worlds. But in the meantime, he did a series of queer things.

When the endless water-kind armies abruptly started marching out of the twelve portals, and were all under Gong Gong's control, Dishi Yanluo and the other emperors realized that something about Dishi Cha was very wrong.

Reasonably, the twelve emperors should be gathering their armies by now and hunting Dishi Cha all over the world. They should be forcing Dishi Cha to give the twelve families an explanation. However, the 'romantic' nature of Yu Clan nobles allowed them to start enjoying life once the flood was gone. These days, all administrative machineries of Yu Dynasty had shut down, and all military camps were empty!

Even Dishi Yanluo himself had been spending time with alcohol and girls, so who could he count on?

Master Q followed his order and went to demolish that useless portal, which was already...Dishi Yanluo quickly glanced at the middle area of Master Q's body. 'Perhaps, he's too old to have sex, so he can still focus on that portal at such a beautiful and romantic night, right?' thought Dishi Yanluo.

"Let's go take a look." Anyhow, Master Q was the best Xiu Clan master recognized by the entire Blood Moon. Therefore, Dishi Yanluo had to show enough respect to him. Dishi Yanluo clearly understood that the Blood Moon wouldn't be affected too much, even if he was replaced by another emperor. But without Master Qi, the annual profit of the Blood Moon would drop by at least fifty percent!

As a matter of fact, Master Q was even more valuable than Dishi Yanluo, the Emperor of Blood Moon.

Wrapping himself with a blood-red cloak, Dishi Yanluo followed behind Master Qi through a winding corridor, and walked to the mansion where the portal was located. On the way, more and more warriors with blood-red armors followed up. Gradually, a strong army emerged behind Dishi Yanluo.

In the large courtyard, the portal-base formation that once released a blinding light stream to connect with the small world, had now been dazzling. A thirty-meters thick, almost tangible light screen wrapped up the entire formation. Dishi Yanluo was by no means a master of magic formation, but at first sight, he realized that this formation wasn't the same one that had generated the portal back then.

The formation lying before Dishi Yanluo's eyes was a proper eighteen-pointed star formation. Floating around every star point were thousands of differently sized supportive formations and spell symbols.

Every one hundred breaths, a white light would suddenly shine from the formation.

Followed a thunderous, muffled bang, the white light spread in all directions like a giant, beating heart. It reached to the sky for over a hundred miles high and then disappeared.

"What is this?" Dishi Yanluo scratched his head.

"This is like a space navigational light!" Master Q raised his head and looked at the twelve enormous holes in the sky, which were created by the twelve water worlds. "This former portal-base teleporting formation is now supported by the power of an entire world. Twelve formations like this, connected with each other, form a tremendous...space navigational light!"

"Space navigational light? Who is Dishi Cha guiding?" Cold sweat immediately oozed from Dishi Yanluo's forehead as he said, "That son of a b*tch, he...Who has he been guiding?"

Chapter 1395: Dig Through

During the flood, the non-humankind did have some accomplishments. At least, Liang Zhu City had been reconstructed after it was halfway flattened that day. The city was even more magnificent now, especially the Town Hall located in the central area. The new Town Hall was three times larger than before, luxuriously designed.

In the main hall, on the twelve pillars near the wall, the twelve emperors in power sat straight on enormous thrones. Down below, hundreds of sallow-faced, high-grade Yu Clan nobles with luxurious clothing and puffy eyes were scattered in the round-shaped hall.

Obviously, everyone was tired in these couple of days. A rosy aroma filled the air.

Dishi Yanluo sent out the most urgent message and gathered these people here. Many of those people still hadn't come back to earth from the 'romantic life' they had been living during these days.

The best Xiu Clan masters from the three suns and twelve moons stood on the stage in the middle of the hall, detailedly reporting their research results regarding the twelve portal-base teleporting formations to everyone on the scene. The research results from the other eleven masters were the same as Master Qi, that these formations could not be demolished or broken, and they had connected with each other to form a space navigational light.

With the help of the great vibration caused by the twelve small worlds while merging with Pan Gu world, a lighthouse-like space navigational light had been releasing strong energy waves. According to the twelve masters, this kind of energy wave could be sensed by some legendary 'holy pieces', and help to locate Pan Gu world.

"The void mirror!" Master Q stood on the stage and said loudly, "Your Majesty, you must have heard about the void mirror, a type of supreme treasure used by our kind to sweep across the Chaos and conquer worlds. However, void mirrors are precious, extremely difficult to produce. Till present, the entire Yu Clan only possess less than thirty of them, all in the hands of..."

Master Q's face turned slightly dark. He didn't finish his speech, because he didn't know how to, or, he didn't dare to.

"Tell us about Dishi Cha!" said Yanmo Sha, the emperor in power of the Dark Sun. His body was like a gray sun, releasing faintly sensible, gray-colored energy waves. The space around him had been twisting, interweaving along the gray energy waves. He clapped his hands loudly and talked a bit mumblingly.

A few Yu Clan men in dark-grey long robes walked neatly up to the stage, seeming smart and energetic. Politely, they bowed to each emperor. One of them took out a scroll and started reading aloud the information about Dishi Cha and his family.

Dishi Cha's original name was Di Cha. He was an ordinary member of a branch family of the Di Family. The ancestors of the Di Family were a group of down-and-out low-grade nobles. When they joined the expeditionary force to Pan Gu world, Di Cha's ancestor was merely an ordinary guard of the Di Family.

In the eyes of Yu Clan people, lacking of a good family ground was an original sin. Without a good family background, one would be living at the bottom of the society, working like a horse all his life. Dishi Cha lived the first half of his life like this. In the Di Family, he was only an insignificant member of a branch, with a slight little bit of resources held in his hands. He married an ordinary wife and had two ordinary sons.

One year, Dishi Cha returned to his hometown for the trial of sun and soon. He only had about ten percent chance to survive the trial. While he was gone, his two sons had no income in the Di

Family. Therefore, for survival, for cultivation and resources, they raised a slave-hunting troop and headed into the Southern Wasteland to hunt for slaves.

"Anyhow, the Di Family is a decent noble family. But as members of such a family, those young men started a slave-hunting troop, so poverty-stricken!" Dishi Yanluo supported his chin with both hands and murmured, "After he left, his sons had no choice but to become slave hunters. This proved that Dishi Cha had no resources at all...No interpersonal network, no continuation resources, no nothing."

"He shouldn't be able to pass the trial of sun and moon and become a Sun and Moon stage powerful being." Yemo Luoye frowned and said, "We all know that even the twelve emperors before us, who owned all resources of their families, couldn't guarantee success. Dishi Cha, hehe, is he so talented? I don't believe it."

The man with a dark-gray robe continued his reading.

Dishi Cha's two sons became slave hunters, served the family for years, and contributed enough profits. At last, the older one was incorporated into the Blood Moon army, becoming the commander of an ordinary regiment, whereas his younger brother stayed in Southern Wasteland as a slave hunter.

What happened next might make Yu Clan beings speechless. Back in Southern Wasteland, Dishi Cha's younger son was killed by Ji Hao. Later on, Ji Hao was brought to Pu Ban City by Si Wen Ming, just when Dishi Yanluo became emperor. To show his power and strength, Dishi Yanluo launched an offensive against the humankind.

Back then, Dishi Yanluo hadn't attained the full support from all Blood Moon forces. The Chi Ban Mountain battle was a failure. Dishi Cha's oldest son fell in that battle, and this gave Dishi Cha a perfect excuse for revenge.

As an inspector, a Sun and Moon stage powerful being, Dishi Cha returned to Pan Gu world. A father avenging his son was perfectly reasonable. Not long after he returned, he started the Pan Xi world life-and-death game.

Unfortunately, the non-humankind lost the game.

"But Dishi Cha kept his word. He gave us each a coordinate of a new world as our hush money." Fan Hai, the emperor of the Nether Moon, said slowly, "Now think about it! Something about the twelve coordinates is wrong, very wrong! Aha, damn it! Those worlds were all filled with water-kind creatures raised by Gong Gong!"

"Tremendous, powerful water-kind armies like those...Even though the nature of all the twelve worlds was water, raising those water-kind armies still required nearly a thousand years." Yemo Luoye said coldly. "Which means, Dishi Cha attained the twelve coordinates nearly a thousand years ago. And back then, he had already colluded with Gong Gong, sowing the seeds of the water-kind in those worlds."

"Based on Dishi Cha's family background, the resources he had and his individual power at that time, he shouldn't be able to do all this." Dishi Yanluo sighed, "Therefore, he betrayed the agreement made by our ancestors...betrayed our little group. He sold the truth about Pan Gu world to a...powerful being, who may have a void mirror!"

"Dishi Cha could never become a Sun and Moons stage being on his own account!" Fan Hai said with a deep voice, "Damnable thing, he is..."

Fan Hai slightly quivered, with raging gray fire rising from his body. He looked as ugly as a ten-thousand-year-old zombie.

"I am curious though...Currently, Dishi Cha seems to be with Yemo Tian a lot. We all know that Yemo Tian's family background is..." Polo Jia said with a slight viciousness. Polo Jia was the Flow[1]

Moon Emperor. Colorful fire sparkles dazzled around his body, and his face was blur.

Yemo Luoye immediately stood up from her seat and gave a furious scream. From her erect eye, a dark beam of light struck towards Polo Jia.

[1] Editor's note: Now as per earlier mentions, Polo family is said to be under the High Moon, but here, the author has mentioned Flow Moon. So, let's just go with the flow (y'all gotta handle the puns as they comes), and see if we can later on come back and correct this or not.

Chapter 1396: Intimidating, Fighting

No one tried to dissuade them. The rest ten emperors simply watched.

The light of destruction released from Yemo Luoye's erect eye was incredibly powerful, and wherever it dazzled across, the time, space, and all natural powers seemed to melt. The melted natural powers were absorbed by Yemo Luoye with her power of devouring, becoming her strength.

Polo Jia smirked with a deep voice. As the Flow Moon Emperor, as a keeper and sower of the Yu Clan culture and knowledge among all Yu Clan nobles, and as the final guardian of the Yu Clan civilization, Polo Jia wasn't exceptionally powerful, but his power was unpredictable.

A few crystal shields emerged before the light of destruction, followed by a few earth shields and wooden shields. Within a twinkling of an eye, a bright fiery light shone, and countless light beams wove into a large web, wrapping the light of destruction up.

Yemo Luoye's light of destruction tore apart all of Polo Jia's defense and flashed to his chest. Polo Jia shook his head and flicked his finger. Following his move, twelve six-feet-tall divine towers emerged before his face and generated a three-feet-thick defensive light screen, protecting him from the destruction light.

The destruction light bumped into the colorful light screen, and caused a shrill squeezing noise that might soften one's teeth. The destruction light drilled in inch by inch, while the light screen collapsed bit by bit. But before the screen was destroyed entirely, Polo Jia flicked his finger again and released a hundred and eight tiny divine towers.

"Yemo Luoye, violence represents nothing. Knowledge is our most precious wealth." Polo Jia looked at Yemo Luoye proudly and said, "Your violence is not the strongest among all twelve of us,

whereas my knowledge is top-ranked among all our kind in Pan Gu world. Your violence can never conquer my knowledge!"

"Idiot!" Yemo Luoye took back the destruction light, sat calmly back on her throne, and said, "If I want to kill you, your knowledge would be useless. When your brain rots in your grave, your knowledge will be nothing but trash."

Polo Jia chuckled, then proudly took back his tiny divine towers and prepared to brag about his knowledge. But silently, a dark-red dagger was put against his neck. The sharp dagger edge was almost cutting into his skin, which brought him a slight pain.

"You!" Face paled, cold sweat oozed from Polo Jia's forehead.

Polo Jia suddenly remembered something that made him feel slightly helpless. Because of their devouring power and destructive power, Yemo Family people could cultivate much more efficiently than the others. Therefore, among the twelve families in power, the Yemo Family had the most hidden powerful beings.

It was said that the strongest fighter of Yemo Luoye, whose name was Yemo Shayi, was lost to a human being by her. But, how could she not have a couple of more hidden powerful ones around her?

Polo Jia wasn't good at fighting. If Yemo Luoye had one guard as powerful as Yemo Shayi, Polo Jia would be unable to defend himself against her.

"Enough! No need to hurt the harmony!" Piji Nu, the emperor of the Red Sun, who believed in violence and slaughter, stood up and began talking imperially. "Before, we might have played harmless small tricks against each other as a pastime. But now, we can't fall into internal strifes. Polo Jia, apologize to Emperor Yemo Luoye!"

The dagger put against Polo Jia's neck disappeared. He rubbed his neck and stood up politely, then bowed to Yemo Luoye and said, "Emperor Yemo Luoye, please forgive me for what I said. We now know that everything is Dishi Cha's scheme, and whoever is

behind this, he or she must be related to Yemo Tian."

"Even that terrifying weapon!" Polo Jia continued, "Years ago, we all sensed that power, which belonged to a supreme weapon. We have no way to attain a strong weapon like that. The only possibility was Dishi Cha, but judging by his position, that weapon could not belong to him!"

"Yemo Tian has a supreme weapon!" said Yemo Luoye coldly, "Wherever he got it..."

With complicated expressions, the rest eleven emperors glanced at Yemo Luoye simultaneously. But as Polo Jia had already been forced to apologize, these emperors quickly turned their eyes away. Anyway, everyone knew about that rumor which had been spreading for long. Yemo Tian and Yemo Luoye had the same mother, but their fathers were two different men. Therefore, Yemo Luoye had been keeping a close watch on Yemo Tian!

"The problem we're facing right now, how should we fight against the coming enemy?" continued Yemo Luoye blandly, "The connection between us and Pan Yu world is broken...By now, the permanent portal can't be repaired, neither should we repair it."

"If an enemy as strong as we have imagined truly arrives, and if we repair the portal that leads back home, his or her power would be sensed by people back in Pan Yu world, and the secret of Pan Gu world would go public. Then, Pan Gu world would become like those conquered great worlds, carved up, torn apart, and occupied. At least, we will lose everything."

With a cold voice, Yemo Luoye carried on, "Therefore, we need to figure out a way to ruin the plan of Dishi Cha and the one behind him, with our own powers."

Polo Jia added blandly, "We have a great chance to succeed. Because, even if an enemy as powerful as we have imagined truly descended to Pan Gu world, his power would be suppressed by the great Dao of Pan Gu world to an extreme point. In this world, he or

she would be stronger than Sun and Moon stage beings, but not too much stronger."

Breathing deeply, he continued with his deep voice, "We need to make a little bit sacrifice. Some people will die, we will lose some of our strongest warriors, and each of our families will lose a large batch of people. But compared to Pan Gu world, all these losses will be worthy."

Dishi Yanlou's eyes flickered with a fierce blood-red light as he said, "Why should we fight that bloody enemy alone? Don't you forget that as local creatures in Pan Gu world, human beings are quite strong. Among them, some were exceptionally powerful, who nearly destroyed our ancestors back then."

"Will the humankind help us fight against that being?" Fan Hai blocked and said.

"We can show our powers to human beings first." Dishi Yanluo stood up. Dense blood-red mist rolled around his body as he laughed out loud, "We show our powers to them, and let them see how strong we are now. Then, we force them to fight for us."

Wielding his fist, Dishi Yanluo continued loudly, "Human beings have a deep hatred for us. Therefore, they would never cooperate with us. We should launch the strike, frighten them, and show them our powers. When they are lost in fear and hopelessness, we will propose a settlement agreement. Then, all problems will be solved."

The group of emperor glanced at each other and raised their right hands, agreeing with Dishi Yanluo.

Chapter 1397: Prepare for the War, Prepare for the War

To the south of Liang Zhu City, on a broad highland which had just been exposed from the flood, the wooden water city built by Ji Hao years ago had gone aground.

Tens of thousands of starry sky spirit turtles dropped the ropes held in their mouths and leisurely strolled around the city. Their bodies were enormous and heavy. Gigantic footprints were left on the ground by them. Maguspreists from the army spread a large amount of fiddlehead seed, then cast a magic and grew acres of tender fiddleheads, letting those turtles happily gobble.

In the city, Yi Di, Hao Tao, and the other commanders ordered their warriors to stay ready.

They had been fighting for years, without a break. They had lost thirty percent warriors under their commands, but overall, this army had grown many times stronger than before. On battlefields, some Magus Kings became Divine Magi, and many Senior Magi stepped into the level of Magus Kings.

By now, the water-kind armies were gone. The army stopped in this area, waiting for the next order from Pu Ban City.

Would they head into Northern Wasteland and wipe out all remaining forces of the Gong Gong Family, when Northern Wasteland and Midland merged together? Or, would they seize the opportunity as the flood had just sunk, and the non-humankind was unprepared, to launch a sudden attack against Liang Zhu City?

So many strong human families and clans had gathered their elite forces, which wouldn't happen every year. Through years of showering blood, this army had become a metal-strong force with an amazingly high morale. Launching surprise strikes against Liang Zhu City and teaching non-humankind beings in that city a

good lesson, human leaders did have such thoughts.

This day, Yi Di stood on a watchtower, holding a grass stem in his mouth and leisurely putting his hands behind his head. With narrowed eyes, he gazed at the north.

With his great eyesight, he saw a brightly glowing divine tower on a hill, a hundred miles away. This area was close to the southern border of Liang Zhu City. About a hundred miles away in the north were a series of mansions and territories that belonged to small non-humankind families in the outer city. With the current strength of this elite army, Yi Di believed that they could push the front line straight to the city.

"We can take out a million non-humankind beings at least." Yi Di clicked his lips and said, "Jia Clan girls and Xiu Clan girls are unable to be appreciated, but Yu Clan girls are quite something. Compared to human girls, what's that word again? Seductively charming? Yeah, this word it is!"

Human girls were simple and naive, unlike Yu Clan girls. As Yi Di said, Yu Clan girls were seductively charming. Female Yu Clan captives were always worth a lot in the markets.

"I'm gonna get a few strong Jia Clan men. I'm gonna suck their marrow!" Tao Sha puffed out his chest as he stood under the tower. He also narrowed his eyes and gazed at the divine tower.

As possessors of the Taotie bloodline, Taotie Clan warriors from Western Wasteland ate pretty much everything.

Yi Di knitted his eyebrows and glanced at Tao Sha, then subconsciously curved his mouth corners downwards. Tao Sha, if this old dude said that he ate human beings, he would mean it. The war lasted for years. During the past few years, Yi Di witnessed Tao Sha chewing water-kind creatures alive countless times, then swallowing them up directly on battlefields.

As Yi Di prepared to make a joke with Tao Sha, telling him to

learn to cook things before he eats them, the ground quaked slightly.

Gazing far at the north, he saw twelve thin streams of white mist rising to the sky from the farthest north. Within every stream of mist, a sand-grain-like thing had been shining brilliantly. Before long, the twelve mist streams reached thousands of miles high, then suddenly turned in the air, swishing to the south.

Within the mist streams, the twelve shining sand grains dashed swiftly. They seemed to have some sort of space-jumping ability, that in every quarter of an hour, they would abruptly break the space and jump forward for a long distance.

Twenty-four hours later, the twelve shining things were clearly visible from Yi Di's position. Those were twelve metal spheres, with a diameter of over one hundred miles, perfectly round and differently colored. Anyone who knew the non-humankind well enough could tell that the colors of these metal spheres represented the three suns and nine moons.

These enormous metal spheres were thickly embossed with complicated patterns, covered in a palm-thick layer of light that gave them a hazy look, like the things one might only see in dreams.

Tens of thousands of starry sky spirit turtles roared loudly and sonorously. Following Tushan Family people's shouts, these turtles quickly gathered together and formed an especially strong defensive formation on both sides of the wooden city. Inside the city, countless human warriors were in their places, with all kinds of weapons well prepared.

The twelve metal spheres paused simultaneously less than a thousand miles away from the city, glowing, buzzing, and letting out grating noises. Dim light streams flew across the surfaces of these metal spheres, while they bloomed like twelve enormous flowers.

The shell of these metal spheres split up and released exquisite, nearly transparent, thin metal pieces, that looked like petals. Each petal was thickly covered in spell symbols. Under the sunshine, these spell symbols reflected a splendid, blinding light.

The petals spread, and the twelve metal spheres became twelve enormous flowers, with a diameter of over three-hundred miles. In the middle of each flower was a metal platform, hundred miles in diameter. Palaces, divine towers, and strong walls towered up on the platform. Clearly, it was a fortress standing on each metal platform.

Following a buzzing noise, spell symbols dazzled on countless metal petals. Because of the twelve water worlds, the air was suffused with water power. The pure water power condensed into white torrents and surged into these metal petals. Next, the divine towers standing on each metal platform dazzled blindingly and released defensive screens in all directions, like waves of water. Eventually, each defensive screen expanded into a tremendous glowing sphere and wrapped up every metal flower entirely.

Along with faintly audible swishing noises, countless metal plates silently rose into the sky, about three meters in diameter and wrapped in a dim light. Standing on each metal plate was a heavily armored, muscular Jia Clan warrior, releasing strong energy waves. At the first sight, one could see at least a million Jia Clan warriors rising to the sky.

"Prepare for the war!" Yi Di raised his right hand and wielded.

Hao Tao stood by the curtain of a tent as he shouted with a deep yet strong voice, "Give a warning to Pu Ban City, Chi Ban Mountain, and all human clans...The twelve 'cities of great calamity' have all been activated. This is a great war! All twelve families in power have joined the attack!"

Countless fierce, large birds rose from the wooden city and carried archers up to the sky.

A beam of light spread from the city of great calamity at the front and generated a strange power directly from the air. The group of large birds had just reached hundreds of meters high, but all of a sudden, they could no longer feel the air with their wings. Large groups of Eastern Wasteland archers and their mounts fell from the sky.

Chapter 1398: Limited Killing

"Damn you!" Yi Di flew up from the watchtower. His feather cloak dazzled while an enormous pair of wings burst from his back. They generated a strong climbing power, bringing him up into the sky.

Every single feather of the swan cloak worn by Yi Di had released a tens of meters long beam of light. On each feather, countless tiny spell symbols sparked with a blinding light. In the air, an especially strong power had been suppressing the swan cloak, trying its best to weaken its flying ability.

In the wooden city, hundreds of gigantic totem pillars glowed simultaneously. Tens of thousands of Maguspreists stood by those pillars, cut their wrists open, and sprayed fresh blood on them.

With a rumbling noise, hundred miles long light beams rose from the pillars. On top of each light beam, a tremendous light sphere spread out. Within the light, hundreds of hazy yet enormous legendary creatures were faintly visible. Their roars echoed through the clouds, while waves of light erupted from the hundreds of pillars.

A cracking noise could be heard without any end. The air-banning power released from the city of great calamity clashed against the purifying power from the totem pillar, neutralizing each other while generating fine fire sparkles and a long-lasting series of muffled explosive noise, that brought people a pain in the ears.

The archers who fell from the air shouted with bright voices. Clear light streams flew out of their feather cloaks, wrapped up their mounts, and restored their flying abilities. Then, they were seen vertically rising again to the sky.

"Beat them!" Yi Di growled. The twenty-four solar terms arrow intent was released, from the spring equinox to the June solstice.

Along with muffled thunders, waves of arrows were sent out from the string of the thunder-running bow, with an indescribably magical power of creation which belonged to nature. Flickering with lightning, they flew straight towards the Jia Clan warriors standing on the metal plates.

Tens of Divine-Magus-level Jia Clan battle kings silently rushed up. They raised the heavy shields in their left hands while swinging down the long blades in their right hands towards Yi Di, bringing up frosty beams of light. Their blades were even taller than themselves.

Quick crashing noises started. Yi Di's arrows were all top-grade pieces made by Ji Hao with his round cauldron. Shields held in the hands of Jia Clan battle kings were penetrated by swiftly spinning arrows one after another. The arrows then tore apart their armors and sank deep into their bodies.

The thunder-running bow raised the penetration power of the arrows by a hundred times, along with the rotational speed. In addition to that, the bow gave each arrow a strong thunder power. The arrows exploded inside Jia Clan battle kings' bodies and generated deafening thunders. Blood and body pieces were sent flying all over the sky.

Before some of them could swing their blades down, the tens of Jia Clan battle kings were forced back together. Yu Yu's twenty-four solar terms arrows intent was complimented by the thunder-running bow as one of the ten legendary bows in Pan Gu world, added with the spell symbol arrows made by Ji Hao painstakingly, and Yi Di's supreme Eastern Wasteland art of archery. The results stunned even Yi Di himself. He couldn't help but burst into an excited howl in the midair!

Forcing back tens of Divine Magi at one time, how could Yi Di even dream about being so powerful before?

Seizing the opportunity, Yi Di transformed into a strong

whirlwind. Tens of arrows swished across the sky. The tens of Jia Clan battle kings who had large holes on their bodies tried to cover each other while retreating. But suddenly, muffled moans were squeezed out from their throats, as twenty-three of them had their eyes penetrated by arrows. Blasting thunders could again be heard, while their heads and a large half of their bodies blew up in dazzling thunderbolts.

"Damn it! Who is that kid?" In the city of great calamity at the front, Alo To, the High Moon Emperor, angrily punched on the wall. The High Moon had the strongest fighting capacity among all twelve branches of the non-humankind. High Moon people had the best instincts of fighting. Based on the same power level, every single High Moon warrior was at least twice as good as the ones from the other eleven branches. When the non-humankind started wars, High Moon warriors would always fight at the front line.

Alo To watched an Eastern Wasteland archer kill twenty-three of his elite battle kings with one single move. His heart even missed a beat, and he almost vomited blood for this great loss. Before, in battles against human beings, no matter what, losing one Divine-Magus-level warrior would take at least three months. Through long periods of confrontation and all kinds of ambushes, traps, surprise strikes were how human beings killed battle kings.

But today, even before they formally declared war, twenty-three battle kings were killed directly. Other than a heartache, Alo To's face was also burning in shame — This was so shameful. Witnessing this, how would people from the other twelve branches think of High Moon warriors? Would it be that under Alo To's lead, all High Moon warriors had softened?

"Prepare a small-scale, limited strike!" With an extremely dark face, Alo To glanced at the wooden city and hesitated shortly. Finally, he remembered the decision made by the twelve emperors at the meeting. This time, their purpose wasn't causing severe damages to the humankind. Instead, they were here to show their

irresistible, terrifying powers to the human beings.

Limited killing, instead of destroying humanity — They were still counting on the alliance of human clans to fight for them as cannon fodder against a scarily powerful being from their homeworld, who was coming for all profits that Pan Gu world could generate.

"Over there!" Pondering for a while, Alo To pointed at the defensive formation of tens of thousands of starry sky spirit turtles, located by the east of the wooden city.

On the High Moon's city of great calamity, from those well-spread, exquisite, and beautiful metal petals, natural powers had been vibrating. In every second, a great amount of natural power would be absorbed by the energy formation based on each petal.

Transformed by the formation, the natural powers turned into liquid energy, flowing into the weapon system of the city of calamity. On the city wall, a three-hundred-meters-tall golden statue slowly opened its erect eye and silently glanced at the defensive formation of spirit turtles pointed at by Alo To.

Sizzle! A water-tank-thick white beam of light was released from the erect eye, tearing apart the sky as it instantly struck on a spirit turtle.

Pop! This turtle directly disintegrated into the finest grains. Next, hundreds of spirit turtles around it disappeared in the dazzling light. The light then struck the ground, making it bulge slightly. Countless fist-thick beams of light erupted from the ground, leaving thousands of fist-sized holes on the bodies of thousands of spirit turtles.

Followed by a muffled boom, the ground exploded. This so-called 'small-scale limited strike' from Alo To left a tremendous pit with a diameter of three-hundred-miles in the defensive formation of spirit turtles.

Thousands of spirit turtles around the pit screamed in pain. Steaming hot blood streamed out of their bodies and flowed into the pit.

"A perfect strike! Alo To nodded in satisfaction. Looking at Yi Di, who floated in the midair, he said, "Stupid barbarian, have you now learned the great difference between your civilization and ours?"

Chapter 1399: Unhurried

Hao Tao stood in the wooden city with a steel whip held in his hands. He was looking at the city of calamity seriously, which had just launched a strike.

The destructive beam of light released from the erect eye of the three-hundred-meters-tall statue was so powerful that the starry sky spirit turtles in the defensive formation, which were especially strong and had activated all their powers, failed to take even a single strike.

"I've never seen this... I've never even heard of this." Hao Tao's heart was heavy.

As a military judge, Hao Tao had joined numerous wars against the non-humankind, but he never saw a real city of great calamity with his own eyes. Cities of great calamity could be counted as the strongest weapon of Yu Dynasty. A city of great calamity was once enabled on a battlefield in the era of Emperor Zhuanxu. But back then, the entire Yu Dynasty only possessed one city of great calamity.

At the moment, Hao Tao was looking at twelve cities of great calamity! These cities of great calamity were much larger than the one in the secret historical record. The strike launched by one of these cities was fiercer, even more unstoppable. Hundreds of starry sky spirit turtles with a great defensive power were evaporated with one single strike, and thousands were injured severely!

That strike shattered the earth within the area three-hundred miles in radius, along with everything in it. So terrifying! If the strike weren't aimed at those turtles but at the wooden city instead, what would happen?

Hao Tao's heart sank into a bottomless abyss. He even temporarily lost his eyesight.

Hao Tao was a man of justice and a master of law. He was also a powerful being, such that years ago, he had become a half-step Supreme Magus. However, his specialty was nothing else but the law, and he served as no more than a military judge. He was a good warrior indeed, but he was by no means a famous general.

Facing the twelve destructive cities of calamity, Hao Tao's forehead was covered in cold sweat. Fight? Retreat? Or what? Why hadn't Pu Ban City sent back any message? If Si Wen Ming or the other famous human commanders were here, what would they do?

All of a sudden, Hao Tao realized the biggest problem of this allied human army! During the flood, the enemies of this army were mostly water-kind creatures. Under the shared leadership of the commanders from all clans, this army fought against the water-kind for years, and had taken great advantages. But facing a tightly organized, powerful Yu Dynasty army, this elite human army became like a headless snake. Without a leader, many problems and difficulties couldn't be solved efficiently.

Commanders and elders from many clans gathered near Hao Tao. They all witnessed that terrifying strike just now, and they all had cold sweat oozing out of their foreheads. They didn't know what to do, as the enemies were way too strong. That shocking strike launched by the High Moon city of calamity evaporated so many starry sky spirit turtles at one time, so what if it were aimed at the camp area?

"Hao Tao, Hao Tao, what should we do? Should we fight them? Or..." A White Tiger Clan elder shouted in anxiety.

"Fully activate the defensive formation. How many crystals do we have left? How long can we last?" A Roc Clan elder rushed over while gasping quickly, eyes filled with nervousness.

"This was only a temporary-use wooden camp, and our warriors are too aggregated." A Zhu Wu Clan elder yelled, "We can't fight them here. We have to figure out a way to weaken their cities of

calamity!"

Hao Tao's mind wasn't clear. Countless law regulations and rules hovered in his mind, but he could not make the wisest decision.

Fight? Retreat?

Fight, warriors of the army had no fear of death. They would roar like beasts and put up desperate fights against the non-humankind! But, as Zhu Wu elder said, this place wasn't the best battlefield for human warriors! If the non-humankind only sent out a regular field army, they should have no fear. But, they enabled twelve cities of great calamity. If all warriors remained gathered in the wooden city, they would become the most obvious target of the twelve cities!

The first strike launched by the non-humankind killed hundreds of turtles, but how enormous were they? If that strike landed on the camp area, hundreds of thousands of elite human warriors would be wiped out, and millions would be injured!

If the enemy launched a few more strikes like that, the whole camp area would be flattened, and not a single human being would survive.

'Damn it, damn it!' Hao Tao gave a bitter grin. This army really needed a commander. At present, Si Wen Ming was the best commander among human beings. But, if he couldn't be here, Ji Hao, that smart boy could also make a big difference! Ji Hao would never let himself fall into a disadvantage. Following his lead, warriors would not fall into a disadvantage either!

In the midair, mounting on giant birds, large groups of Eastern Wasteland archers had already started a battle against Jia Clan warriors.

Treading on metal plates, Jia Clan warriors' linear speed was extremely high. In the air, they were even twice as fast as the most common flying mounts used by Eastern Wasteland archers. But

their skills of turning, sideways movement, and dodging were awful. Overall, Jia Clan warriors with metal plates were far less flexible than Eastern Wasteland archers on flying mounts.

Eastern Wasteland archers moved swiftly in the sky as they sent out countless arrows, which swished across the air and pierced into the bodies of Jia Clan warriors.

Some of Jia Clan warriors dashed like crazy bulls, trying their best to disarray Eastern Wasteland archers, while the others carried heavy shields and lined up orderly in the air, sweeping in like a fishing net. They attempted to encircle a part of Eastern Wasteland archers and get them stuck in a shield formation to slaughter them.

This was a battle between bulls and eagles. No severe casualty was caused yet. Both sides had been changing formations, preparing for the last strike.

On the High Moon city of calamity, Alo To crossed his arms before his chest, looking at Eastern Wasteland archers flying all over the sky. Conveniently pointing at the west side of the city, he said, "Over there, kill some more big turtles. Turn the power output down. B*stards, do you know how valuable these turtles are? When we conquer the humankind, these big guys would all be our treasures!"

"Be careful! Don't affect the human warrior camp area, just drive them to the south. Don't hurt them." Alo To said as he looked at all human warriors gathered in the camp area. "They will be our best shields. Killing them would be too wasteful."

The three-hundred-meters-tall golden statue opened its eyes again. A much thinner white light beam darted out and killed over a hundred starry sky spirit turtles in the west.

Hao Tao sighed and said in a deep voice, "They seem to be driving us away instead of starting a real war!"

Breathing deeply, Hao Tao continued in a harsh tone, "Retreat to the south, to Chi Ban Mountain! Over there, their cities of calamity will be useless."

The order spread out. Human warriors abandoned the wooden city and scattered, unhurriedly retreating to the south.

Chapter 1400: Make Up for Their Errors

You Xiong City, the ancestral land of the You Xiong Family...

Inside the core defensive screen, dense yellow clouds had been rolling above the ancestral family temple. Emperor Xuanyuan sat in the midair, legs crossed and eyes burning like a pair of suns, as he looked down at the You Xiong Family people.

Gong Sun Bo had already been through the torment of a secret soul-interrogating magic. Poor him, his soul wasn't strong. So, when it was disintegrated into the finest grain, he died in pain. However, all dirty things he had done in his life were exposed by Emperor Xuanyuan. He sneakily hid fifteen super-scale mines that belonged to the You Xiong Family, captured human slaves, and forced them to become miners, excavating crystals without restraint. All kinds of arms deals often happened between him and the non-humankind. Secretly, he raised numerous men of sacrifice, sending them all over Midland in disguise of homeless clans.

Those men of sacrifice served as sharp weapons of Gong Sun Bo. In the darkness, they had taken out quite a number of his enemies. Not only the ones from other human families, many You Xiong Family elders died in their hands too. Before Gong Sun Bo, the last leader of the Gong Sun Family was Gong Sun Meng, who ended up being possessed by a sky devil. After his death, Gong Sun Bo assassinated quite a few elders, who were his strong competitors, for the leader position.

Gong Sun Bo's soul was gone, but his body remained alive, kneeling in front of the ancestral temple while facing the gate. Behind him were over a thousand leaders of branches of the You Xiong Family, and hundreds of elders. All of them witnessed Emperor Xuanyuan launch his move and Gong Sun Meng howled heartbreakingly till his soul perished.

With twisted faces, these branch leaders and elders looked at Emperor Xuanyuan sitting above the ancestral temple. Cold sweat was streaming down their bodies as they nearly fainted in fear. They were clearly aware of the fact that they had all done dirty things more or less. Taking advantages of their powers to bully the others, this kind of thing was just normal in their eyes.

Based on Emperor Xuanyuan's temper, they all had to die!

Emperor Xuanyuan was just like the Xuanyuan sword he made himself, strong, fierce; he would rather break than bend. He could not bear watching unfairness. When he was serving as the human emperor, he managed You Xiong Family people hundreds of times more strictly than the others.

Back in his era, every single one of You Xiong Family people was a brave and fearless warrior, a humble, decent human being, with an impeccable moral character and capabilities. In Emperor Xuanyuan's days, even the most ordinary member of the You Xiong Family could be counted as a person of virtue. But in these days...

With an extremely twisted face, a branch leader, whose mind was already destroyed by the fear, hysterically rushed out of the crowd. As a low-level Divine Magus, he rose into the sky, pulled out his sword, and pointed at Emperor Xuanyuan.

"Great Ancestor! Holy Emperor! We are your descendants! We are your blood descendants! We are You Xiong Family! We have the noblest human bloodline! Why can't we have more profits, more lands, more children than the others? What's so wrong about that?"

"Because of your achievements, your contribution to the humankind, we should stand high above the masses, and those ant-like people should kneel under our feet. Their lives should be held in our hands!"

Emperor Xuanyuan wielded his hands and sent out a shadow of

sword, turning the branch leader into a strand of smoke.

"All achievements belong to me; all contributions came from me. What do my achievements and contributions have to do with you? If you want an achievement, build it yourselves. If you want to make a contribution, make it yourselves!" Emperor Xuanyuan's voice was strong and cold, sounding like the clang of a sword.

"The non-humankind have occupied the north for countless years! If you are useful human beings, you should go destroy the non-humankind and turn Pan Gu world into a paradise of human beings. How shameless are you? How can my achievements and contributions serve you as a reason to harm human beings?"

"You Xiong Family, my bloodline...Are you my only descendants?" Emperor Xuanyuan laughed out loud, even quaking the sky and the earth, "All human beings, all descendants of old emperors like me...In my eyes, you are nothing different than the others. In the end, we are all Saint Pan Gu's descendants!"

"I am Gong Sun Xuanyuan. I am nothing more than an insignificant one among Saint Pan Gu's countless descendants. Luckily, I grew strong and made my humble contributions for the humankind. The world gifted me with a great natural reward power and helped me become a Supreme Magus."

"In my heart, clans and families can no longer divide the humankind. I see no families, but the entire humankind. Today, I will investigate the You Xiong Family thoroughly. Everyone with a dirty history will die. You are the cancer of the humankind, so you will be eliminated. For the humankind, I will not feel pain even if I have to destroy the entire You Xiong Family today!"

The group of branch leader and elder fell to the ground in despair.

Emperor Xuanyuan used to be their greatest hope, their faith, their belief, their spirit totem, their 'god'. However, for the other human beings, Emperor Xuanyuan had no hesitation to even

destroy the entire You Xiong Family!

Great ancestors souls, Emperor Xuanyuan was crazy!

Countless Youxiong Family people who had done dirty things cried out, their faces covered in tears. They kneeled on the ground and kowtowed to Emperor Xuanyuan, begging for mercy. They swore to the heaven that they would change and would be decent men.

But even in the face of all this, Emperor Xuanyuan showed no change. Slightly shaking his head, he sighed. Looking at these crying and howling people, he understood that not too many You Xiong Family leaders were clean.

As a cold light flickered in his eyes, Emperor Xuanyuan stood up slowly. He knew that he didn't need to deal with these people with the cruel soul-torturing magic, and instead, could kill them directly. He still had a mission to accomplish. Where could he find the time to waste on these disappointing descendants of his?

An enormous sword gradually emerged behind Emperor Xuanyuan, while a tremendous spirit power spread out like tidewater, instantly enveloping those crying You Xiong Family people. All the crying ones must have dirty histories buried in their hearts, and all deserved to die. As for the ones who weren't killed, they could be examined one by one, after the crying ones were dead.

Before the enormous sword descended, a fiery light flashed across the sky. Ji Hao drove the nine dragons chariot into You Xiong City at his highest speed.

"Emperor, please don't kill them!" Ji Hao shrieked with a hoarse voice. He brought the most urgent message just received by Pu Ban City.

"The non-humankind launched offensive with full force! With twelve especially strong cities of great calamity, the twelve non-

humankind families have launched an all-out attack. All non-humankind monsters in Liang Zhu City with fighting capacities are sent out!" Ji Hao yelled breathlessly. "We can't kill these people! Let them make up for their errors. Let them go to the battlefield and fight the non-humankind!"

Two beams of fiery light shone from Emperor Shun's eyes as he exclaimed, "Twelve cities of great calamity? Damn it! Are they so strong already?"

On the ground, countless whiningly crying You Xiong Family people seized a glimpse of hope as they immediately howled out.

"Great Ancestor! Great Ancestor! We are willing to make amends... to make up for our errors!"

Table of Contents

- The Magus Era
  - Synopsis
  - Copyright
  - Chapter 1301: Violent Blood
  - Chapter 1302: Warm-up for the Auction
  - Chapter 1303: Stern Warning
  - Chapter 1304: Arrogant Crayfish
  - Chapter 1305: The Treasure From the Dragon Palace
  - Chapter 1306: Pan Jia Descended
  - Chapter 1307: This Isn’t Right
  - Chapter 1308: The Netherworld Blood Ganoderma
  - Chapter 1309: Impatient Pan Jia
  - Chapter 1310: Start Fighting
  - Chapter 1311: Great Liberty
  - Chapter 1312: Stars In the Sky
  - Chapter 1313: Pan Gu’s Front Teeth
  - Chapter 1314: All-Conquering
  - Chapter 1315: Smash with the Bell
  - Chapter 1316: Netherworld Soul Chain
  - Chapter 1317: Gone Traceless
  - Chapter 1318: Taiji Dragon Horn
  - Chapter 1319: Young Dragons and Phoenixes
  - Chapter 1320: The Trade of Blood Ganoderma
  - Chapter 1321: A Pair of Poor Things
  - Chapter 1322: Large Family People
  - Chapter 1323: Everybody Has A Plan
  - Chapter 1324: Assassinate Wu Gu
  - Chapter 1325: The Twelve Worlds Arrive
  - Chapter 1326: Return Through the Space
  - Chapter 1327: The Destination — Pan Gu!
  - Chapter 1328: Welcoming Ceremony
  - Chapter 1329: Cut the Serpent
  - Chapter 1330: Utterly Isolated Gong Gong
  - Chapter 1331: Dark Water Serpent Slough
  - Chapter 1332: Whose Credit?

Chapter 1333: Because of Jealousy
Chapter 1334: He Who Has A Mind to Beat His Dog Will Easily Find A Stick
Chapter 1335: The Sin of These Families
Chapter 1336: Gong Gong Escapes
Chapter 1337: Gong Gong's Counterattack
Chapter 1338: Aggressive Sword Move
Chapter 1339: Snakes Become Dragons
Chapter 1340: Shock the Group with the Sword
Chapter 1341: Fight the Group of Devil
Chapter 1342: The Cold Sword Light
Chapter 1343: Accomplishment of Embryos of Dao
Chapter 1344: Strength Breaks All
Chapter 1345: A Hysterical Rout
Chapter 1346: Priest Mu Gives Magic Pills
Chapter 1347: Force to Sell
Chapter 1348: Reasons and Causes, and the Netherworld
Chapter 1349: Being Trapped in Heaven
Chapter 1350: The Plan and the Despair
Chapter 1351: Wuzhi Qi's Hair
Chapter 1352: A Sword in the Heart
Chapter 1353: Make it Personal
Chapter 1354: No Choice
Chapter 1355: Slaughter A God Like Killing A Dog
Chapter 1356: Spirit Creatures Attack
Chapter 1357: Yao Mountain People Kill Spirit Creatures
Chapter 1358: Wuzhi Qi Surrenders
Chapter 1359: Breaking The Last Gate
Chapter 1360: Supreme Treasures Choose Their Owner
Chapter 1361: The Order of Killing
Chapter 1362: Organize the Army, Prepare for the War
Chapter 1363: Attack At Night
Chapter 1364: The Sun Shining In the Sky
Chapter 1365: Assassinate Si Wen Ming
Chapter 1366: All His Treasures?
Chapter 1367: What Happened in Pu Ban City
Chapter 1368: Levying With A Good Reason
Chapter 1369: The Leader of Suiren Family
Chapter 1370: The Leader of Gong Sun Family
Chapter 1371: Go Down With the Ship

Chapter 1372: Sworn Enemy
Chapter 1373: Whose Standpoint
Chapter 1374: This is Personal
Chapter 1375: Treacherous Undercurrent
Chapter 1376: Kick Out of the Court
Chapter 1377: A Strong Force Encircles The City
Chapter 1378: Slave-Hunting Army
Chapter 1379: Virus Attack
Chapter 1380: The Moves of the Non-Humankind
Chapter 1381: The Power of the Disease God
Chapter 1382: Damn Guides
Chapter 1383: Men of Sacrifice
Chapter 1384: Blood Moon Scouts
Chapter 1385: Solid Evidence
Chapter 1386: An Opportunity to Make Money
Chapter 1387: Hurt Their Ancestors
Chapter 1388: A Terrifying Deal
Chapter 1389: A Written Complaint
Chapter 1390: A Bad Situation
Chapter 1391: The Anger of Marquises and Earls
Chapter 1392: The Anger of the Emperor
Chapter 1393: Cut the Knot
Chapter 1394: The Formation Changed
Chapter 1395: Dig Through
Chapter 1396: Intimidating, Fighting
Chapter 1397: Prepare for the War, Prepare for the War
Chapter 1398: Limited Killing
Chapter 1399: Unhurried
Chapter 1400: Make Up for Their Errors